# THE MAGUS ERA

BOOK 18

*Blood Red*

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

# *The Magus Era*

**(巫神纪)**

***by***

## *Blood Red*

**(血红)**

# *Synopsis*

Long ago, there were people who stood upon the earth with their heads held high. They never bowed to anyone because of their indomitable spirit. They were capable of controlling wind and lightning, and conquering dragons and serpents. They seemed strong enough to split the earth and shatter the stars with their fists. They traveled throughout the land and called themselves Magi. Eventually, one of them would become a Supreme Magus! These men are the ancestors of human beings. Their blood is what we all share today.

Qing Long is the former strongest man in the world. He traveled through space and time and was reborn as Ji Hao in the Fire Crow Clan of the Southern Wasteland. It's a complicated world. Forces from both inside and outside of the clan want this young and talented boy to die. Under great pressure, Ji Hao makes a deal with a mysterious man, who resides in his spiritual space, never showing his real face. He gains two drops of blood from a dragon and phoenix. Afterwards, Ji Hao becomes increasingly more powerful.

# Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Law @ Qidian International

Translation Edit by Hitesh_ @ Qidian International

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

# Chapter 1701: Arriving One After Another

Outside Liang Zhu City, thirty-six portals merged into one. The millions of miles wide portal spun swiftly and vented dazzling light beams, destroying and disordering the natural system in this area.

As a top-grade powerful being from a world attempted to enter into another world through a portal, not only would a giant amount of energy and resources be consumed, the target world would launch counterattacks to this invasion, which was the most difficult part of the world-crossing. Original Devil helped Yu Huo to dispel the surrounding natural powers, but Yu Huo still instinctively boosted up his power as much as he could to expand the portal.

The natural powers in Pan Gu world clashed violently against the powers of Pan Yu world. Dark thunderbolts and colorful lights collided heavily and shattered the space, creating blinding space cracks.

Occasionally, an enormous space crack would fall straight on the ground, tearing it apart and leaving a million-miles-long ditch. All of a sudden, tens of space cracks swept towards Liang Zhu City, making all non-humankind beings in the city scream in fear and flee desperately in all directions. Countless divine towers in the city glowed simultaneously with eye-piercing light and created a tremendous magic shield that covered the entire city.

With the cracking noise, the shield was crushed and the tens of space cracks swept across the entire city, tearing down countless luxurious buildings. The city had just restored a part of its magnificence since Ji Hao and his people cruelly trampled upon it, but now, it was flattened again.

"So... terrible!" Yu Huo's clone in Pan Gu world smilingly glanced at Liang Zhu City, then helplessly spread his hands, shook his head, and said, "My dear friends, they found me, nine, whole nine

of them. Oh my, nine old friends of mine will forcibly enter this world."

Turning back, he looked at Original Devil and asked seriously, "Devil Master, are you sure that Pan Gu world people are strong enough to stop my nine friends? I don't want this rich thriving world fall in those scums' hands."

Original Devil glanced at Yu Huo in a complicated way with a blood-red dim light flashing across his eyes. Then, he said blandly, "Nine? If they're all at your level and are willing to fight desperately heard, they may die together with Pan Gu world creatures. I hope they will arrive with enough warriors, otherwise..."

Laughing creepily, Original Devil transformed into a black stream of light, rising into the air and flying to the Senior Magi Mountain and Junior Magi Mountain while saying, "Yu Huo...remember our plan. Let your greedy friends help us weaken the scary enemies. During this process, you have to endure, even if you might be in pain!"

Master Spirit-slaughter chuckled and said mildly to Yu Huo, "So, dear Master Yu Huo, from now on, I am one of your loyal followers in Pan Gu world. I will give you my full cooperation."

Master Spirit-slaughter shrugged and continued with an evil smile on his face, "Original Devil didn't want to bow to anyone, but to me, dignity and honor are all fake...I want something real! Even if you want me to kneel before them and beg...I can't wait to devour their souls!"

Yu Huo breathed deeply as he gave a faint smile, "Remember, from now on, I'm not a clone of Yu Huo anymore. I'm Yemo Tian, the only heir of Yemo Family which conquered this world. According to the Highest Code of Law in Pan Yu world, I reasonably have the right to dominate this world."

Master Spirit-slaughter grinned, then seriously kneeled and

kowtowed to Yu Huo, even putting his forehead and palms on the ground while saying, "Your Majesty, I, Spirit-slaughter, your most loyal servant, and am paying my respect to you..."

As a deep dark light glowed in his eyes, Master Spirit-slaughter abruptly lifted his head and sneered, "If you can't allow me to taste the sweat and powerful souls of your people, I won't mind tasting yours! So, my friend Yu Huo, I hope our cooperation can be perfect!"

Yu Huo threw him a complicated glance, then slowly nodded and said, "For this especially rich group of great world...we have to combine our powers. So, we have to cooperate perfectly.

Master Spirit-laughter laughed as he kneeled before Yu Huo, then turned his head around, looking at the expanding portal.

A giant foot strenuously squeezed into Pan Gu world through the portal, then a lower leg, an entire leg, then half of a body. A suffocating pressure was released from the portal. Yu Huo growled, his voice rumbling like thunder as it immediately echoed across Pan Gu Motherland and quaked the entire starry void.

In the westernmost area, in their peaceful world, Priest Hua and Priest Mu sat under the linden tree with their legs crossed, communicating with each other by using their spirit power. With surprise, they exclaimed, "A saint? A saint from Pan Yu world? How dare they invade Pan Gu world? Aren't they afraid of death?"

They glanced at each other, then both burst into wild laughter. Next, they transformed into two streams of light, flashing to Liang Zhu City like two bolts of lightning.

A saint suppressed by Pan Gu world's Dao...was just like a baby lamp delivered right to their door, that they only needed to easily kill the saint to take his Dao or pre-world treasures. For Priest Hua and Priest Mu, the saint was such a huge fortune descending on them from the sky!

They needed to kill this idiot who recklessly invaded Pan Gu world before Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, and Priest Yu Yu.

The others might not know Pan Gu world well enough, but didn't Priest Hua and Priest Mu know? A saint from another world was a piece of cake in here. They should move as fast as they could to get the most out of this silly saint.

A long, long while later, a thunderous roar of soul could be heard from the portal. Following the roar, Yu Huo finally squeezed into Pan Gu world through the portal, wrapped in a glow of soul power.

Glancing at his clone who stood on the golden chariot, he laughed out loud, "Yemo Tian, you did good. Since you and your Yemo Family have decided to follow me, from now on, you are my youngest disciple, under my own guidance. Everything belonging to your family will be under my protection!"

"Supreme Holy Ancestor Yu Huo, I..." The clone kneeled and kowtowed to the real him.

But, before he could finish, nine earth-shaking bangs could be heard in a row, as nine enormous black palms suddenly reached out of the portal, gripped the edge and tore it violently. With a series of creaking noise, nine dark arms slowly squeezed in.

Next, nine different voices roaring madly with joy, even quaking the heaven.

# Chapter 1702: Bullying Together

Tens of millions of miles away from Liang Zhu City, the expressions of Priest Mu and Priest Hua changed instantly. Without saying a word, they turned straight away.

If Yu Huo arrived alone, they could teach him a good lesson, to let him know that if he wanted to stay alive, he shouldn't go to a 'strange place' alone. However, as they sensed the powers of the other nine saints, they were frightened so badly that even their hearts of Dao shrank. Without feeling embarrassed, they fled straight away.

"How can Pan Yu world be so...?" Priest Hua's eyebrows twitched intensely while eyes glowed with a seven-colored light. He almost lost control of the sky devil inside him and fell into the devil's hands again.

"Pan Yu world should be like this..." Priest Mu's bitter face turned even bitterer, with his eye corners slanting downwards, mouth almost dropping to reach his foot. With that bitter face, he murmured, "According to what our disciples tell us these years, Pan Yu world has conquered millions of worlds. With all the resources they harvested, they could afford to raise a hundred saints."

Priest Hua remained silent. Compared with Pan Yu world, Pan Gu world could be counted as a 'tender young great world', with no habit to conquer other worlds or loot resources to expand itself. Pan Yu world plundered resources from millions of worlds to support itself, after which, it was reasonable for a large number of saints to exist in there."

But, Priest Hua and Priest Mu didn't feel good about this. Priest Hua had a dark face right now. He dared not to fight because he was frightened merely when he sensed the powers of his enemies. As one of the most powerful beings in Pan Gu world, Priest Hua

was blushed in shame.

Outside Liang Zhu City, Yu Huo's clone screamed 'in horror' and fell to the ground.

Master spirit-slaughter leaped out like a loyal guard to his master, carried his large golden staff and shielded Yu Huo's clone behind while hollering to the expanding portal, "Your Majesty, don't panic. No one can harm you while I'm here!"

While making the righteous shout, he fixed his glowing eyes on the nine giant arms which had been reaching slowly into Pan Gu world.

The powers he sensed from the nine arms were thoroughly different. Apparently, these were nine top-grade powerful beings, holy-level ones. Master Spirit-slaughter trembled intensely in excitement. If he could devour the nine...No, even if he could only devour a half of their souls, how powerful would he become?

If he could devour a half of their souls...A cruel and cunning evil light flashed across his eyes. Then, the agreement he made with Original Devil and Yu Huo, their so-called alliance, would all become bullsh*t. He would immediately eat his words and turn Pan Gu world into a livestock shed, to raise human beings and feed himself!

Beautiful souls, strong powers... Master Spirit-slaughter tightly gripped the golden staff with both hands, even leaving deep fingerprints on the staff.

"Yu Huo, my friend, you actually tried to hide this world from us. Our hearts are broken."

"Yeah, such a thriving world. How long has it existed for? Not long, right? What a young world! And it's so vast, so broad! Its origin...Oh, it was generated from an embryo which was even stronger than Pan Yu world!"

"Damn it! No one can have this beautiful world all to himself! I

am Yu Ji, and I have to have a share! If you disagree, come and challenge me!"

Nine thunderous voices were growling in thrill.

Each of them had merely reached an arm into Pan Gu world, but already, they had clearly sensed the inexhaustible life-force possessed by Pan Gu world, and the endless natural powers. What amazed them even more was the ocean-vast power of creation!

The power of creation was the most precious, magical power in the universe. All perceptible things existed because of the power of creation. It was the origin of all worlds, all lives. The greater power of creation a world had, the brighter future and more possibilities would it create.

The power of creation that belonged to Pan Gu world was greater than that of Pan Yu world by at least ten-thousand-fold!

Pan Yu world's highest Dao was destruction and killing, generated from all kinds of negative energies. Normally, this dark Dao was a great burden even to saints like Yu Ji.

The power of creation could make any saint jealous, because as long as saints absorbed enough power of creation, their cultivations and body conditions would be thoroughly changed, and they would have endless possibilities.

Sensing the immeasurable power of creation from Pan Gu world, the nine Pan Yu saints had truly gone mad. They boosted up their powers at all costs, trying their best to tear the portal and expand it. Taking a long span of time, they finally squeezed into Pan Gu world.

The great Dao of Pan Gu world was so agitated when nine Pan Yu saints descended together. Thunderbolts struck down from the sky like a rain of shooting stars overwhelmingly at the nine saints, seeming to even destroy the world.

The nine saints darkened their faces, combining their powers to

defend themselves. They activated their greatest pre-world treasures and merged their powers into one to shield themselves against Pan Gu world.

The thunder trial lasted for twenty-four hours. The powers that could be sensed from the nine saints turned weaker and weaker. At last, then the thunderous clouds faded, they landed around Yu Huo with weird smiles on their faces and surrounded him. They had been weakened largely, that by now, they each had less than ten percent of their power, because of the suppression being given by Pan Gu world.

Without making any effort to restore their power, they circled Yu Huo up and chuckled deeply.

"Yu Huo, we need an explanation from you!"

"Yu Huo, do you know that Pan Yu world is in crisis? Yet, how could you try to have this beautiful great world all to yourself?"

"Yu Huo, you can't conquer this world on your own. We will not allow you to monopolize it."

"Yu Huo...Oh my!"

Yu Fan suddenly burst into a great growl. From the top of his head, nine overlapping fire rings rose, venting a raging fire. Within the fire, a tremendous blur Chaos image emerged.

Around Pan Gu world, countless worlds quietly floated in the Chaos, glowing brightly, filled with life-force and vitality!

One could see more than a million worlds in this area at first glance.

"Yu Huo, if you're not sharing these with us, we will make you fall for good today!"

The nine saints each took a large fierce step towards Yu Huo, their eyes glistening with a cruel light.

# *Chapter 1703: Someone Owes Spirit Wa A Favor*

In the sun world, Spirit Wa finally finished her whole set of ever-changing ingenious spells of creation.

The nine cauldrons were steaming, venting waves of scorching airstreams while glistering with images of mountains, rivers, legendary creatures, gods and ghosts, flowers, and small creatures; they looked so magnificent yet so mysterious.

A strong, suffocating pressure was released from the nine cauldrons. Even Spirit Wa had to cast a small spell to shield herself against the pressure given off naturally by the nine cauldrons.

Si Wen Ming sat in the circle of the nine cauldrons with his legs crossed. The powers of the cauldrons had merged perfectly into one with his. His spirit star power had been improved by the nine cauldrons, and was now released, condensing into a mighty mountain floating above his head. A dark-yellow mist had been rising from the mountain, hovering and whooshing in and out of the mountain like enormous dragons, quaking the surrounding space.

With nine muffled thuds in a row, nine tremendous space holes were left in the sun world by the nine cauldrons. Nine dense torrents of earth power overwhelmingly flooded in from Pan Gu Motherland, flowing into Si Wen Ming's body.

A tremor went through Si Wen Ming's body. The earth power was absorbed by his body, bringing it quickly to a higher level. At one time, Ji Hao had given Si Wen Ming a diagram of human acupoints and meridians. At this moment, being replenished by the strong earth power, Si Wen Ming's meridians and acupoints were naturally waked up, one after another, even including the tiniest acupoints.

Dark-yellow starlight sparkled inside Si Wen Ming's body. With all meridians and acupoints activated, and after being nourished by the endless earth power, his body gradually turned shiny and crystalline.

Si Wen Ming also activated the secret soul-strengthening magic taught by Ji Hao. Nourished by the earth power, his soul and spirit had also been improving speedily, that within a blink, he was stronger than average human Divine Magi by ten-thousand-folds.

Under these circumstances, any Divine Magus could naturally draw the spirit star into the body, seal it inside, and smoothly climb up to the world of Supreme Magus. But, Si Wen Ming didn't do so. Instead, he continued to strengthen his body and soul to lay a stronger foundation, bit by bit.

He stayed at the level of peak-Divine-Magus, without improving in his level. But, having been nourished by the vast earth power, his power had been soaring, gradually getting closer and closer to the level of Supreme Magus.

No other human cultivator could do the same. Si Wen Ming sealed himself with the nine powers to restrain the thriving and agitated power inside him, to allow himself to stay in his current level while improving his power almost limitlessly.

As a Divine Magus with Supreme-level power and the immeasurably powerful nine cauldrons, Si Wen Ming could now be counted as the most powerful human being in the current world. That was if Ji Hao, who also had powerful treasures, wasn't counted. Unless the former human emperors who had become Supreme Magi long ago decided to return to Pan Gu world from the Chaos to fight Si Wen Ming, no human being...not a single one even among dragons and phoenixes could rival Si Wen Ming.

Even without the great natural rewards power, without climbing up to the world of Supreme Magus, Si Wen Ming now had a tremendous power surging inside him. But the power of his was so

natural and gentle, that despite his powerfulness, he made the others feel that he was such a real human being.

He was a pure human being, so stronger than average Divine Magi, but still, he was a pure human being, from his body to his soul, from his spirit to his internal organs, he was a pure man with no impurities.

"I finally did it!" Wearing a stubble of untrimmed beard, Si Wen Ming smilingly opened his eyes. Two beams of dark-yellow light shone from his eyes to a hundred meters away, generating a series of creaking noise. Wherever the light reached, the gravity force was raised by million folds.

With this mere gravity power, Si Wen Ming could kill a million enemies by simply staring at them.

"Finally done." Spirit Wa clapped her hands and dusted off the dust which didn't really exist, then wiped the sweat on her forehead which was never shed. She then took out a snow-white handkerchief and carefully cleaned her fingers, spending some efforts to polish her nails.

Putting down the handkerchief, Spirit Wa flipped her long tail and coiled it around her body in a mysterious perfect circle. Then, she bent her waist, narrowed her eyes, and smiled to Ji Hao as she asked, "Little thing, have you memorized my spell of creation?"

The mill of Dao floated above Ji Hao's head, with the dark plate of destruction and the shiny plate of creation spinning in reverse directions. They moved slowly and in such a mysterious way that they seemed to explain the secret of the great Dao of nature, while releasing strands of heart-shaking power from between the two plates.

"I memorized it all, but understood about twenty-five percent." Ji Hao opened his eyes, with one eye dark as ink and one eye shining dazzlingly. Between his brows, his erect eye glowed blindingly with a golden light, as the nine suns inside him had gathered inside

his eye of Dao, emitting eye-piercing lights.

The mill of Dao tilted slightly, then slowly moved behind Ji Hao from above his head. At last, the giant mill quietly floated behind him like an aureole of a god or a Buddha, looking so sacred and powerful.

"Memorized all, easy...But, you understood twenty-five percent?" Spirit Wa's breathtakingly beautiful face froze for a moment as she stared at Ji Hao as if he were a true ghost. She then flipped Ji Hao's head heavily and said, "Alyaya, are you really so smart? Priest Yu Yu is quite lucky...My spell of creation..."

Spirit Wa seemed to say something but never finished her sentence, just shaking her head.

The so-called spell of creation of hers was actually the great Dao of creation of Pan Gu world, the fundamental great Dao which created all the creatures in this world; it was also the original great Dao which allowed the entire universe to be so colorful and diverse. Ji Hao actually managed to understand twenty-five percent of the entire great Dao of creation through the comparison between it and the great Dao of destruction...

Other than Spirit Wa herself, Ji Hao was now definitely the one who understood the great Dao of creation the best!

Spirit Wa's cherry-like lips moved slightly for quite a couple of times while she stared at Ji Hao for long with her head tilted. Finally, she made her moves. She scratched Ji Hao's ears three times, then give seven flicks on his head, and dragged his hair heavily for five times. She planned to pull Ji Hao's face too, but abruptly, she turned around and realized that Si Wen Ming was still here. So, she stopped disappointedly.

"Ahyaya, lucky Priest Yu Yu." Spirit Wa straightened her body, tied up her long hair with a silk scarf, then gave a faint smile, "You owe me one then. Return it now..." While chuckling, she continued, "Return it now while I still remember this."

"You want?" Ji Hao raised his brows as he stood up, then helplessly bowed to Spirit Wa and asked.

Spirit Wa slightly curved her lips downwards and said with a gentle voice, "I want Donggong to be a divine emperor and Ximu to be the Gold Mother of the Jade Lake. I'll give the edict, and you approve it as a divine emperor."

# Chapter 1704: A Hurting Favor

Hearing Spirit Wa, two figures quietly emerged behind her.

Donggong was like a towering pine, an ancient unadorned being. He was wearing rainbows and holding a pair of rulers, with the whole body wrapped in the power of Dao. A stream of clear mist rose from his head and reached about a hundred meters higher, weaving into a mushroom-shaped cloud above his head, which carried tens of glowing pre-world spirit treasures. Each treasure had been releasing strong energy waves.

Ximu was strong and beautiful, with a vigorous power. Unlike the relaxed Donggong, Ximu had been venting a thriving life-force from her entire body. Standing beside Donggong, she narrowed her eyes and curiously looked at Ji Hao, with her long hair fluttering behind her head without being blown by any wind, casing whooshing noises from time to time.

The rainbow cloak, the cloud, and the treasures made Donggong look like a mystic immortal, but Ximu wasn't like that, as she didn't have as many supernatural phenomena around her. Nevertheless, Ji Hao clearly sensed an invisible door behind her. It felt like a quaint door filled with mysteriousness, that once Ji Hao attempted to approach it with his spirit power, he could sense the swirling devouring power from it.

Behind the door was a terrifying, scorching power, like a venting volcano and a falling star. Ji Hao somehow felt that if Ximu opened that door behind her, the power erupted from it would certainly surpass the powers possessed by the tens of pre-world treasures floating above Donggong's head.

He felt that both Donggong and Ximu were incredibly strong. He even felt that they were both at Spirit Wa's level.

However, he also felt some flaws from their powers, like the most delicate porcelain accidentally cracked by careless people. At first

glance, the porcelain looked still so shiny, ornate, and fascinating, but when one observed closely, one would find the barely visible crack which largely undervalued it.

"Elders, I am Ji Hao, it's such a pleasure to meet you!" Ji Hao solemnly bowed to both of them.

He was choked up with emotions. Spirit Wa's request was like a bolt of thunder struck right on his head. She wanted Donggong to be a divine emperor and Ximu to be the Gold Mother of the Jade Lake, which reminded him of a lot of things that he made himself forget long ago.

A divine emperor position could be arranged. The heaven was still empty anyway. Even though Ao Bai from the dragon-kind and Qing Qiang from the phoenix-kind were waiting to be divine emperors, the divine thrones were not all occupied. Regarding promoting Donggong to a divine emperor, Ji Hao had no objection.

But, the Jade Lake was different.

The vast chorography of the heaven emerged in Ji Hao's mind. Jade Lake, which millions of miles in radius, could be counted as the source of meridians of the heaven. It was the most important area of the heaven, as countless natural meridians gathered in there. The one who controlled the Jade Lake could control over sixty percent of all the natural powers in the heaven. As one could imagine, Jade Lake was important.

As countless thoughts popped out and died in his mind, Ji Hao smilingly bowed again to Donggong and Ximu and said, "I consider myself most fortunate to have you join the heaven."

"Emperor Ji Hao, the pleasure is ours." Donggong gave a faint smile as he slightly nodded to Ji Hao and responded.

Before Donggong's voice faded, Ximu had already cast a deafening roar, quaking the entire underground hall. Her voice rumbled like the thunder, piercing directly into Ji Hao's ears.

Afterward, Ximu chuckled and said, "Stop acting! We're injured severely and degraded, and still couldn't manage to recover even after so many years. If the situation goes on, I'm afraid that even our foundations of Dao will be damaged."

While singing, Ximu slapped on Ji Hao's shoulder.

Bang!

With the muffled noise, a tremendous pressure landed on Ji Hao's body. Ji Hao remained unmoved, absorbing this heavy strike which was even more violent than the fall of a star. Ximu pressed her hand on Ji Hao's shoulder and glanced at Ji Hao's careless face with surprise, then couldn't help but exclaim out, "Such a strong body. Ji Hao, so-called divine emperor, and so-called Gold Mother of Jade Lake... To be honest, we just want to heal ourselves with the natural fortune of the heaven."

Shaking her head, Ximu pointed at Donggong and laughed to continue, "This old thing is too ashamed to say it out, but I'm not. Jade Lake has the richest natural powers in the heaven. I just want to heal myself in there!"

Ji Hao grinned. Glancing at Donggong, he did find a slightly embarrassed look from Donggong 's face. Apparently, what Ximu said made him a little uncomfortable.

"Since you wanted nothing else but to heal yourself, with your mighty powers, you could do it anytime you want since the heaven remained unoccupied for years. Why did you have to wait for today?"

Spirit Wa sighed again and glanced outside, then gave the answer in a bland tone, "How can the injuries of my two friends be healed merely by the natural powers in Jade Lake? In order to heal themselves, they need to merge with own natural fortune with the heaven's. But, my two friends are both peaceful beings. Without being forced into a desperate situation, how would they ever be willing to cause themselves endless troubles?"

Ji Hao nodded. Endless troubles? He didn't understand it thoroughly, but he felt it to be quite reasonable.

He didn't know exactly how many unmentionable secrets existed in this world. But, according to the legends he read back in his past life, that would truly be a giant swirl of trouble. And, which decent living being would want to step in it?

As his heart twitched slightly, Ji Hao responded in a deep voice, "In this case, earlier rather than later, why don't we do it now?"

He had learned the spell of creation from Spirit Wa, which was indeed a huge favor, and should certainly be returned. Therefore, Spirit Wa wanted to send Donggong and Ximu into the heaven, and Ji Hao had no qualification, nor reason or excuse to refuse her request.

"No rush, no rush!" Spirit Wa curved her pair of eyes in a large grin, with a dim light glimmering in them. She gave Si Wen Ming a few words, telling him to hurriedly get familiar with the power of the nine cauldrons. Then, she wielded her hand and tore apart the space, bringing Ji Hao, Donggong and Xi Mu to the heaven.

As she wielded her hand again, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were dragged out of the space.

When they were pulled out all of a sudden, their faces were filled with shock. But, on seeing Spirit Wa, Donggong and Ximu, their faces twitched simultaneously. Afterward, they helplessly and deeply bowed to Spirit Wa.

"Alright, no small talk." Spirit Wa smilingly pointed the tip of her tail at Ao Bai and Qing Qiang's chests, then said, "You want to be divine emperors to help the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind control the operation of the great Dao of nature, don't you? But, you don't seem to have enough natural rewards power. It won't be easy for you to become divine emperors."

Ao Bai's face paled a little bit. With a bitter smile, he said, "Elder

Spirit Wa, I don't quite understand."

"Oh, oh, I'll directly say it out then, shall I?" Spirit Wa grinned and said, "I'll trigger the spirit of Pan Gu world to promote you two little things to divine emperors...How do you prepare to return the favor?"

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang's expressions turned extremely weird.

One might not be willing to owe Spirit Wa a favor. They would rather make contracts with Ji Hao, let him extort them for military forces and resources than making any contract with Spirit Wa!

They would even rather talk to Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei, Priest Yu Yu, Priest Mu, and Priest Hua, but never ever with Spirit Wa! They couldn't bear to offend Spirit Wa, they just couldn't.

Nevertheless, when Spirit Wa found them on her own initiative, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang smiled bitterly, bowed deeply, and responded, "Anything you say, elder."

# Chapter 1705: Zhu Rong Rises to the Heaven

Ji Hao moved swiftly in the sky.

The sun shone upon the earth. Within the sunlight, threads of nearly tangible golden light could be seen vaguely. On Pan Gu motherland, no living creatures could hide under the golden light.

Naturally, the golden light landed on the Southern Wasteland. In the dense primitive jungle, thick leaves blocked the sunlight, but failed to stop these golden threads which contained the power of the great Dao. The golden light penetrated the leaves and landed on the bodies of countless living beings, without being noticed.

In Ji Hao's erect eye, the nine suns dazzled blindingly. As his strong spirit power reached out through the golden light, every living being in Southern Wasteland was under his watch.

He saw Zhu Rong sitting straight in a chair condensed from raging flames on top of Zhu Rong Mountain, looking down at the leaders of all Southern Wasteland clans, and countless Southern Wasteland people endlessly exploiting mineral resources, shipping mountain-sized piles of ore to Zhu Rong mountain.

He also saw large groups of non-humankind warriors shuttling in the jungle, hunting human beings rampantly and sending them onto the enormous flying ships. Fully loaded flying ships took off one after another, to send the human slaves to the north.

The golden bridge dazzled, instantly bringing Ji Hao to the sky above the Southern Wasteland jungle. Looking down at the tens of thousands of flying ships which were slowly flying into the sky, he raised his right hand and clenched his fingers towards the sun. Following his move, over ten-thousand water-tank-thick, scorching beams of light descended, accurately penetrating the formation core in each ship.

On the surface of the ships that were taking off, layers of

formations exploded. The ships were wrapped in dense smoke while falling from the sky. Countless non-humankind warriors burst into roars as they darted out of the ships. Tens of thousands of Jiia Clan warriors trod on metal plate sizzling with lightning bolts, rising straight to the sky and marching towards Ji Hao formidably.

Behind Ji Hao's body, the thirty-six-thousand-meters wide mill of Dao quietly emerged, releasing a terrifying devouring power. The surrounding space collapsed immediately. Uncontrollably, the tens of thousands of Jia Clan warriors fell into the mill. Along with shrill howls, they were swallowed by the mill within a breath, despite the fact that even the weakest one among them was at the level of Magus King.

"Ji Hao!" A Yu Clan noble pointed at Ji Hao and screamed hysterically.

After all the battles that he fought, all the dangers that he conquered, Ji Hao had become a demon-like terrifying being in the hearts of non-humankind nobles. These days, since Ji Hao hadn't shown up in public, the fear these non-humankind beings had for him faded a little bit. But seeing Ji Hao suddenly show up again right in front of their faces, they were nearly peeing their pants.

"Kneel! Stay here and wait for your arrangement. If you dare to run, I'll kill your entire family!" Eyes flickering with a cold merciless light, Ji Hao randomly pointed a finger at hundreds of thousands of slave warriors, who were wielding weapons while shouting and yelling at Ji Hao with their teeth bared. An invisible force landed on their bodies, crushed their legs, and made them kneel on the ground while crying hoarsely.

A series of thudding noise could be heard without an end as countless non-humankind beings lost the courage to fight back and tremblingly kneeled.

Ji Hao waved a hand, shattered all flying ships, and freed all

Southern Wasteland people who were forced into the ships. Those people burst into cheerful shouts when they saw Ji Hao floating in the sky. They seized the weapons from the hands of the non-humankind warriors in the surroundings and kept the captives under close watch.

The golden bridge flashed again. Treading on a beam of golden light, Ji Hao came to Zhu Rong Mountain.

Zhu Rong was still controlled by Yu Huo with Pan Yu's brain, his eyes glistening with a faint dark light. Seeing Ji Hao, he seemed to struggle for a moment, but soon, he quivered and let Yu Huo's voice came out of his mouth.

"Ji Hao? I found your information from Zhu Rong's memories!" Yu Huo laughed with a hissing noise, "Interesting. You came here to do what? Or, what can you do? Zhu Rong has already become my slave, my puppet. I can take his life at any moment..."

Seeing Zhu Rong's expressionless face, Ji Hao gave a sonorous roar. The enormous mill of Dao spun swiftly behind him and let out a dark and strong devouring power.

Zhu Rong paused all of a sudden. From his eyes, wisps of dark light drifted out. Within the light, countless twisted faces could be seen. Along with the shrill soul screams, the evil soul power left inside Zhu Rong's body by Yu Huo was devoured up within a second.

"Damned thing!" Zhu Rong's eyes burned in a raging fire as he suddenly woke up. The rolling flame erupted from his body and condensed into glowing-red lotuses, falling from the sky. At the moment, the top of Zhu Rong Mountain was scorched by the fire that Zhu Rong released with his full power. Rocks were melted, lava flowing all over the ground; the scene was quite astonishing.

"Ji Hao, this time...I brought such an extreme humiliation to myself. I can't bear to see anyone with this shame on me." Gasping through clenched teeth, Zhu Rong roared, "Damnable Yu Huo, he

released Chi You from the forbidden places. Pan Gu world..."

"It's not your fault." Shaking his head, Ji Hao said, "Yu Huo? We'll deal with him later. As for Chi You...hah."

Ji Hao left him and Pan Xi to Netherworld Priest earlier. Based on what that powerful being could do, hopefully, Chi You hadn't been torn into pieces by now.

Chi You might be supernaturally powerful, but Ji Hao believed that Netherworld Priest could take good care of him. After all, Netherworld Priest had the entire Netherworld as his backup. Perhaps, Chi You had already become Netherworld Priest's strongest zombie warrior, and was accepting all weird kinds of modifications from Netherworld Priest.

"Let's talk later. Right now, we have something to do." Ji Hao looked at Zhu Rong and asked seriously, "Are you interested in becoming a divine emperor? If you have no objection to this, we'll head to the heaven now. Spirit Wa is triggering the spirit of Pan Gu world to give divine edicts. If we miss this opportunity, I don't know when this will happen next time."

Zhu Rong's expression changed for a thousand times within a blink. In both shock and surprise, he stared at Ji Hao and asked, "Divine emperor? Spirit Wa? Is she...Alright, alright, alright, why would I have an objection? I, Zhu Rong, am the Fire God, the god of the south. If we are claiming thrones, I should have a seat in the heaven."

Without hesitating, Zhu Rong took two steps forward, his body glowing with a strong fiery light. "We will go, of course we will go. Tonggong is the leader of Zhu Rong Family from this moment on. I'll bring my Zhu Rong army to the heaven right now!"

"Brother Tonggong, Southern Wasteland is under your watch now. Gather all elite troops now and wipe out all non-humankind beings in Southern Wasteland. I would rather kill the wrong people than let any of them go." Ji Hao nodded as he shouted at

Tonggong.

The mill of Dao spun speedily and drew out the evil dark light from all human leaders under Yu Huo's control, one after another.

Zhu Rong blew the dragon horn himself to gather his army. Hearing the sonorous sound of horn, strong Zhu Rong troops gathered from all directions. Volcanos vented one after another in Southern Wasteland and released giant groups of fire dragons, fire flood dragons, fire snakes, fire horses, and other fierce creatures.

The fire seemed to even swallow the sky while Ji Hao and Zhu Rong flashing to the heaven at their highest speed.

# Chapter 1706: Spirit Wa Gives Divine Edicts

Was it hard to become a divine emperor?

It didn't seem hard. Taking Ji Hao for example, who accepted immeasurable natural rewards power, and was chosen by the world, promoted as a human emperor. Judging by his experiences, becoming a divine emperor wasn't hard.

But, was it easy to become a divine emperor?

If Ji Hao didn't kill millions and millions of non-humankind monsters, didn't take such an important part in the flood-control mission, didn't help Si Wen Ming draw the four wastelands and Midland together with the 'All Streams to the Final Land' great formation, eventually forming Pan Gu Motherland, which caused a world-scale change and directly caught the attention of the spirit of Pan Gu world itself, how would he ever become a divine emperor?

The heaven was empty for countless years since it fell back in the ancient time. Kua E, his brothers, and the other divine god descendants guarded the heaven all these years, but none of them was admitted by the world and promoted to a divine emperor. This showed how difficult it was to become a divine emperor.

An opportune moment, a favorable position, right people, and the immeasurable, mysterious natural fortune... lacking any of these factors, not to mention becoming a divine emperor, one might not even be able to approach the gate of the heaven so easily.

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were the oldest, most experienced ones among all dragons and phoenixes. But, even they tried everything to build a relationship with Ji Hao, even sending their elite family members to under Ji Hao's command, for no other reason but to become divine emperors, to control the core of the world, to hold the highest power of the world.

They paid so many efforts, spent so many days in the heaven, but had they even touched the divine thrones? They paid such a high price; they threatened, bribed, tried everything they could, but what they earned was no more than Ji Hao's words - When the time came, as a divine emperor, Ji Hao would make a proposal to the world, for promoting them to divine emperors!

Ji Hao was a divine emperor, but merely held the highest power of the heaven, the mortal world, and the Netherworld on behalf of nature. Specifically, he was a subordinate of the world. Therefore, he could only make a proposal to the world like this — 'I feel that Ao Bai and Qingqian are good living beings, and they have indeed made their contributions to the heaven. Shall we consider ending their internship and promoting them to divine emperors?'

The role Ji Hao could play was like a mere advisor, that whether the world would accept his proposal or not, whether it would agree with him or not, would be unknown. He could succeed, but he could also fail; no one could make a guarantee.

Nevertheless, once Spirit Wa triggered the Dao of nature to give divine edits, things would be different.

Spirit Wa was a saint, a supreme being who controlled a part of the highest power in this world. She was also an 'old friend' of saint Pan Gu, who created this world. Her identity was special, and her power was tremendous. Seriously speaking, the great Dao of Pan Gu world was generated after Pan Gu created the world, and Spirit Wa was born before that.

In an inappropriate way, Spirit Wa could be considered a big sister, and the spirit of Pan Gu was her little brother. What was happening could be seen as the big sister saying to her little brother, "I think these few people are not bad. Are you going to promote them?"

If an ordinary living being dared to talk to the spirit of Pan Gu world like that, it would be crushed by a violent thunder trial

without leaving a trace. But, if Spirit Wa seriously gave divine edits as a saint, even the world needed to take her decision seriously.

There was a ninety-nine percent chance that the world would respect her decision and promote the people chosen by her to divine emperors! Because, that was what a saint could do. As a saint who was born before the great Dao and the spirit of Pan Gu world, Spirit Wa had the power and the special right to do something like this. In a way, Spirit Wa could affect the spirit of Pan Gu world far strongly than Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei and Priest Yu Yu could ever do.

Ji Hao went to Southern Wasteland for Zhu Rong in such a haste, then returned to the heaven as fast as he could, even without straightening the completely messy Southern Wasteland situation, all because he wanted Zhu Rong to seize this opportunity!

If Ji Hao made a proposal to the world about promoting Zhu Rong to a divine emperor, he might not succeed. But, if Spirit Wa gave a divine edict herself, things would be about right. Ji Hao needed allies in the heaven. He needed someone reliable and powerful to maintain his position and power in the heaven. No other person but Zhu Rong could do that!

After all, Zhu Rong was a pure-blooded descended of Red Emperor, the Divine Emperor of South, and the current Fire God. Generation after generation, Zhu Rong Family ruled millions of Southern Wasteland clans. Additionally, he served the humankind as Great Libation, sharing the endless natural fortune with the humankind. Regarding promoting Zhu Rong to a divine emperor, no one could disagree. After all, one of his ancestors was a ruler from the ancient heaven!

The golden bridge was fully activated, bringing Zhu Rong's thirty-million elite warriors back to the heaven. The moment they broke into the gate of the heaven, even Ji Hao was nearly exhausted.

Giving a dry laugh and wiping the sweat on his forehead, Ji Hao stood on the square where clouds of mist had been rising, bowing deeply to apologize to Spirit Wa, who had started to get a little impatient already. "Elder Spirit Wa, we are deeply sorry for letting you wait so long! Deeply sorry! Elder spirit Wa, do you think Zhu Rong, the current leader of Zhu Rong Family, can be one of the five divine emperors in heaven?"

Zhu Rong's heart thumped. He forcibly calmed himself down, silently bowing to spirit Wa.

Based on the memories passed down from his ancestors, Zhu Rong clearly knew who Spirit Wa was. Back before the world was created, she was already a powerful ancient holy saint, a good friend of saint Pan Gu. She was also a protector of Pan Gu world, definitely one of the noblest beings in Pan Gu world. Zhu Rong had been through a lot in his life, but facing Spirit Wa, he still felt that his legs were even softened.

"Ah, little thing Zhu Rong!" Spirit Wa gently flipped her long tail, lowered her body, and put her face near Zhu Rong, carefully observing his eyes, then said, "Eh? Did someone control your soul? The evil power from Pan Yu world...But, it's cleaned off."

Eyes glowing with a colorful light, Spirit Wa carefully glanced at Zhu Rong again and continued, "You have earned quite a lot of natural rewards power, even greater than what these two things have by tenfold. Look at him, look. What have you dragons and phoenixes been doing these years? As Pan Gu's descendants, the natural power earned by you is not even as great as what this little thing earned. And, he's just a descendant of an ancient god. Don't you feel ashamed?"

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang stood aside embarrassedly, mumbling but failing to say a word.

Spirit Wa sighed slightly, then pointed her finger between Zhu Rong's brows and sent extremely pure strands of power of creation

through Zhu Rong's body, dispelling the last trace of evil power from Pan Yu's brain that lingered in his body.

Slowly straightening her body, Spirit Wa decided not to waste any more time. She raised her hands towards the sky and cast a complicated, mysterious spell. The vast heaven quaked intensely. All of a sudden, everyone on the scene felt that in the highest sky, an enormous pair of eyes seemed to open, looking down at the heaven in a sacred, imperial, and just way.

The gaze from the pair of eyes was sharp as a dagger, easily penetrating the bodies of Donggong, Zhurong, Ao Bai and Qingqiang, seeing their past and future.

In the peaceful world in the west, Priest Mu and Priest Hua leaped back up as they were just sitting down.

"Spirit Wa...What is she doing? How dare she...give divine edicts all by herself?"

With anger, Priest Hua and Priest Mu transformed into two dazzling beams of light, flashing into the sky.

# Chapter 1707: Ji Hao's Giant Trap

The so-called world spirit was actually an instinct of a world; it didn't mean that the world could think and feel like a human being. The spirit of a world was lonely, high and mysterious, untouchable. Without facing a world-scale change, the spirit of a world wouldn't be triggered.

With the power of a saint, as the creator of almost all Pan Gu creatures, Spirit Wa made contact with the spirit of the world and woke it up from the mysterious state it had been sinking in. The vast, profound, and untouchable world spirit was rippled slightly, then the ripple spread. Wherever the ripple reached, the world spirit began 'defreezing' itself.

An indescribable power gathered above the heaven.

The invisible pair of eyes coldly gazed at Donggong, Ximu, Zhurong, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang.

Ximu was asking to be the Gold Mother of the Jade Lake, equal to a high-level commander in heaven. Therefore, the pressure she suffered was slightly gentler, and she could still stand stably.

Donggong once was as powerful as Ximu after all. Before Pan Gu created the world, he was invited as a world protector. He was injured badly and degraded, but his strong foundation of Dao remained, and so did the natural rewards power he earned. Facing the gaze of the world, he felt a towering mountain was forced upon his shoulders, but he tightened his body, straightened his waist, and managed to remain moveless.

Zhu Rong wasn't as strong as Donggong and Ximu, but he was still a powerful being. As the Fire God, a descendant of Red Emperor, a true original divine emperor of Pan Gu world, he received an even lighter pressure from the gaze of the world than Ximu did. More importantly, after Zhu Rong family left the ancient heaven, it had been serving the humankind as Great

Libation, generation after generation. As supporters and followers of the humankind, Zhu Rong Family people had made great contributions to the development of the humankind. The Zhu Rong Family had been shielded by the natural fortune of the humankind, and had earned great natural rewards power for helping the humankind.

The sharp as dagger gaze 'pierced' deeply on Zhu Rong for a few times, then a thunderous bang could be heard. A golden light weaving with purple mist descended from the higher sky, wrapping a divine seal and a ceremonial robe for divine emperor, which slowly drifted to Zhu Rong.

Zhu Rong was approved by the world even before Donggong, successfully ascending to the throne.

Raising his eyebrows, Zhu Rong unwittingly glanced at Ji Hao. Perhaps, this had something to do with his relationship with Ji Hao? As a future son-in-law of Zhu Rong, Ji Hao was connected with the natural fortune of Zhu Rong Family. Perhaps, because of Ji Hao, the world valued Zhu Rong even more.

Spirit Wa's body glowed with a seven-colored sacred light, flowing like water towards the higher sky. Her vast spirit power swept across the entire heaven like tide as she had been communicating with the world, telling her request to the world.

The spirit of the world was unpredictable. Even though Spirit Wa had woken it up, she could not control its decision. What she could do was try her best to communicate with the world, convincing the world to approve the people she selected.

A while later, two beams of golden light descended with purple mists, landing on Donggong and Ximu.

As a muffled thunder echoed through the sky, Ji Hao somehow sensed the hesitation of the world. Clearly, letting Donggon and Ximu be a divine emperor and the Gold Mother of Jade Lake was a complicated thing. If Spirit Wa didn't make the request herself,

Donggong and Ximu wouldn't have a chance.

The ceremonial robes landed directly on their bodies. Immediately, their bodies shone blindingly, and the highly concentrated natural powers condensed into enormous dragons, roaring into their bodies.

Ji Hao clearly felt that the natural fortune of the entire heaven gathered ceaselessly towards Donggong and Ximu, gradually transforming into a magical power that wrapped them up. Before, Ji Hao sensed their powers and felt that they were like cracked porcelains, but now, wrapped in the natural fortune, the cracks had quietly disappeared, without leaving a trace.

Obviously, with enough time, Donggong and Ximu could truly heal themselves with the power of the heaven.

"Great!" Sonorous laughter could be heard. Hundreds of male cultivators wearing feather cloaks and mounting on dragons or cranes, smilingly descended from the sky and landed around Donggong, praising him.

"Wonderful!" Silvery chuckles could also be heard from the sky as nearly a thousand beautiful female cultivators, wearing gorgeous glowing dresses and mounted on rare birds, descended. They came to Ximu and smiled, congratulating her.

Ji Hao raised his brows, and immediately figured out that these people were Donggong and Ximu's trusted followers. These people were powerful indeed, but still not as good as Po and Guiling, and their number was small. Donggong had five to six hundred followers, while Ximu had nearly a thousand.

These people...couldn't even fill a palace of Donggong, could they?

Compared with them, not to mention the billions of elite warriors under Ji Hao's command, Zhu Rong alone had just brought a thirty-million-men army to the heaven in haste!

"Interesting!" Ji Hao laughed.

While Ji Hao was laughing, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang had already kneeled tremblingly on the ground. Dragon scales grew out of Ao Bai's skin one after another, while cyan-colored feathers drilled out of Qing Qiang's back. They were both nearly forced back into their original shapes by the spirit of the world.

They were elders of the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind who had lived since the prehistorical era, elected to be divine emperors and empress by their people. Each of them had died once; they came back to life because their bodies were regrown with powerful natural treasures.

They were powerful indeed, but they didn't make much of contributions to Pan Gu world, neither did they have great natural rewards powers. Even though they were recommended by Spirit Wa, the world hadn't made its decision yet, just coldly gazing at them and scanning them.

Spirit Wa raised her voice to cast the spell. Every syllable she said quaked the heaven intensely.

Ji Hao remained silent for a while, took out his own divine seal, and laughed out loud to the unspeakable being in the higher sky, "World, how about this? Ao Bai and Qing Qiang lack natural rewards power indeed...Let them ascend to the throne today, and they will earn enough natural reward power to pay you back. How about this?"

Smiling evilly, Ji Hao continued, "A hundred years later, if the natural reward power they earned still can't satisfy you...you can simply strike them to death with thunderbolts, then get two new divine emperors. Billions of living beings exist in Pan Gu world, and many of them want to be divine emperors. It's not like they're the only candidates, right?"

Finishing this speech, which enraged Ao Bai and Qing Qiang so much, Ji Hao stamped his seal towards the sky.

Along with a buzzing noise, the golden light and purple mist descended again from the higher sky, along with two ceremonial robes.

Once the robes put themselves on Ao Bai and Qing Qiang, they leaped up from the ground and turned back, glaring at Ji Hao, their eyes almost burning.

# Chapter 1708: Priest Hua and Priest Mu Accuse

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were driven crazy. They wanted to be divine emperors, so they sent Ji Hao large batches of elite family members for him to command.

However, they never wanted to ascend to the divine thrones like this, 'Ji Hao, are you joking? Spirit Wa has already recommended us, which means in all probability, we will become a divine emperor and a divine empress without paying a giant price!'

'But look at what you have done, Ji Hao. With one simple sentence, you sold us to the world!'

'How much natural rewards power is required to become a divine emperor? An immeasurable amount. But, the word 'immeasurable' is vague. How much could be counted as 'immeasurable'? That was for the world to decide 'freely'!'

'No matter how much natural power we earn, the world can still be unsatisfied after a hundred years and strike us to death...If that truly happened, who should we complain to?'

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang didn't have to pay such a huge price and make such a promise! It was all because of Ji Hao! How on earth did he come up with this lousy idea? They should have quietly waited for Spirit Wa to communicate with the world. They would rather owe Spirit Wa a favor than owe the world an immeasurable amount of natural rewards power!

Spirit Wa was a saint, but she was also a living being. As long as she remained a living being, one could negotiate with her, and her favor could be owed. But, did anyone dare to owe the world anything? The world would kill one immediately with absolutely no mercy if it wanted to.

"Ji...Ji Hao!" Qing Qiang quivered intensely, even with her eyes

turning green. Now, she needed to earn natural rewards power in a hundred years to repay the world for their divine thrones, and if she failed, she would be struck to death by a bolt of thunder! No matter how one thought about this, it looked like Qing Qiang and Ao Bai had fallen in Ji Hao's trap!

"Emperor Ji Hao!" Ao Bai clenched his teeth so tightly that he even caused a creaking noise. A dense cloud rolled behind him, within which, a Bixi carrying a giant golden stele was faintly visible. A pure and tremendous power was released towards Ji Hao, heavy as a mountain.

Ao Bai could even taste the bitterness in his mouth. Same as Qing Qiang, he felt like being raped by a dog. Ji Hao was such an evil person! He was killing them, he was truly killing them! Earlier, the world spirit was hesitating. It was thinking indeed, but with Spirit Wa's recommendation, they could have still been crowned without paying a tremendous price!

They didn't need Ji Hao to say that! What on earth did he want? Earning immeasurable natural rewards power in a century?! When were dragons and phoenixes ever in the mood to earn natural rewards power? They just wanted to spend every second they had to enjoy their lives!

Spirit Wa was smiling, even squeezing her eyes into a pair of curve lines. As descendants of Pan Gu, to be honest, the dragon-kind and phoenixes-kind had gone a bit too far these years. During the long-lasting war against non-humankind, they had indeed sent some of their elite troops to join the allied force started by the humankind, but how many of those warriors truly fought a battle?

So smartly and easily, Ji Hao put Qing Qiang and Ao Bai in such a difficult position. Somehow, Spirit Wa felt delighted!

But of course, because of who she was, because of her relationship with Pan Gu's descendants, Spirit Wa could not laugh out loud right now. She had to stay calm, calm; she needed to stay

calm!

She was trying very hard to hold back her laughter, that her face even blushed in trying, but she felt like bursting into a wild laugh in the following moment. Gently, she put a hand behind, raised her tail tip, and pinched herself on the tail pretty hard. Sensing a heart-piercing pain, Spirit Wa immediately dropped her face and again wore a sacred, bland, solemn, and queenly look.

"Ao Bai, Qing Qiang, don't forget about the favor you owe me. It's going down to the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind!" Coughing slightly, Spirit Wa said in a gentle voice, while her tail even twitched in pain.

Before Ao Bai and Qing Qiang responded, Spirit Wa hurriedly emphasized, "The young dragons and phoenixes need to remember this too, even if you may die both physically and spiritually in the future. No one can owe me a favor forever! If you die, your debts will remain!"

Ji Hao, Zhu Rong, Donggong, and Ximu coughed simultaneously.

Spirit Wa sounded like an old landlord collecting her debt before the new year. Ji Hao wondered where she learned to talk like this.

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang' faces paled instantly. Hearing what Spirit Wa said, they suddenly realized that they didn't just owe the world an immeasurable natural rewards power that no one could tell how much for sure, they also owed Spirit Wa a huge favor!

Spirit Wa prayed to the world to recommend them as divine emperors. How huge was this favor?

Bitterly, they glanced at each other, then bowed to Spirit Wa and told her that they dared not to forget about the favor they owed her.

They would rather lie to the world spirit, but they dared not to be dishonest to Spirit Wa. The Dao of nature was fair, that as long as they earned enough natural rewards power to fulfill their promise

to the world, they would have nothing to worry about. However, Spirit Wa was a temperamental powerful being, that no one knew what would happen if one owed her a favor but failed to return.

If one owed the world something, one might suffer a thunder trial. But, if one owed Spirit Wa a thing, one might suffer a violent thunder every day! Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were clearly aware of this fact.

"Alright, alright, don't blame Ji Hao. He did this for your own good!" Spirit Wa abruptly raised her brows, then frowned, said, "If Ji Hao didn't recommend you to the world and make the promise for you, I'm afraid that...you may not have been able to ascend to the throne!"

Before she finished, two beams of light had already flashed to the gate of the heaven. A seven-colored fire bomb struck violently on the gate and generated a thunderous boom as it shattered the gate. Next, a terrifying wave of power rolled over, putting hundreds of thousands of warriors in Zhu Rong's army down to the ground right on the spot.

Priest Hua broke into the heaven with giant steps while shouting, "Spirit Wa, who permitted you to give divine edicts?"

Priest Mu followed behind him with a gloomy bitter face, looking at Spirit Wa while quietly giving a great pressure to her and the others.

Spirit Wa gave a cold smile and replied, "I don't think I need to ask your permissions for everything I want to do, do I?"

"Back then, we all signed the agreement. None of us can step into a Pan Gu world affairs. Spirit Wa, how dare you?"

Spirit Wa curved up her lip corners, transformed into a colorful strand of light, and faded in the air, leaving her silvery voice echoing through the heaven, "I do dare, I just did it. What can you do to me? The old agreement...Hehe, are you still following it? You

broke the rule, so why can't I?"

Spirit Wa disappeared without a trace, leaving Priest Mu and Priest Hua, who were full of rage that they didn't know how to vent. With glowing eyes, they turned to Ji Hao and the others.

# *Chapter 1709: Fight Spirit Hua and Spirit Mu Again*

Donggong and Ximu smilingly stood aside without saying a word, just looking at Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Surrounding them, the group of cultivators had also been looking at Priest Hua and Priest Mu calmly. They had been through countless wars back in the ancient times. Therefore, the small conflict happening right now couldn't even catch their eyes.

Zhu Rong gave a deep snort. Wearing a fire-red robe, he slowly raised his right hand. Following his move, his thirty-million-men Zhu Rong army split into two groups, swiftly forming a great formation in the air.

Streaks of fiery glow emerged from the sky, descending and falling onto the bodies of Zhu Rong warriors. These warriors roared deeply as their bodies burst into dazzling fiery lights and grew twice as tall. Their powers were raised by ten folds at least.

After all, Zhu Rong Family was descended from the Red Emperor, and this ancient divine battle formation was a part of their daily practice. Once the great formation was composed, numerous divine defensive formations in the heaven were triggered, and the fire power in the entire heaven began gathering towards the formation, gifting it a fierce vibe and making its power soar.

Ji Hao smilingly took a few steps forward, glanced at Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and chuckled abruptly, "Elders, you ran so fast. My Shifu set up his sword formation, intending to put up a life-to-death fight with you. But, little did we know that you would actually abandon your 'dear friend' and take off, as if that friendship didn't exist at all!"

"Poor Yu..." Sighed Ji Hao.

"Shut up!" Priest Mu abruptly burst into a loud shout, cutting Ji

Hao off. Ji Hao was telling everyone on the scene about the fact that Priest Mu and Priest Hua colluded with Yu Man, but Priest Hua and Priest Mu weren't shameless enough to let Ji Hao speak that out. How could they?

Priest Hua dropped his face as he carried a transparent glowing pestle and took two steps towards Ji Hao. He glanced at Ji Hao, then turned his eyes to Donggong and Ximu. At last, he looked at Zhu Rong. His eyes sparkled with a dim light as he pointed at Ao Bai and Qing Qiang and hollered, "Who do you think you are? How dare you steal the divine throne?" So harshly, Priest Hua said, "Take off the robes of divine emperors, give up the thrones, cut off your natural fortune earned as divine emperors, and get out of the heaven!"

Stomping his foot against the ground, Priest Hua continued, "If you do not do what I said, you will regret!"

Donggong and Ximu stood aside, smiling. In terms of status and experience, they were no weaker than Priest Hua and Priest Mu, for which reason, Priest Hua and Priest Mu smartly left them alone. Zhu Rong Family was strong, and Ji Hao was a future member of that family. Therefore, Priest Mu and Priest Hua surely would not choose to bite a hard bone like this.

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were master elders from the dragon-kind and phenix-kind, but they earned the weakest natural fortune from the heaven and were barely related to the heaven before they ascended to the thrones. They were clearly not qualified enough for the thrones, but for some external reason, they came to the thrones.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua chose them to threat, because that would be the most appropriate choice to make. Priest Mu and Priest Hua wouldn't risk taking a counterforce from the divine natural fortune and the great Dao of nature by threatening them.

Ao Bai's face was badly darkened. Earlier, he was brutally pushed

into a trap by Ji Yao, ending up owing the world an immeasurable natural rewards power. But, before he tasted the sweetness of being a divine emperor, Priest Mu and Priest Hua showed up aggressively and threatened him.

They didn't say a word to Donggong, Ximu, or Zhu Rong, but chose him and Qing Qiang. Clearly, Priest Hua and Priest My despised Ao Bai and Qing Qiang.

"You free people are beyond the noisy world. How dare you reach your hands to the highest power of this world?" With hands clasped behind back, Ao Bai responded with an imperial tone, "The heaven is a sacred place. How can you free people...How can you wild people set foot in here without a permit? Go away as fast as you can. Otherwise, under the punishment of the world, you can perish at any moment."

Qing Qiang's slim and upturning eyes also sparked with a frosty light. Dragons and phoenixes had always been proud. Ever since the prehistorical era, dragons and phoenixes were used to bully the others, but they were hardly ever bullied.

Today, Priest Mu and Priest Hua obviously treated Ao Bai and Qing Qiang like pushovers. Who was Qing Qiang? How dare she let Priest Hua and Priest Mu talk to her like this? She clearly knew about Priest Mu and Priest Hua, but the phoenix-kind was never weak! More importantly, she had just become a divine empress, and she was in the heaven. The heaven was the ruler of the world; in the heaven, her every move could trigger vast natural powers. Therefore, she dared to put up a fight against a true saint right now.

Qing Qiang was too proud to even say a world. She wielded her right hand and pulled out a dazzling, cyan-colored longsword, which looked like a jade statue. She gave a sonorous roar, as her broad robe fluttered in the air like a pair of wings stretching behind her. She flashed across the air and dashed up to Priest Mu and Priest Hua instantly, launching a series of sword moves.

This place was the heaven while Qing Qiang was a new divine empress. Once she moved, the natural powers followed.

Stars shone in broad daylight. Streams of starlight poured down from the higher sky, flowing into Qing Qiang's body. Qing Qiang put forth merely ten percent of her power, yet the star power strengthened her by tens of thousands of times. Her sword lights descended like a heavy rain, seeming to even drown Priest Hua.

Priest Hua shouted out loud while wielding his pestle as he attempted to defend himself against Qing Qiang's sword.

Nevertheless, once he moved, a divine seal was triggered. Following a series of creaking noise, the air around him condensed into paper-thin but incredibly strong transparent screens, caging him.

Priest Hua was slowed down, and Qing Qiang's sword lights landed on him.

Along with a sizzling noise, Priest Hua's long robe turned into a puff of powder. Then, thin slashes were left on her body by the sword lights.

He growled with rage. Standing aside, Priest Mu grimly glanced at Qing Qiang, then raised his right hand. An enormous handprint roared out, flying to Qing Qiang like a towering mountain.

Ao Bai vented a resonant growl. As the hazy figure of Bixi moved slightly in the cloud behind him, he bent his body and charged, punching at Priest Mu's handprint. A sky-shaking bang was generated as a tremor went through Ao Bai's body. Countless blood veins bulged from under his skin, coiling around his body like wriggling boas while a terrifying pure strength erupted from his fist. He managed to stop Priest Mu's handprint and make it freeze in the air.

Priest Mu frowned slightly, looking at Ao Bai as he said, "Bixi, the strongest one among the dragon ancestor's nine sons. You deserve

your reputation!"

Baring his teeth, Ao Bai stared at Priest Mu and laughed coldly, "Back then in the ancient time, my brother and I should have combined our powers and finished you two! Hehe, if you weren't friends of Saint Pan Gu, you would have become our food!"

Priest Mu made no reply as his face dropped. Suddenly, he burst into a raging shout, turned around, and cast a bolt of thunder.

As Priest Mu was confronting Ao Bai, Ji Hao moved behind him and quietly lunged his sword towards the back of Priest Mu's heart. Priest Mu reacted timely, but still, the Pan Gu sword pierced into his back.

Priest Mu punched at Ji Hao, and Ji Hao punched back.

Along with the boom, Ji Hao remained perfectly unmoved while Priest Mu staggered back for seven to eight steps, suffering a heavy punch from Ao Bai right on the face.

# Chapter 1710: Break Silence

Outside Liang Zhu City, Yu Huo gritted his teeth and angrily gripped a pen which was soaked in blood, slowly signing his name on a black scroll.

This black scroll was made from Saint Pan Yu's skin and contained a measureless magic power. It was a binding magic contract that affected all living beings in Pan Yu world, even including saints like Yu Huo. No one from Pan Yu world was free from the constraint of this contract.

Yu Fen, Yu Ji, and the other eight saints joined hands and invaded Pan Gu world, forcing Yu Huo to share the potential profits in Pan Gu world. Yu Huo made some efforts and acted like he had no choice at all, reluctantly signing his name on the contract.

With the advantage of the alliance, Yu Fen, Yu Ji and the other saints did not do this in a friendly way. They forced Yu Huo to promise to divide the potential profits from Pan Gu world and surrounding great worlds into ten parts, so that each of them could have a share.

Seeing Yu Huo sign his name on the scroll with a sour look, Yu Ji immediately gave a bright grin, clapped his hands delightfully, and said, "This is right, fair and reasonable, isn't it?"

"It sure is!" Laughed Yu Feng, "We share all potential profits, then we combine our powers to make sure that no other people can ever lay a finger on this place. What contract can possibly be safer, fairer, and more reasonable than this? Can someone bring us some booze so we can celebrate?"

Once Yu Fan finished his speech, the Pan Yu saint who was standing beside him, much taller than the others, wearing a heavy armor and releasing a blade-sharp sense of power, hollered, "Since the contract is signed, this city...Is it called Liang Zhu? Ten

percent of this city, including everything in it, should belong to us too. Ah, I, Yu Tu, am not a stingy man. Someone, go take a hundred vats of top-grade wine from my share of cellar storage!"

Yu Tu then burst into wild laughter while Yu Fen and Yu Ji curved their lines in a large grin.

Yu Huo's mouth corners twitched intensely, staring at Yu Tu with anger, 'Shameless, seriously shameless! We've just signed the contract. How can you even think about having ten percent of Liang Zhu City already?'

While chuckling, Yu Huo scratched his face and responded slowly with a fake smile, "We can drink whenever we want. But, we need to figure out a way to conquer the local creatures in this world for good."

Sighing slightly, Yu Huo pointed at his clone and continued blandly, "He is Yemo Tian, the highest command of our kind in this world. He and his people spent countless years of efforts but still failed to conquer this world thoroughly, because the local creatures in this world aren't as weak as we think they are."

He successfully changed the topic to the powers of Pan Gu world creatures. Hearing him, the other saints who followed right behind him into Pan Gu world each gave a scornful snort. A tall and slim female saint, who was wrapped in a black mist that even covered her face, said coldly, "The local creatures in this world, how powerful can they be? Yu Huo, in my point of view, it's not because the local creatures are too strong, but because your people are incapable, right?"

Yu Huo's clone, who had occupied Yemo Tian's body, immediately lowered his head and put on a humble, ashamed face.

"Yu Ling, you said my people are incapable, so why don't you send your people to give a try?" Yu Huo looked at the female saint grouchily and shouted.

While the group of Pan Yu saints were arguing with each other, from the portal they forcibly tore apart, giant groups of heavy armored non-humankind warriors had been surging out ceaselessly. Tens of billions of elite non-humankind warriors invaded Pan Gu world while laughing and roaring like beasts. Thunderbolts had been blasting around them, but the overwhelming thunder power was pushed away by the force which was surrounding their bodies.

Yu Ling gave a cold smile, then raised a finger. A purely black, round mirror flew out of her fingertip, buzzing shrilly. The mirror had a radius of three-hundred and sixty-thousand meters, a thickness of hundreds of meters, and was thickly covered in erect eye embossments and complicated patterns.

The mirror shone with a dim black light, and the light swept across the sky. Immediately, the intense war which was taking place in the heaven could be watched through the mirror.

The group of saints saw Priest Hua suffering Qing Qiang's sword lights, Priest Mu being forced back by Bixi's tremendous strength. They also saw Ji Hao's sword penetrate Priest Mu's body from the back, then Priest Mu be forced staggering backward for quite a few steps under the effect of heavy punch from Ji Hao,

Simultaneously, all ten Pan Yu saints, even including Yu Huo, exclaimed out loud.

Through Yu Ling's mirror, they did not just watch the war happening in the heaven, they had also been sensing the powers which had been boasting in the heaven.

Ji Hao, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang were now tightly connected with the heaven. Therefore, every single move they made was supported by the heaven. Obviously, they were the highest power-holders in Pan Gu world. Back in Pan Yu world, the ones at their level should be 'crowns'.

From Priest Mu and Priest Hua, the group of Pan Yu saints sensed

strong powers of Dao. By any slight move, they managed to leave clearly visible ripples in the system of the great Dao of Pan Gu world. No ordinary creature could sense the ripples of Dao, but in the eyes of Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints, they were so clear and dazzling.

"Two saints fell in disadvantages in a battle against three crowns?" Yu Ling widely opened his mouth and murmured to herself as if she couldn't believe her eyes. "Am I in a dream? Or, is this a rule of Pan Gu world's great Dao? How can 'crowns', who speak on behalf of the world, be even more powerful than 'saints', who actually run the great Dao of nature?"

"This Pan Yu spirit mirror used to be Saint Pan Yu's skull." Said Yu Huo with a low voice, "So, what we saw and felt cannot be wrong. No living being can fool this mirror, unless it's stronger than Saint Pan Yu by ten folds."

Yu Tu crossed his arms before his chest and chuckled in a deep voice, "The saints in this world aren't so powerful. And, are they the only saints?"

Yu Ling pondered for a while, then cast a spell and pointed at the mirror. The images showing up in the mirror changed, soon turning into a beautiful and peaceful space. "Over there, this is the base of those two saints. I can feel their power from this small independent space, which is like a tiny world."

Yu Huo grinned delightfully, pointing at the sky as he said, "Shall we go up there to attack the heaven, which is also the core of this world directly, or march into the base of those two weak saints first?"

The others all remained silent for a short while. Afterward, Yu Ji laughed out loud and said, "Let's do it together. Those two 'friends' of ours aren't home now, so let's destroy their base first then wipe them out. Come on, let's do it now. Together, are we afraid of them?"

Glancing at each other, the ten saints jumped into the mirror.

The mirror sparkled, then transformed into a dark beam of light and tore apart of the space, instantly bringing the ten saints into the peaceful world created by Priest Mu and Priest Hua.

Following a thunderous bang, ten enormous hands reached out from the sky and smashed the entrance of the peaceful world.

# Chapter 1711: Die One After Another

Westernmost in Pan Gu Motherland, in the peaceful world which was created by Priest Mu and Priest Hua with immeasurable efforts, a linden tree had been swaying in a breeze while a lotus pond was rippling gently. The entire space was covered in grass, decorated with golden flowers. Numerous priests in long robes sat chatting peacefully on the ground, or leisurely wandered around. In this small independent space, they had been cultivating themselves so freely, with no worries.

An earth-shaking bang suddenly happened. The sky of the peaceful world shattered, showing a giant hole.

Waves of dark mist rolled into the peaceful world. The eight pagodas built by Priest Hua and Priest Mu in the peaceful world to stabilize this space released a blinding light to defend against the dark mist. Layers of lotus embossments on the pagodas spun swiftly, causing a series of thunderous noises as they released beams of clear light, which wove into a giant magic shield and covered the entire peaceful world.

The eighteen thousands of meters tall pagodas began growing in the wind. In no time, they reached tens of thousands of miles in height, and the numerous glowing beads inlaid on the tops released sharp beams of light, piercing into the dark mist like countless swords and blades.

Raging growls could be heard without an end. From each pagoda, a tremendous faith power spread out. Within a blink, a hundred and eight three-headed and six-armed, golden-armored warriors darted out of the eighteen pagodas, treading on fiery lotuses while holding sharp swords which were wrapped in flames, rising into the sky without an array.

"Kill!" These golden-armored warriors were generated from Priest Hua and Priest Mu' vast powers and the faith power they

collected from countless believers of their sect. Human beings were the owners of the natural fortune of Pan Gu world. Therefore, this faith power contained a strong natural fortune, that made it unbreakable and invincible.

Nevertheless, the enemies who invaded this time were way too strong, far beyond the imagination that priest Hua and Priest Mu had back when they built this defensive formation.

Three enormous black hands slapped down from the sky and sent all golden-armored warriors to the ground. Next, the three hands landed heavily on the ground and raised three dark mushroom clouds mixed with fire, leaving three giant handprints on the ground. Tens of thousands of poor priests who happened to be in that area were killed.

"Kill!" The golden-armored warriors who were sunk into the ground by the three enormous hands burst into raging roars. Many of their golden armors, which were condensed from faith power, had shattered. But, from the eighteen pagodas, new faith power had been flowing into their bodies, fixing their armors and their bodies, which were already dimmed and nearly torn apart.

Treading on red lotuses, they again flew into the sky while roaring.

A black beam of blade light descended from the sky. Among the ten Pan Yu saints, Yu Tu was best at close combat. At the moment, he was launching a quick move with an oddly shaped long blade, which was a supreme treasure.

The light shield created by the eighteen pagodas were cut open immediately, and each of the one-hundred and eight golden-armored warriors was cut into two from the waist. Being wrapped in the black mist, the blade released an incredibly strong devouring power, swallowed the broken magic shield and all golden armored warriors.

"Nice treasures!" Yu Fen and Yi Ji fixed their shining eyes on the

eighteen pagodas simultaneously. The eighteen pagodas were high-level treasures with space power, built by priest Hua and Priest Mu for stabilizing this peaceful world.

This kind of a treasure with the power to create independent spaces was very precious. Whether for raising private armies, protecting families, descendants, disciples, or storing warriors, supplies, and armaments during the expedition trips to other worlds, a treasure like this could provide a high strategic value.

Yu Fen and Yu Ji laughed out loud, while stretching their fingers, reaching their hands to the eighteen pagodas.

The others didn't notice the eighteen pagodas before that, but once they moved, everyone's eyes shone. All ten Pan Gu saints pounced on the eighteen pagodas together. Giant black hands swept across the air. The eighteen pagodas glowed brightly, trying to defend themselves against those enormous black hands. But, their light was dimmed layer by layer, failing to even slow these giant hands down.

"Who are you? How dare you invade the sacred dojo of saints? Do you know the word 'death'?" Following deep growls, Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth arrived with a large group of priests, treading on a gust of wind.

"I truly don't know the word 'death' in Pan Gu world!" Yu Tu laughed wildly as he leaped out of the Pan Yu spirit mirror. He tried his best to restrain his power, shrank his body to an acceptable size, then broke into the peaceful world while wearing a full heavy armor.

"Remember, all treasures in this place have to be divided into ten, so each of us can have a share! No one can take more than the others, or the contract will punish you!" While squeezing into the peaceful world, Yu Tu shouted to his friends, who had been striving for the ten pagodas.

Hearing him, the others instantly slowed down. They glanced at

each other then shook their heads and gave up on seizing the eighteen pagodas for now. As Yu Tu said, every treasure they found in this place needed to be divided into ten, even if the treasure was already held in the hands of one of them. Why would they try to take the treasures in such a hurry then?

If they killed every Pan Gu world creature in this place, all treasures in here would belong to them!

"Kill them!" Yu Tu broke into the peaceful world. Holding his blade sideways, he momentarily swept across Dragon, Lion, Tiger and Mammoth, leaving a long shred of afterimage behind. Within the past moment, Yu Tu made whole ten billion blade moves at an unimaginable speed!

The blade slide through the space, cut up time itself, and stirred the natural system.

Dragon, Lion, Tiger and Mammoth froze. With fear and despair, they looked at Yu Tu. 'Saint', the one who attacked them just now was a true 'saint'. From Yu Tu, they sensed a terrifying pressure that they used to sense from their Shifu.

In the next moment, Dragon, Lion, Tiger and Mammoth and over hundred-thousand elite disciples who followed them here were gone.

They were wiped out from this world, their bodies, souls, their every trace, even including their true spirit. Except for the powerful ones who were at Yu Tu's level, Pan Gu world creatures even began forgetting Dragon, Lion, Tiger and Mammoth, forgetting the fact that four powerful cultivators used to exist in this world.

"These cultivators are so weak!"

Yu Ling hissed with laughter. Held in her hand, the Pan Yu spirit mirror released millions of beams of dark light that wove into black light swords, slaughtering the other priests on the scene.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu spent countless years and made all kinds of efforts to recruit these disciples, but in this very moment, they were disappearing from this world. Their bodies were crushed immediately, and their souls were sent into the sky, uncontrollably flying to Yu Huo, who was laughing thunderously.

# Chapter 1712: Treasures Everywhere

"Souls, tasty, nourishing souls!"

Holding Pan Yu's brain, Yu Huo laughed viciously while watching the brain devour the souls of countless disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. The powerful ones at the level of embryo of Dao, the priests who had grown their primordial spirits, and the beginners who just started their cultivations, their memories and wits were gone instantly after Pan Yu's brain devoured their souls.

The embryos of Dao contained the powers of Dao, and the primordial spirits were pure and strong. But, when the memories and wits were gone, they were all shredded by the dark light sparkling inside Pan Yu's brain. At last, everything was turned into the purest and most concentrated original soul power, stored in Pan Yu's brain.

Yu Huo grinned happily, even squeezing his eyes into a pair of curved lines. Within a few seconds, over a hundred thousand disciples of Priest Mu and Priest Hua were killed, and the original soul powers transformed from their embryos of Dao and primordial spirits was nearly as much as ten percent of Yu Huo's own original soul power.

By killing ten times more priests and devouring all their embryos of Dao and primordial spirits, Yu Huo's original soul power would be doubled. In the expectable short span of time in the future, his power would soar!

"Hehe, even though we have signed the contract..." With a mysterious smile, Yu Huo glanced at the other saints. Because of that contract, he was supposed to give away ninety percent of this beautiful original soul power! That bloody contract! However, thinking of what Original Devil had said, Yu Huo couldn't help but burst into laughter.

"Haha, rich, this place of so rich!" When Yu Huo was laughing,

Yu Kui, Yu Li and Yu Luan also impatiently marched into the peaceful world.

They didn't join the massacre. Instead, they immediately began digging around.

For some reason, Priest Mu and Priest Hua had no choice but to build their dojo in the westernmost area in Pan Gu world. Western Wasteland was the poorest continent in Pan Gu world, with a small population, little natural products, and small natural treasure reserves.

However, Priest Mu and Priest Hua had been running their dojo in Western Wasteland for many years. As two greedy powerful beings, they had dug through every corner of this continent long ago. In their peaceful world, the mountains were made from crystals, the earth in the linden woods was paved by a layer of pearl and jade, the lotus pond was built from rare essence metals, and paved with the tiles made by all rare divine materials.

The entire peaceful world was glowing, with not even a grain of dirt or sand. Even the mud in the lotus world was 'eight divine soil with natural reward', which contained an immeasurable power of creation. This kind of earth was as magical as the breathing earth, but more functional than breathing earth by a hundred folds.

Pagodas, palaces, pavilions, even the pots and bowls in the peaceful world were top-grade treasures. In the great hall where Priest Hua and Priest Mu gave daily lectures to their disciples, every hassock was woven from pre-world divine straws, and could deliver all kinds of unimaginable powers.

Each one of those never-dimming lights hanging in the palaces and pavilions was famous back in the prehistorical world, and could serve as a powerful treasure. The golden, silver, and bronze small bells hanging under every eave of every pagoda were also supreme treasures with strong backgrounds, that each of them possessed an indescribable magical power.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua were plant lives from the Chaos. Therefore, they were very attractive to all kinds of powerful plants. They traveled across the world, and sensing their powers, the magical plants with power would follow them on their own initiatives. For this reason, rare powerful plant lives could be found all over the peaceful world, such as ten-thousand years old ganodermas, human-shaped ginseng babies leaping all over the ground, mushrooms which had shifted their shapes into men or horses, seaworts which expanded for millions of miles, hill-sized fleece-flower roots, and all kinds of powerful herbs and plants, which could even bring the dead back to life. These plants were growing in every corner of this peaceful world like wild grasses.

Other than these, a supreme treasure was placed in each important hall located upon the core area of an earth meridians. These supreme treasures in countless halls were at least pre-world spirit treasures, connected through the earth meridians to stabilize this peaceful world and maintain the rich natural powers in this place, keeping it beyond the mortal world.

This place was Priest Mu and Priest Hua' dojo after all, where they started their sect. No matter how poor Western Wasteland was, treasures did exist on or in this vast continent. The two old priests who liked to claim any treasure they saw with the excuse of 'destiny' had been devotedly collecting treasures from Western Wasteland for countless years. As a result, their peaceful world had become a fleshy, juicy piece of meat!

Yu Kui, Yu Li, Yu Luan, and the other saints were from Pan Yu world, which was on the verge of collapse. That world was maintaining its last trace of life-force with 'blood-transfusions' from other worlds. But even those conquered worlds were nearly drained, with nothing more to give.

Even as saints, these powerful being from Pan Yu world were awfully poor, that expect for their life-saving money, they truly didn't have too much. Therefore, when they broke into this

peaceful world and saw all kinds of treasure all over the ground, and sensed the endless natural powers, they almost went mad.

With one quick move, Yu Li smashed a golden shiny great hall, picked up a three-meters and two-feet tall glaze bottle and poured out a stream of 'three light divine dew'. Raising his head high, he burst into wild laughter.

"A hundred and twelve-thousand years ago, I had a spring before my palace. Back then, I could get forty-million liters of 'three light divine dew' from it. Then, the spring died. Since then, I couldn't even make 'three light pills' to award my children. Here, in this crappy bottle, they actually have whole eighteen 'three light' springs! And these springs are inexhaustible! What a waste, what a reckless waste!"

Before his voice faded, Yu Luan grabbed a grey-bearded old man who was trying to hide underground. He threw the old man into his mouth and gnawed. The old man's body was crushed, but the blood he shed was faint cyan, emitting a refreshing aroma.

"It was spirit herb, at least a hundred and twelve-thousand years old. Great, I even sensed an improvement of my power. Here...here...they have so many of these in here!"

Yu Luan greedily looked at a brightly shining mountain, eyes fixed on thousands of people who were trembling in a deep cave. They weren't human beings, but instead, were transformed from all kinds of powerful magic herbs.

They were highly nourishing to Yu Luan and the other Pan Yu saints. Even with their high cultivation level, these herbs could largely improve their powers and help their cultivations.

This peaceful worlds had treasures all over the ground, which shocked the ten Pan Yu saints deeply. The ten saints rushed into the peaceful world while roaring madly, and impatiently began grabbing everything that crossed their eyes.

# Chapter 1713: The Sword Realm in Heaven

In the heaven, Priest Mu's body was penetrated by Ji Hao's sword. After that, he was forced to shamble backward for quite a few steps by Ji Hao with a heavy punch.

Priest Mu was enraged. He dropped his mouth corners, turned around slowly with a bitter look. Ignoring Ao Bai, who had been yelling at him, he locked his fingers together and slowly pushed to Ji Hao.

As he changed his hand motions, a faintly sensible power of quietus and a thriving life-force was brewing. These two types of powers composed a perfect cycle, running over and over again while descending on Ji Hao in a mysterious way.

Ji Hao smiled. Back in Pan Heng world, he had seen the true face of Priest Mu's great Dao of quietus, and had gained a certain understanding about it. Facing this slow move launched by Priest Mu, he raised the Pan Gu sword and launched a sword strike, which was also slow.

The moment he moved, the world seemed to be dominated by his sword.

The natural powers in the entire heaven were boiled, agitated, and stimulated. Palaces, pavilions, archways, pools, and ponds, all buildings in the heaven glowed with dazzling lights. The lights condensed into sharp swords, reaching to the higher sky.

The natural powers in the heaven turned cold and fierce while condensing into sharp shiny blades that lunged slowly along with Ji Hao's Pan Gu sword. Beams of sword light locked on Priest Mu while a boundless intent of killing spread in the air. In this very moment, no room in the heaven was left for the other types of great Dao, as everything had become a sword. The one which wasn't a sword at the moment had become the enemy of the entire heaven.

"Yu Yu's Dao of sword...Still brutal, so unreasonable!" Ao Bai drew back hurriedly with a pale face.

Qing Qiang snorted coldly, also stepping back quickly. She also angrily threw her longsword to the ground.

Neither her sword nor her achievement in sword art could compare with Ji Hao's. Therefore, the proud Qing Qiang had decided that she would never touch any sword again.

Priest Hua turned back in shock. He moved his ten fingers quickly and gently like the petals of a blooming flower while casting a spell in a low voice. Waves of colorful light rolled around him, but he failed to cast any magic.

Because of Ji Hao's sword art, because Ji Hao was a divine emperor, the entire heaven had become a sword realm. Except for the power of sword, no other power was allowed to exist in the heaven now. Priest Hua was a saint indeed, and he had the power to even reverse the Dao of nature. But at this moment, he was actually suppressed by Ji Hao, that he couldn't even cast a magic.

Deafening clanks echoed through the heaven. In midair, beams of sword light were shaking and buzzing, showing their sharpness and powerfulness to all living beings there.

Along with a series of sizzling noise, Priest Mu's body was cut open by invisible swords. Tens of bone-deep, thin wounds appeared on his body. As a cyan-colored light flashed across his body, the wounds healed immediately. But right in the following moment, ten times more wounds were left on him.

Ji Hao launched his strongest move ever since he became Priest Yu Yu's disciple. He melted all his understanding about Yu Yu's Dao of sword and what he learned from the other types of Dao, all into this move.

More importantly, he combined the five moves he learned from the mysterious man with this sword move. Because of the

combination of the five moves, the power of the Pan Gu axe, which had merged perfectly with the Pan Gu sword, was activated slightly.

Countless beams of sword light merged into the Pan Gu sword. Faintly, layers of blur images of palaces, pavilions, and divine halls emerged on the dark sword, as if the entire heaven was put into the sword to allow Ji Hao to perform this powerful move by wielding the sword.

Priest Mu's never-changing bitter face finally began twitching intensely, as he was seriously shocked by this sword move of Ji Hao.

To a certain degree, this sword move managed to explain the essence of Yu Yu's Dao of sword. Yu Yu had countless disciples, and some of them were quite talented sword artists. However, as Priest Mu clearly understood that Ji Hao's achievement on Yu Yu's Dao of sword had gone way beyond his brothers and sisters. By now, Ji Hao could even be counted as the only successor of Yu Yu's Dao of sword!

Po and Gui Ling were powerful indeed, and their cultivations were at a way higher level than Ji Hao's. But, in terms of sword art, they were far weaker than him!

"Yu Yu my friend, how lucky you are!" Priest Mu slowly pushed his palms forward while saying blandly, "Ji Hao, today, I will inevitably do something against nature. You, as a divine emperor, shall allow yourself to fall!"

Faintly, a small world emerged between Priest Mu's palms. In the tiny world were two linden trees, one withering and one thriving; one lived while the other died. A strong power of quietus erupted from this tiny world, forming a formidable swirl that seemed to swallow Ji Hao and the sharp sword intent which had filled up the heaven.

Ji Hao's eyes glistened with a frosty light while he opened his

erect eye, which dazzled coldly. Abruptly, he laughed.

"Priest Mu, I see you!" Ji Hao said something that confused Ao Bai, Qing Qiang, and Zhu Rong, but made the expressions of Donggong and Ximu change in shock. "I saw through your move...You're not here. So, I'll cut you!"

Priest Hua and Priest Mu' faces twisted simultaneously. Their eyes suddenly released a blinding light that gathered on Ji Hao's body.

Ji Hao's sword was swung down heavily. The Pan Gu sword pierced into the tiny world between Priest Mu's palms and cut it open as strongly as how Saint Pan Gu created Pan Gu world. The two linden trees fell apart, and the power of quietus released from the tiny world was crushed. The Pan Gu sword then penetrated Priest Mu's palm, which glowed with a green light, and sank deeply into his chest.

Bit by bit, the Pan Gu sword went deeper into Priest Mu's body, causing a scratching noise. Priest Mu's body was stronger than Ji Hao imagined, that even with the sharp Pan Gu sword and his current strength, he still needed to put forth all strength to penetrate Priest Mu's shiny, green, crystal-like body.

"With your power, your cultivation, how can you possibly see me?" Priest Mu looked at Ji Hao with a grim face.

Ji Hao looked back at Priest Mu with his teeth clenched, then sneered while pushing the sword forward with all his strength. "Elder, you're powerful, but so was Spirit Wa. I couldn't see the edge of Priest Wa's power, but this time on seeing you, I discovered that you are indeed more powerful than me by only about ten folds."

"With the help of the heaven, I believe that I can kill you, despite the power difference between us."

"You're not Priest Mu. You are just...A shade of a tree!" continued

Ji Hao, "I will just kill you."

"I will find you!" Priest Mu stared at Ji Hao and said coldly.

"Go find my Shifu if you have the guts. Are you really shameless enough to bully me? I'm a child!" Ji Hao gave a bright grin.

As Ji Hao prepared to continue this conversation with Priest Mu, all of a sudden, Priest Mu and Priest Hua had blood bursting from their eyes, mouth, noses and ears. Together, they turned to the west and roared out loud.

# *Chapter 1714: The Power of Six-billion, Four-Hundred and Eighty years*

Ignoring Priest Mu and Priest Hua's abnormal blood-shedding, Ji Hao continued pushing the Pan Gu sword stably into Priest Mu's body. The sword realm, which was generated from the entire heaven, was added to the Pan Gu sword to brutally destroy Priest Mu's body and tear apart the Dao inside him.

Just then, Ji Hao 'saw' Priest Mu. Through the body of this Priest Mu in front of him, through the measureless distance, he saw the real Priest Mu in an indescribable place, in a state of quietus!

That was the real Priest Mu, hiding in a secret place, sinking in an unspeakable state, sealing himself with his measureless power and mysterious great Dao. He was like a cicada pupa which was buried deep underground, waiting for the autumn wind to blow, waiting to get out of the shell and then shake the world with its shrill voice, rise straight into the sky to stay high above the mortal world and look down on the masses.

That was such a mysterious, inexplicable state. The real Priest Mu was sinking in an empty, quiet, and spiritual state, and this Priest Mu in front of Ji Hao had cut off all connections with the real Priest Mu.

The one standing in front of Ji Hao wasn't the real Priest Mu, and why couldn't Ji Hao kill him? Too many incidences had happened between the two. Ji Hao had every reason to kill this Priest Mu, with no regrets. In the future, if the real Priest Mu showed up to accuse Ji Hao of killing this fake Priest Mu, Ji Hao wouldn't be afraid, because of the powerful sect behind him.

Suddenly, Priest Mu raised both hands and gripped the Pan Gu sword, widely opening his eyes as he stared at Ji Hao and shouted out loud, "Ji Hao, I never thought that you have actually reached such a high level of power. Since you have seen the real me...I

forgive you for what happened in the past. I can even allow you to offend me in the future for three more times. I, the real Priest Mu, will spare your life for three more times. "

Standing beside Priest Mu, Priest Hua had also been vomiting blood. "Ji Hao," he said loudly, "I will do the same. In the future, no matter what you may do, I will forgive you for three times...As long as you let us go today."

Ji Hao was surprised, and so were Donggong and Ximu. They hurriedly opened their eyes and turned to the west. At first glance, they clearly failed to see anything unusual with their eye powers. Donggong took out an entirely golden and shining mirror, which was wrapped in strands of purple mist, then spread a stream of spirit power onto the heavy, quaint mirror.

"Hao Tian mirror, open!" Hearing Donggong's resonant voice, the mirror released a golden light, then began showing what was happening in the peaceful world in the west.

As the images in the mirror flashed slightly, a giant black hand slapped over and generated a thunderous buzzing noise. The mirror was vibrated slightly. A tremor went through Donggong's body, which made him stagger back for two steps, and only then he finally steadied his body.

"Saints?" Exclaimed Donggong and Ximu, "...Evil saints?"

With confusion, Ao Bai glanced at Priest Mu. Abruptly, he grinned and said to Ji Hao, "Ji Hao, ignore this old guy. He attempted to interfere in divine affairs..."

Ao Bai blinked and continued with no good intent, "You just kill him. For any possible consequences, the dragon-kind will shoulder it for you."

Ao Bai had wishful thinking. Through this battle that happened between Ji Hao and Priest Mu, he suddenly realized that Ji Hao had reached such a high power level that it even astonished

himself. Ao Bai now understood that even by joining hands with Qing Qiang, he couldn't possibly defeat Ji Hao.

Since Ji Hao was now an invincible being, Ao Bai decided to encourage him to sow as many seeds of hatred between Priest Mu and himself as possible. In this way, Ji Hao could be forced to ally with the dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind, which would be a good thing. Five divine emperors now existed in the heaven. If Ji Hao allied with him and Qing Qiang, Zhu Rong would naturally join their club. Thus, the four of them would be able to do anything they want in the heaven, won't they?

As long as they had the heaven under their control, nothing would matter to Ao Bai anymore. Not even 'evil saints' and the things happening to Priest Hua and Priest Mu' dojo right now would have a thing to do with him.

As Pan Gu saints, Priest Hua and Priest Mu figured out Ao Bai's evil plan the moment he said those words. Without even glancing back, Priest Mu said to Ao Bai in a scarily deep and bland tone, "Ao Bai, I will wipe out ninety-percent of your dragon-kind because of what you just said."

Ao Bai slightly quivered. He leaped up, pointed at Priest Mu, and prepared to shout something out. But somehow, he suddenly sensed an extreme horror from something disastrously dangerous. He trembled and tried, but failed to say out the words he prepared.

Qing Qiang's beautiful face paled as well. She swiftly glanced at Ao Bai, then silently took two steps backward. The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind were allies, but were also enemies, if the dragon-kind were truly destroyed by ninety percent...To be honest, Qing Qiang now had a complicated feeling. But somehow, for an unknown reason, she secretly felt delighted.

"Three times?" Ji Hao knitted his brows and said with a deep voice, "Not enough!"

Before Priest Mu and Priest Hua responded, Ji Hao continued

with a strong tone, "I was going to kill you right here today, because you have truly been pushing things too far these years...Not to mention the fact that it's your place which now has a problem, right? To let you go, I need more than your unconvincing promises."

Without hesitating, Priest Mu took out a cyan-colored, fist-sized piece of crystal, which had a green light flowing in it. With a strangely calm tone, he said, "This is the tree heart of mine. It has been through the infinite natural trial, and contains an inexhaustible life-force. I was going to give it to a disciple of mine to allow him or her to compete with Priest Xuandu, Priest Guangcheng, and Priest Po, but I haven't decided which disciple can have it yet."

Raising his head, Priest Mu continued, "Ji Hao, you have an impressive understanding towards the Dao of nature, but your cultivation is limited by time. You are strong enough, yet your power is your shortage. This tree heart contains the power of a saint, earned through six-billion, four-hundred and eighty years of cultivation. When you absorb this, you will become the most powerful one among my friend Yu Yu's disciples!"

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched.

'The power of a saint, earned through six-billion, four-hundred and eighty years of cultivation'? Which meant, what contained in this tree heart was Priest Mu's pure power, pure saint-level power! Without a doubt, saints' powers were much greater than the powers of lower level cultivators in quality! To grow the amount of power contained in the tree heart, an average cultivator would have to cultivator severely for thousands of billions of years!

Thousands of billions of years...

Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao looked at Priest Mu and said, "You will not trouble me for this in the future. I am allowed to offend you, the real you, for three times in the future, and you will forgive

me. If you agree, I'll let you go now!"

Priest Mu didn't say a word, but sent the tree heart into Ji Hao's chest.

Ji Hao pulled the Pan Gu sword back. Immediately, Priest Mu and Priest Hua burst into shrill shouts and transformed into two streams of light, flying westward.

"Let's go take a look...to find out who they are!" Donggong and Ximu remained silent for a while, then said together.

# Chapter 1715: The Casualties Are Heavy

"Let's go take a look!"

Seeing Priest Hua and Priest Mu leave in such a hurry, Donggong and Ximu hurriedly followed up. Ji Hao grabbed Mr. Crow, who had shifted back to his crow shape, stood on his head, and then transformed into a streak of light westward.

Billions of years... Contained in the tree heart which was thrown into Ji Hao's chest by Priest Mu was the power attained by a saint through billions of years of cultivation. The power contained in the tree heart was not only vast in quantity, it was also stunningly pure. A saint's power was far purer than the powers of ordinary cultivators, not to mention the mysterious and measureless Dao contained in it.

The tree heart merged into Ji Hao's body and immediately began melting like the ice under sunshine. Bit by bit, strong strands of green mist flew into Ji Hao's embryo of Dao, smoothly merging into one with the embryo of Dao. Ji Hao's embryo of Dao became clearer and clearer, that within a few breaths, its eyes, nose and mouth had turned distinct.

Ji Hao's power was upgrading speedily. Within a couple of breaths, all his power had been purified. Being nourished by the green mist, every single cell of his body had turned softer but stronger, glowing while giving off a mysterious feeling.

Ji Hao didn't activate the golden bridge, but instead, he had been flying at a light speed with his own power.

He felt nothing before he moved, but once he made his first move, he felt an unprecedentedly strong power erupting from his body, pushing his body forward at a scarily high speed, that even his spirit power couldn't catch up easily.

Swish!

Ji Hao's eyes were dazzled. Hurriedly restraining his power, he looked back — He saw a perfectly round hole in the top area of each of the three-thousand and eight-hundred mountains behind him. Before he felt a thing, he had already punctured whole three-thousand and eight-hundred towering mountains because of his suddenly soared speed.

"Priest Mu...Every part of his body is a treasure!" Halting with a surprise for a short while, Ji Hao shook his head and sighed sincerely. A mere tree heart of Priest Mu managed to bring Ji Hao's power to a whole new level. As Ji Hao said, every part of Priest Mu's body was a treasure.

Inside his body, the tree heart had still been releasing the pure and great power to merge into his embryo of Dao. Sensing the improvement of his body, Ji Hao couldn't help but sigh again.

Through his own severe cultivation, Ji Hao might need to spend thousands of billions of years to attain such a huge amount of saint-level power. Terrifying! Those powerful beings who started their cultivations ever since the beginning of Pan Gu time were seriously terrifying.

Till now, Ji Hao hadn't completed his first century of cultivation...A saint's power earned through billions of years...!

Roaring towards the sky, Ji Hao activated the golden bridge. The golden bridge transformed into a beam of light and disappeared without a trace after one single flash. The golden bridge was able to move through the space, between worlds, and help Ji Hao to control his power, to sense the change of surrounding space. With the golden bridge's help, this time, Ji Hao didn't cause any damage to the natural environment, but flew stably and swiftly towards the west.

Swoosh!

The golden bridge carried Ji Hao and flashed across Donggong and Ximu, leaving them far behind.

Donggong and Ximu paused with surprise, then glanced at each other. In a short while, they shook their heads and said, "The golden bridge...A saint's power earned through billions of years... Not to mention his fighting capacity, in the future, when he wants to run, no one in Pan Gu world will be able to catch him except the one or two."

Powering the golden bridge with the saint's power, Ji Hao had been teleporting himself forward at an unimaginable speed. Tens of millions of miles, hundreds of millions of miles, billions of miles, tens of billions of miles within a moment... the golden bridge moved faster and faster. At last, in a beautiful, well-illuminated area, Ji Hao caught up with Priest Hua and Priest Mu, and arrived at the entrance of the peaceful world almost at the same time as them.

Clouds of dark smoke had been rising from a ten-thousand-miles-wide hole in the air. Through this giant hole, Ji Hao saw a splendidly glowing quiet dojo, with linden trees and lotuses everywhere.

Ten purely dark figures floated above the dojo, laughing and roaring wildly.

Among them, one carried a large bag in the left hand, picking up the crystal and jade mountains with his right hand and throwing into the bag. One was excitedly and carefully taking down the buildings, which were built from natural treasures, then putting every piece into his sleeves, even including every brick and tile. He suppressed the spirit of the treasure inside each building, then occupied all treasures with extra cautiousness.

Some of them were laughing happily while chasing human-shaped powerful herbs all over the peaceful world. They picked the spirit herbs up from the ground, holding in their hands and observing excitedly. Occasionally, they would throw some spirit herbs directly into their mouths to chew.

When Ji Hao arrived, he saw quite a few acquaintances roaring thunderously, leading tens of thousands of disciples rising into the sky and marching towards those dark figures in a formidable way.

Thunderbolts descended like a rain, while the strong gale blew. The powerful magic created by Priest Hua and Priest Mu were cast one after another, generating fierce power waves while sweeping across the entire area. Three dark figures showed up in their way and neutralized all their magic by simply wielding a hand. Then, the dark figures swung their weapons and crushed all tens of thousands of disciples, leaving traces of souls to be absorbed by Pan Yu brain.

Right in the sky above the beautiful peaceful world, Priest Hua and Priest Mu's disciples were slaughtered wave after wave. Numerous high-level cultivators were torn apart and flattened, their bones and limbs falling from the sky. The earth was even dyed red by their blood.

The clear lotus pond had already turned crimson, while the linden trees were covered in blood. The brightly glowing pagodas were stained with blood as well. Suddenly, this peaceful world created by Priest Hua and Priest Mu started looking like hell.

"You...die!" Priest Mu and Priest Hua burst into raging roars, their eyes burning with rage. While roaring, they transformed into two dazzling beams of light and flew to the core area of the peaceful world.

Ji Hao cautiously remained standing by the entrance of the peaceful world, not daring to go in. He watched countless priests that he once fought, die one after another. Within a couple of breaths, right before Ji Hao's eyes, at least a million disciples of Priest Mu and Priest Hua were erased from this world.

Over a million disciples!

Even Ji Hao had his heart twitched — Priest Hua and Priest Mu would lose their minds, wouldn't they?

# Chapter 1716: All Clones Merging Back

From a distance, Ji Hao watched more and more priests die.

The death of over a million disciples would drive Priest Mu and Priest Hua crazy, wouldn't it?

Western Wasteland people were strong and brave warriors, but the people who were able to understand the great Dao of nature were awfully rare in this area. Priest Mu and Priest Hua spent measureless time and great efforts to recruit, even tricking or luring all these disciples into the sect.

But today, within such a short span of time, over a million of them were slaughtered. Even though most of them were brought into the sect in the recent century, the casualty was still too high to accept.

Following the swooshing noise, a black hurricane was raised in the peaceful world. Streaks of black flames coiled around the hurricane. Because of the fire, the hurricane grew even stronger, and because of the hurricane, the fire burned even more ragingly. A dense black smoke spread quickly. One of the ten Pan Gu saints must have lost control of the intent of killing in his heart and cast a disastrous magic in here.

Tens of thousands of buildings were swallowed by the black fire instantly. Layers of light shields quaked in the fire. Countless priests, who had put up a desperate struggle with defensive formations, screamed out loud shrilly. They watched the powerful formations being broken by the black fire. The dark flames interwove with the black smoke, being blown in all directions by the dark hurricane, shrouding those buildings.

The plants and the buildings remained perfectly unharmed, but the priests in the buildings struggled and hollered in the black fire. Their skins and muscles were incinerated, bones were burned into smoke, then the dark hurricane swirled away their souls, sending

them into Pan Yu's brain which was held in Yu Huo's hands.

In no time, a hundred thousand more priests were killed right on the spot. Yu Huo, Yu Fen and Yu Ji roared towards the sky, then began digging through the peaceful world even more violently for treasures.

Dark hands expanded to thousand-miles-long, fingers clenching towards the ground. Followed the movements of these giant hands, a thick layer of divine soil mixed with jade and pearls was pulled up from the ground, along with the linden woods and all rare kinds of plants. Enormous black bags floated in the air. The divine soil and the plants rooted in it were thrown into the bags piece by piece, while Yu Huo and the other Pan Gu saints sighed in satisfaction.

From this peaceful world, they had collected enough resources to even restore seventy to eighty percent of the life-force of the medium three layers of continents back in Pan Yu world. With these resources, the life-force of the mediums three Pan Yu continents could be sustained for over ten million years.

It was such a rich harvest! And, this was merely a small dojo founded by Priest Hua and Priest Mu. Outside, the vast Pan Gu world was waiting for them to conquer, and the countless great worlds around Pan Gu world!

Terrific! This was just terrific!

The rich harvest had their heads turned. Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints laughed wildly while slaughtering waves after waves of priests who marched towards them, but ignored Priest Mu and Priest Hua, who had transformed into two beams of light and flashed into the peaceful world.

While Ji Hao was watching by the entrance, Donggong and Ximu arrived through space and stood by his side. Seeing the rolling dark clouds and black flames in the peaceful world, Ximu chuckled, "Old tree, old flower, you've suffered a serious loss this time, haven't

you? Oi, will they ask for our help? What do you think? If they do ask, shall we help? Shall we not?"

Donggong calmly glanced at the peaceful world, which was in such a mess, and responded slowly, "Back then, when we asked for their help, did they do a thing? They didn't help us. So today...we won't help them either, unless they offer fifty percent of all they have. They shall eat their own bitter fruit, because this is how the Dao of nature works, how the causes and effects work!"

Ji Hao grinned and mildly gave a reply, "I think I am destined to have Priest Mu's tree hearts. Therefore, without thirty to fifty tree hearts as my payback, I'm afraid that I don't have the time to help him!"

Hearing him, Donggong and Ximu laughed out loud.

One tree heart contained the saint's power for billions of years. Thirty to fifty tree hearts? Did Priest Mu even have so many of them? This time, Priest Mu prepared one tree heart because he wanted to cultivate a disciple with it, so that this disciple of his would be able to compete with Po and Gui Ling. No one knew how long Priest Mu took to make up his mind for this.

But, getting thirty to fifty tree hearts from him? That wasn't so likely to happen.

Donggong activated the Haotian mirror again. The mirror emitted a golden light that shone upon the peaceful world. Lights and shadows flashed across the mirror, then the two beams of light transformed from Priest Hua and Priest Mu were shown in it.

They flew into the core area of the peaceful world, which had a towering mountain shaped like five enormous fingers that were magically locked together. Standing upon the middle finger peak was a thirty-six-story octagonal pagoda.

On top of the pagoda, a bead had been sparkling, emitting waves of gentle and clear light, illuminating the entire area and shielding

the one-hundred and twenty-thousand miles wide space in the surroundings. No matter how wildly Yu Huo and the other Pan Yu saints had been trampling upon the peaceful world, this core area remained quiet.

Strangely, this magical pagoda was located on such a towering peak, and right in the center of the peaceful world, but none of the ten Pan Yu saints had noticed it. With an indescribable power, the pagoda confused the ten Pan Yu giants. Therefore, despite its existence, no one but Priest Mu and Priest Hua would notice it.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua landed before the pagoda. Following deep and muffled voices, nearly a thousand priests slowly walked out of the pagoda. From each of them, a measureless power could be sensed. Solemnly, they bowed to Priest Mu and Priest Hua, then quietly stood by their side.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. These priests were even stronger than Dragon, Tiger, Lion, and Mammoth.

The world outside had nearly been turned upside down, but these priests stayed in the pagoda without making one move. These were clearly the true core disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu, weren't they? They were the real successors, the future of this sect.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua roared sonorously and pointed their fingers at the five-finger-like mountain. The mountain entirely rose into the sky, exposing a brightly shining hole underneath it. The hole seemed to be bottomlessly deep.

Through the Haotian mirror, Ji Hao, Donggong, and Ximu saw countless earth meridians meeting tens of thousands of miles deep down in the hole, in a vast underground space. The natural powers in this underground space were so rich that they had already condensed into a sticky liquid, even forming crystals.

Thirty-six-thousand clones of Priest Mu and thirty-six-thousand clones of Priest Hua sat quietly in this place with their legs crossed, silently absorbing the natural powers and perceiving the great Dao

of nature. They were motionless like corpses, but strong energy waves had been releasing from their entire bodies.

Priest Hua and Priest Mu had actually been keeping so many of their clones in the core area of the peaceful world!

Clearly, these were all linden seed clones and lotus seed clones. Back in the old days, Ji Hao had gained from clones like these.

"All clones merge back." With a gentle voice, Priest Mu cast a spell. Following his voice, all clones flew into the sky and merged into Priest Mu and Priest Hua' bodies.

# Chapter 1717: Intrude Into Heaven

As the clones merged back into Priest Mu and Priest Hua' bodies one after another, their wild-beast-like powers could be sensed from their bodies, rising into the sky from the center area of the peaceful world.

The overwhelming, boundless, tremendous, and immeasurable powers reached straight to the sky, quaked the natural stars, and spread towards all directions. Wherever their powers swept across, the dark hurricane, black clouds, and fire were all gone.

Yu Tu was swinging his blade down at a desperately resisting priest. But suddenly, the space before his face quaked and then a green finger thrust out, descending on his chest while being surrounded in faint streams of light, seeming to even destroy the world.

"Interesting!" Yu Tu grinned and turned his blade away from that poor priest who was covered in deep wounds. Next, along with sharp blade lights, he wielded his blade towards this green finger.

The blade light suddenly turned pure black, showing countless dark, twisted faces, which screamed shrilly and their voices echoed through the blade, shaking people' hearts. A power of death which could make anyone despair was released from the blade. That was Yu Tu's great Dao, the Dao of Death, the Dao of terror.

Differing from Yu Man's Dao of destruction, which had no other purpose but destroying everything in the universe, Yu Tu's Dao aimed at slaughtering all lives in the universe, putting all living beings to death, and letting all living creatures feel the greatest horror and deepest despair the moment they died.

The shining green finger was hazy like a shadow. Along with the power of quietus, it pointed towards Yu Tu's blade gently.

The greatest horror of slaughtering all lives collided straight

against the coldness of sending all livings beings in quietus. The space before Yu Tu collapsed into a thousand miles wide black hole. Along with a deafening scream, Yu Tu condensed his spirit power into extremely sharp blade lights, lunging towards Priest Mu at the level of soul.

Yu Tu used his spirit power and his Dao as a blade, attempting to tear apart Priest Mu's souls, then insert his Dao into Priest Mu's body to force him to admit his great Dao. He wanted to crush Priest Mu's Dao, to destroy it thoroughly, just like what he did to the other creatures he killed. He wanted to 'erase' Priest Mu.

Priest Mu's soul had become an independent empty world, with nothing but a withering linden tree weakly standing in the center. Yu Tu's blade lights fell from the sky like a rain of shooting stars, scattering in this lonely vast world.

In the following moment, Yu Tu vomited blood and staggered back for a series of step. Priest Mu's finger landed on his chest through space and created a hole on his heavy armor, then sank into his body for three inches.

Yu Tu let out eighteen mouthfuls of blood in a row. Every mouthful of blood meant the waste of his power attained through one million, two-hundred, and ninety-six-thousand years of cultivation. He shambled backward for over a hundred steps. Within a blink, a giant amount of his power was gone, all because of a slight finger move launched by Priest Mu. He was weakened slightly. He raised his head, his face darkened while gazing at the center of the peaceful world with a pair of sunken eyes.

The great Dao of slaughtering and the great Dao of quietus collided, but Yu Tu was in disadvantage, as his Dao was at a relatively lower level.

The purpose of the Dao of slaughtering was to destroy all lives in the universe, but Priest Mu's world of quietus was all empty. Yu Tu had no way to erase the 'emptiness'. Therefore, he fell into a

disadvantage at the level of Dao, and instantly suffered quite a loss.

As a dark beam of light flashed across his armor, the hole left by Priest Mu disappeared. Yu Tu breathed deeply. From all directions, the great despair that countless Priests had before they died was absorbed by Yu Tu's body. Within a breath, his wasted power was restored by ninety percent.

Staring at the center of the peaceful world, Yu Tu laughed viciously, "Interesting. You aren't as weak as we thought you are." While speaking, Yu Tu threw Yu Huo a displeased glance. To be honest, he wasn't careful enough just now. Yu Huo provided the other Pan Yu saints with inaccurate information, based on which, Yu Tu thought that Priest Mu was just some weak being that he could crush with a finger.

After all, he earlier saw Priest Mu fall in a disadvantage in the battle against Ji Hao, and judging by the power he sensed from Ji Hao, the latter was too weak to be even mentioned.

Nevertheless, Priest Mu kept thirty-six-thousand clones in this peaceful world, and all these clones had been cultivating themselves severely in here. Plus, Priest Mu had cast the magic to merge with all his clones...Yu Tu wasn't prepared for this. He would never have dreamed that Priest Mu's true power was way beyond his imagination.

The moment Yu Tu suffered the strike from Priest Mu, the space before Yu Huo's face collapsed too. With the snow-white, flawless, shiny, white pagoda floating above his head, Priest Hua suddenly rushed out. He was expressionless, body wrapped in layers of sacred white light.

"Evil, how dare you take my disciples' primordial spirits?" Priest Hua raised a brightly glowing pestle with his left hand and launched a hundred and eight bashes.

Ji Hao even applauded for these one-hundred and eight strikes of Priest Hua. Normally, Priest Hua's fighting style was totally

random. But now, Priest Hua moved swiftly and skillfully, that every single movement of his seemed to explain a secret of the ever-changing nature, and every strike he launched was like ten-thousand flowers blooming together, leaving his enemy no time to react.

A beautiful Dao was demonstrated by these one-hundred and eight strikes launched by Priest Hua. Seeing him raise the weapon to hit his enemy, Ji Hao felt like watching the sun and moon rising and falling, the tide flowing and ebbing, the flowers blooming and withering, the birds flying, the grasses growing; he felt that all natural beauties of the great Dao were hiding in this series of strike.

Ji Hao didn't think he could dodge this series of strikes from Priest Hua, and neither could Yu Huo. He was best at controlling souls, but his fighting capacity was the weakest among the ten Pan Yu saints. He didn't expect Priest Hua to choose him as the first target.

One-hundred and eight strikes all landed on his body.

His twelve pre-world treasures emitted dazzling lights to defend their owner, but ended up being shattered by Priest Hua. Following the rumbling bone-cracking noises, Yu Huo had tens of bones broken. He loosened his fingers, and Priest Hua immediately seized Pan Yu's brain.

"Damn it!" Yu Ling and the other Pan Yu saints immediately growled out loud. Greedily, they reached out their hands simultaneously towards Pan Yu's brain.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes, abruptly turned around, and looked at the direction of the heaven.

He sensed a strong intent of killing from that direction. Through the sunlight which shone upon the entire world, he saw tens of billions of non-humankind warriors marching formidably to the heaven. Their battle formations covered the sky like dark clouds,

even shading a small half of Midland.

# *Chapter 1718: The God of Wind, the God of Rain*

Priest Mu's tree heart was halfway absorbed by Ji Hao already. Half of the power contained in the tree heart surged into the golden bridge and generated a thunderous bang. The space before Ji Hao's face rippled strongly while a tens of thousands of meters long streak of golden light flashed across dazzlingly and reached directly to the gate of the heaven from under his foot.

"Elders, you first!" Even Ji Hao was startled by the suddenly expanded golden bridge. This magnificent golden rainbow was seriously astonishing.

Also with surprise, Donggong and Ximu glanced at the golden bridge. Ximu even punched straight on Ji Hao's chest and laughed out loud, "Great treasure! It's a shame though that I can't afford to offend your Shifu. Otherwise, I'd certainly snatch it from you and play for a couple of days!"

Raising her eyebrows, Ximu glimpsed at her floor-length dress a bit impatiently, then clenched her fingers and lifted its edge to walk onto the golden bridge with giant steps. As a golden beam of light flashed through her body, she was directly teleported to the other end of the bridge, sent to before the gate of the heaven.

"Nice treasure!" Brushing his beard, Donggong carefully observed the beautiful marks of Dao on the golden bridge and praised again, then walked onto the bridge also with large steps. The golden light flashed again and sent him to the heaven as well.

Ji Hao was amazed by the golden bridge too. As he knew, he needed to be strong enough to release the golden bridge's true power. With half of the saint's power contained in the tree heart, the golden bridge now allowed him to reach every corner of Pan Gu motherland instantly. But, what if he improved this power by ten folds, or even hundred folds?

Traveling through the space, around the universe...Ji Hao nodded as he stepped onto the golden bridge. As the space around him moved slightly, he was sent back to the gate of the heaven. After that, the golden bridge dimmed its light, flashing back into his spiritual space.

"Whoo-hah!"

Muffled roars echoed like thunder. From Liang Zhu City, three-thousand hundred-miles-squared flying forts had been approaching the heaven. Behind the flying forts were one-hundred and twenty-thousand floating mountains and a hundred cities of great calamity with spread metal petals, drifting slowly in the air. Tens of millions of non-humankind warriors composed thick square arrays of ten-thousand-men, marching towards the heaven.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and clearly saw human warriors retreating in panic and fear wherever this enormous non-humankind army passed. They desperately sent out messengers in all directions to seek help.

He also saw large groups of Chu Wu Clan people who had turned into devils flying above Pu Ban City, chatting and laughing. Elite troops from Gong Sun Family and Chu Wu Clan were well prepared; some large family leaders whose bodies were wrapped in dark mists surrounded Emperor Xun, raising their heads and looking at the heaven from time to time.

In Pu Ban City, not many but thousands of clans had been gathering armies, preparing for the war. The armories in Pu Ban City were opened; countless weapons and giant amounts of supplies were carried out. Maguspriests cast spells and drove enormous spirit turtles into the city, then loaded all supplies on their backs.

When the formidable non-humankind army flew across the sky of Pu Ban City, Emperor Xun excitedly welcomed them with the group of family leaders.

Yu Huo's clone, who had occupied Yemo Tian's body, stood on a flying fort with Master Spirit-slaughter, amicably greeting Emperor Xun and those leaders. They started a short conversation, then the army of the alliance of human clans rose into the air and landed on the flying forts of the non-humankind. They formed an alliance, marching to the sky in an unstoppable way.

Ao Bai and Qing Qiang walked out of the gate of the heaven, looking down. When they saw the quickly approaching non-humankind army, they frowned simultaneously.

"Elder Ao Bai," Ji Hao smiled and nodded to Ao Bai, then said, "No, Emperor Ao Bai, this is your chance to earn natural rewards power. If you can wipe out these non-humankind beings, the measureless natural rewards power will be earned, and you will owe the world nothing."

Ao Bai threw a threatening glance at Ji Hao, then clicked his tongue, angrily looking at the non-humankind army down below. With a dark face, he responded coldly, "The main military forces of the dragon-kind and phoenix-kind needs at least half month to get here, even with the teleporting formations were built these years."

Turning around and looking at the approaching enemies, Ao Bai spread his hands and continued helplessly, "Before that, Qing Qiang and I only have the small troops we brought here earlier."

Qing Qiang didn't say a word but proudly nodded, scornfully glancing at the non-humankind army. She seemed to not want to say anything because these non-humankind beings weren't worth her words. But looking at Donggong and Ximu, she reluctantly gave a reply, "If the main force of our phoenix-kind were here, we could crush these monsters very easily. But before half a month, we can't make it."

Donggong and Ximu both spread their hands in helplessness while turning to the group of cultivators who had been walking out of the heaven. They had made their point clear — Donggong

only had hundreds of male cultivators under his command, while Ximu had nearly a thousand female cultivators around her. These cultivators were keeping some rare legendary creatures as pets, but one shouldn't count on the thousands of pets to fight.

These cultivators were powerful indeed, but with the small number, facing billions of enemies... Even Ji Hao felt that forcing these cultivators to the battleground would be a sin.

"Let's figure out a way to hold them off for at least half a month, shall we?" Ji Hao knitted his brows.

From mid-air, a sharp whirlwind blew down, followed by a drizzle. Next, Feng Xing and Yu Mu split the crowd and walked to Ji Hao's side. Yu Mu grinned, then slapped his belly and laughed, "We dare not to face so many non-humankind monsters on the frontline, but if we want to cause them some troubles...We are in the heaven, with the powers of nature. Causing them troubles would be the easiest thing to do now."

Ji Hao raised his brows, but before he said a word, Feng Xing had already waved a hand. Following Feng Xing's move, a strong gale descended slowly.

The heavy and powerful gale extended for billions of miles. It was designed to separate the mortal world from the heaven, but at the moment, as the new God of Wind, Feng Xing sent it down to the non-humankind army layer by layer like mountains.

Yu Mu smiled and pressed down both hands. Instantly, a drizzle began falling all over the Pan Gu Motherland.

The gentle drizzle covered the whole world. What had been landing on Pan Gu world creatures were ordinary raindrops, but the raindrops that fell onto the non-humankind army each contained a tiny yet sharp ice crystal. Every drop of rain fell on the bodies of non-humankind beings was bone-piercingly cold, and the coldness drilled straight into their internal organs and souls.

# Chapter 1719: Endless Rain

The wind was heavy as mountains, falling straight on the enemies' heads.

The non-humankind army, which had been marching up aggressively, was instantly slowed down. The moving speeds of flying forts, flying mountains, and the cities of great calamity, which were even huger in size, dropped obviously.

The large objects suffered a stronger resistance force. Dazzling spell symbols sparkled on the surfaces of all flying forts and mountains as the flying formations inside these forts and mountains were all fully activated. Lightning bolts burst out of the forts and mountains and merged together, slowly wriggling around like electric snakes.

The cities of great calamities had unfolded all their metal petals like blooming flowers, but those metal petals brought the cities greater pressures. The extremely thin metal petals glowed with a dim light, then the dark gale struck heavily on these large, fragile-looking metal petals visibly, and caused thunderous bangs.

Standing on the wall of a flying fort, Yu Huo's clone shook his head scornfully. He raised his head and glanced at the tiny colorful light spot high up in the sky. That was the light emitted from the front gate of the heaven.

"Are they really trying to stop us from conquering Pan Gu world with these small tricks?" Yu Huo's clone chuckled, "Keep moving...Don't save crystals. Fully activate all flying formations...Whatever we may consume, we will eventually earn it back!"

Following his order, the flying formations in every city of calamity, flying fort, and mountain began operating at full-speed. Rumbling noises could be heard from these enormous war machines while a hazy glow emerged from the air, because the

great forcefield twisted the air in a strange way.

The gale pressed down. These giant scale war machines swayed slightly, split the gale, and kept moving upwards.

"Your Majesty, they can't take the gale." Master Spirit-slaughter stood by the edge of the wall and leaned his head forward, glancing down, then frowningly shook his head to Yu Huo's clone.

With the powerful flying formations, those war machines managed to split the wind and kept moving with difficulty. But, following closely behind the flying mountains and forts, the non-humankind warriors were nearly blown away.

The Yu Clan nobles who were flying in the air with their own powers, and were protected by all kinds of treasures, managed to steady their bodies in the gale, as their treasures released differently colored light and split the gale for them. But, the Jia Clan warriors who were treading on metal plates weren't doing so well. Their metal plates had been releasing dazzling electric currents. Following the loud sizzling noise, these underpowered metal plates rocked violently, seeming about to fall.

Suddenly, the descending gale was disordered. It was no longer heavy as mountains, but instead, it split up into differently sized air streams, weak or strong. Bursting disorderedly in all directions, it roared into the non-humankind army like dark flying snakes.

The flying forts and mountains had been moving upwards at their highest speed, but as the disordered waves of wind blew, a series of muffled thuds could be heard. Following the noise, about ten flying mountains began spinning in the air, then accidentally bumped into the nearby flying forts.

The ten-miles-wide flying mountains bumped and crashed into the hundred-miles-squared flying forts. Numerous people on the scene heard the squeaking noise from the flying forts, which were twisted. Some poor non-humankind warriors were squeezed into meat pies, as blood and rock pieces fell from the sky.

The perfectly ordered army was immediately disarrayed. The fierce winds gusted to the army from every direction, that once the strong gale blowing from the front was weakened, a stronger gust of wind attacked from the behind, making the non-humankind warriors run desperately. As they finally steadied their bodies, a massive wave of wind blew from all directions and sent them flying in the sky.

Howls and growls echoed through the sky while all heavily armored warriors flew in the sky, thudding into each other. The clanks of armors and weapons and the strange puffing noises caused when some warriors' weapons accidentally pierced into their comrades' bodies could be heard without an end, mixed with the hysterical swears made by them all.

Yu Huo's clone was dumbfounded slightly. As the ten saints attacked Priest Hua and Priest Mu' peaceful world, he gathered the army, and prepared to conquer the heaven of Pan Gu world. But, in order to conquer the heaven, his army at least needed to march to the gate of the heaven, right?

Based on the world-conquering experiences of Pan Yu world people, no heaven was as shameless as the heaven of Pan Gu world. The powerful beings from the other worlds, who could affect the circulation of the great Dao of nature, would imposingly and dignifiedly raise armies and form formations when they saw the expeditionary forces from Pan Yu world, then battle!

Nevertheless, no one from the heaven in Pan Gu world had shown his or her face so far. Instead, they sent down waves of strong wind and disarrayed the enemies' army. How could they? The non-humankind army could never arrive at the heaven if they kept being blown away by winds like these!

Before these non-humankind beings figured out a way to deal with the crazy winds, the drizzle which covered the entire Pan Gu world fell even more strongly.

In other areas, the drizzle was cool, refreshing, and nourishing. But falling on the non-humankind army, it was freezing and sticky. Once a drop of rain landed on a non-humankind warrior's body, he would never be able to get rid of it.

Glowing with a faint white light, the rainwater covered the bodies of non-humankind warriors and froze into a layer of ice. Then, the thin layer of ice grew thicker and thicker. Within a quarter of an hour, the ice had reached about an inch in thickness.

An indescribable cold power had been drilling into these warriors' bodies. It was an evil and fierce power. Except the Divine-Magus-level strong Jia Clan warriors, all the other non-humankind beings were paled by the cold power. They trembled, and couldn't even talk.

The Yu Clan nobles suffered the most. They were all magic masters, but their bodies were fragile. Within a quarter of an hour, nearly a half of all Yu Clan nobles on the scene fell unconscious because of the cold power. With deathly pasty faces, bodies wrapped in a thick layer of ice, they fell from the sky one after another.

They were high up in the air, that if they fell straight down to the ground, their bodies would shatter into pieces. To save them, countless Jia Clan warriors trod on shaking metal plates as they tried their best to catch these falling Yu Clan masters while trembling and sneezing. However, the winds had still been blowing violently, sending many Yu Clan nobles flying all over the sky. With a slight carelessness, those frozen Jia Clan warriors had to watch tens of thousands of Yu Clan nobles being blown down to the ground and shatter into thousands of bits.

# Chapter 1720: Giant Rock Falling From Sky

Yu Huo's clone looked at the disarrayed army with rage.

The formidable, unstoppable, and tremendous army was actually thrown into a mess by a wave of gales and a drizzle like a frozen piece of tofu. Seeing this, Yu Huo's clone even twisted his face.

Master Spirit-slaughter stood aside with a faint smile on his face, as if he was glad to see all of this happen. Snorting slightly, he said, "Like I said, physical bodies are burdens, but spirits exist eternally. My friend, perhaps you can consider letting your people give up their physical bodies. I'll perform the ceremony to turn you into my kind. What do you think?

Yu Huo's clone gave a dry laugh. What a joke? Giving up physical bodies? Becoming sky devils? Would that be a true transformation ceremony or a banquet? Yu Huo was sure that there was a ninety-nine percent chance of Master Spirit-slaughter devouring the souls of all non-humankind beings who gave up their physical bodies. In the remaining one percent chance, those non-humankind beings who were stupid enough to give up their physical bodies would become monsters.

Therefore, he didn't respond, but glanced aside.

Yemo Luoye, who was still under Yu Huo's secret control, smilingly took a few steps forward and stood on top of a statue on the wall. Raising her head, she looked at the sky while speaking in a mild and peaceful voice, "The controllers of the great Dao of Pan Gu world, don't you have dignity at all? Are these lowly, dirty little tricks all that you can do?"

Yemo Luoye wielded an exquisite golden staff in her hands, then chuckled with a soft voice, "Fight us like your ancestors did. Spread your formation and battle us like your ancient divine gods. We can make enough room for you to gather your forces and build your formations."

Ji Hao stood by the edge of the heaven as he looked down at the disarrayed non-humankind army, snorted coldly and then shouted out loud, "I don't know what were those ancient divine gods thinking. But, since the number of your warriors is larger than ours by at least a hundred folds, I won't fight you. I'm way smarter than that."

Turning around, Ji Hao's eyes suddenly shone.

From behind the gate of the heaven, behind the gathering divine troops, Ji Hao saw thousands of familiar faces. Those were Kua E, his brothers, and thousands of divine gods descendants, treading on colorful clouds. While flying towards Ji Hao, they had been thrusting all kinds of grilled meat and pouring all kinds of booze into their mouths, as if they hadn't eaten in years.

Ji Hao slapped himself on the head and then laughed.

Back when Gong Gong invaded the heaven, Kua E and the other divine gods' descendants were drugged and imprisoned by Gong Gong. Later on, Gong Gong fell, and Ji Hao became a new divine emperor, but small things never stopped happening since then. As a consequence, Ji Hao forgot about this group of ancient divine gods descendants. It was only until this time, when Spirit Wa prepared to give divine edicts and Ji Hao went back to Southern Wasteland for Zhu Rong, Donggong, Ximu, Aobai and Qing Qiang stayed in the heaven to clean the buildings which would belong to them once they ascended to the thrones, and found Kua E and his brothers in the basement of a divine palace. At the time, these poor divine god descendants had become skinny because of the starvation.

Not long ago, they were released, and by now, they were busy stuffing their stomachs with foods and booze. Their eyes even turned green, looking even scarier than the evil ghosts from hell.

"Kua E, long time no see...You...I'm sorry for what happened!" Ji Hao grinned as he greeted them.

The hundreds of meters tall Kua E squeezed an entire roast bull into his mouth and swallowed, then quickly waved his oily hand while nodding to Ji Hao and mumbling, "Emperor Ji Hao, we'll come to revere you when we're full...Phew! Finally, we have divine emperors in the heaven again. We brothers can eat now fill now! Eh, how much is our monthly allowance?"

Hearing him, the thousands of divine god descendants all fixed their sparkling eyes on Ji Hao.

The monthly allowance was a big issue which would decide their future life. These rule followers had truly been living a difficult life these years. But finally, the heaven had new owners, and they immediately decided to follow the leadership of Ji Hao, who was a rich, capable, and powerful divine emperor.

"You can have as much meat and booze as you want, and each month...depending on your body sizes, you may have about a million top-grade crystals and one-hundred-thousand jades as allowance." Ji Hao did a rough calculation, then generously set a scale of 'salary' for these big guys.

Thud!

Kua E dropped the meat and booze in his hands, strode across the battle formation composed from divine warriors and commanders in front of him, and rushed up to Ji Hao with giant steps. Staring straight at Ji Hao, he growled to ask, "Emperor Ji Hao, is that real? Can each of us get a million top-grade crystal and a hundred-thousand jades a month?"

Ji Hao straightened one hand and laughed, "Of course it's real. Will I swallow my own words in front of so many people? But, you should work now! Do you see those non-humankind monsters down there? Kick their asses!"

Kua E wiped his oily hand heavily on his leather skirt, then carefully made a high five with Ji Hao, settling the 'salary' offered by Ji Hao. Next, he leaned his head forward from the edge of the

heaven and glanced down, then burst into laughter.

"Hah, idiots. Attacking the heaven from down there in such a dense battle formation, are they trying to make us laugh?" Wielding his arm, Kua E turned back while his eyes glistened with a fierce light, fixed on the few tall buildings around the gate of the heaven.

"Ten-million-folds!" Ji Hao hurriedly shouted out loud. He closed his eyes, let the mill of Dao slowly rise from behind him. The Dao of creation flew across and spread a mysterious power of creation from around his body. Afterward, he suddenly waved a hand forward.

With the saint's power contained in the tree heart, whatever Ji Hao did now, the effect would be greater than before by ten-million-folds. Back in the sun world, he was able to create fist-sized steel blocks, and now, he could create tens of thousands of meters tall pure steel mountains.

The natural powers were swirled into the mill while Ji Hao continuously waving his hands. Following Ji Hao's moves, millions of miles wide towering steel mountains emerged from the air one after another. Watching this, the eyes of Kua E and his brothers dazzled in surprise, seeming even to burn.

"Hah, Emperor, you're actually strong enough to throw things down yourself." Kua E excitedly carried up a steel mountain.

"Haha!" Ji Hao didn't say a word but gave a laugh. Standing aside, Donggong and Ximu had been smilingly silently. Indeed, Ji Hao was strong enough to do that. But, as a divine emperor, he felt a bit too ashamed to throw mountains down from the heaven.

Thousands of divine god descendants roared thunderously as they expanded their bodies to thousands of meters tall, put forth their tremendous strength, and carried the steel mountains on their shoulders. While laughing, they walked to the edge of the heaven, aimed at the non-humankind army down below, and

threw the mountains down with all their strengths.

The swishing noises could be heard without an end as tens of thousands of steel mountains fell from the sky.

# Chapter 1721: Disturbed Magnetic Force

"Shameless, dirty, nasty!" The faces of Yemo Luoye and the other Yu Clan nobles twisted when they looked at the tens of thousands of small dark spots falling from the higher sky. The heaven was way too high. Therefore, the tens of thousands of steel mountains looked just like sesame in their eyes.

"Pure metal mountains, with a density higher than usual steel by a thousand folds!" A Xiu Clan craftsmen glanced at those mountains with three overlapping crystal slips, then immediately figured out the quality of the steel mountains. Tens of Xiu Clan masters quickly calculated in their minds to figure out how great the impact force would be when these mountains fell on this army. The moment they had the result, their faces paled immediately. Instinctively, they turned to the divine towers standing around the flying fort that they stood on.

"The towers can't hold those off!" A Xiu Clan master screamed hysterically, "We have already consumed too much energy to stabilize the flying forts and mountains in the disordered gales, and without enough energy, the divine towers for defense cannot stop those bloody metal mountains!"

"Land, land now. Give all energies to..." Screamed a Xiu Clan master, his arms wielding desperately.

"No!" The other Xiu Clan master leaped up, face covered in sweat. He interrupted the first Xiu Clan master and said, "Except the few newly arrived cities of great calamity, even all divine towers on the flying forts and mountains we have can't stop those metal mountains which are falling from such a high altitude!"

Gasping loudly for air, this Xiu Clan master hollered, "Move away! Move! Move! Now!"

Yemo Luoye was stunned, and so were Piji Nu and the other non-humankind leaders. These flying forts and mountains were so

gigantic, and the battle formation was a hundred thousand miles long. How was this enormous army supposed to dodge the falling steel mountains? Not to mention the crazy gusting winds from all directions. Within the wind, it was already difficult for the flying mountains and forts to steady themselves!

"Everyone, abandon the cities, forts, and mountains!" The eye corners of Yu Huo's clone twitched intensely. He glared at the heaven and sneered evilly, "It seems that the controllers of the great Do of Pan Gu world are not old school.

Before the gate of the heaven, Ji Hao had opened his erect eye and clearly saw the lips of Yu Huo's clone moving. He chuckled and said, "Old school? I'm not like those ancient divine emperors. They were over-confident, but I just want to take you out with the minimum cost."

Turning around, Ji Hao pointed his finger at the heaven and earth divine tower, which stood in the center of the heaven and served as the core of the entire heaven. The tower reached straight into the clouds. Following Ji Hao's moves, it quaked slightly. As a divine emperor, Ji Hao was now able to command everything in this world, control the sun and the stars, change seasons, start rain, winter, thunder, and lightning, make flowers bloom or wither... Simply speaking, all natural changes happening in this world were under the control of the heaven, and could happen upon a will of a divine emperor.

The changes of the flowing directions of the earth meridians in the Pan Gu Motherland, the emergence and disappearance of oceans, the rises of mountain ranges, the movements of rivers, could all be decided by simple word from a divine emperor.

At the moment, below the non-humankind army, all mountains in tens of millions of miles wide area suddenly waved like mud. The mountains sank into the ground one after another, while new mountains rose from the flat area.

Looking down from the sky, one could see this entire area changing quickly. Within a couple of breaths, without even making much of loud noises, thousands of natural marks of Dao that represented the magnetic force were formed in this area.

Under Ji Hao's will, tens of billions of earth meridians merged into this enormous divine formation. Following a muffled buzzing noise coming from underground, the entire non-humankind army was wrapped up in a mysterious five-colored light.

Mist-like, veil-like five-colored aurora descended from the sky and penetrated the space, the flying mountains, and forts, as well as the bodies of those non-humankind warriors who had been trying their best to steady themselves, then connecting with the great natural divine formation down on the ground.

Next, a formidable magnetic force was released from the ground, forming an enormous magnetic field that locked on the entire non-humankind army.

Suddenly, all flying forts and mountains, cities of great calamity and countless non-humankind warriors, which had been shaking in the gales, burst into shrill screams, suddenly sinking from the air hundreds of miles higher than the ground, then being uncontrollably dragged swiftly down to the ground by the magnetic force. Under the Jia Clan warriors' feet, the metal plates released dazzling fiery light while being affected by the horrible magnetic force and falling rapidly down from the sky. The flying formation inside each metal plate suffered a strong counterforce because of the magnetic force and ended up being broken. Blinding fiery light burst from the metal plates while clouds of black smoke rose.

Strong and muscular Jia Clan warriors fell from the sky while howling. They tried to steady their bodies, but their armors and weapons were all metal. The magnetic force coiled tightly on their armors and weapons, bringing them down like shooting stars.

Thunderous booms could be heard without an end, while the fiery light erupted from the flying forts and mountains as well. The flying formations set inside these flying forts and mountains exploded under the strong magnetic force, tearing apart countless Xiu Clan craftsmen who had been trying to fix them. The survivors fled desperately out of the engine rooms while screaming, their bodies covered in blood.

The gigantic flying forts and mountains slowly fell from the sky, letting out dense black smoke. Yu Huo's clone, Master Spirit-slaughter, and the other non-humankind leaders, especially the ones who followed the ten Pan Yu Saints here through the portal, had their expressions changed while uncontrollably growling out loud.

Under Ji Hao's control, the magnetic power had formed a giant colorful swirl, locking all non-humankind warriors in this area. They weren't allowed to control their bodies anymore, and their only choice was to let themselves fall at a terrifying speed.

What scared them even more were the tens of thousands of steel mountains roaring down from the higher sky. These steel mountains were also affected by the magnetic force, and had been falling faster and faster, more and more violently. Along with the deafening swishing noises, the steel mountains descended from the higher sky along with bright fiery light, soon reaching right above their heads.

"Full defense!" The eyes of Yu Huo's clone glowed in excitement as he shouted, "Defend! Hang on!"

Quite some non-humankind leaders had already cast secret magic, preparing to send themselves away from the danger zone. But, as they abruptly heard Yu Huo's clone, a dim dark light flashed across their eyes, then they screamed out madly and rushed straight to the falling steel mountains, as if they were possessed.

# Chapter 1722: Numerous Casualties

Thrown down by Kua E and his brothers from the heaven, the steel mountains which were heavy as small natural stars roared down at lightning speed. These steel mountains tore apart the air and brought up tens of thousands of miles long fiery lights, smashing down like tens of thousands of shooting stars.

More terrifyingly, the magnetic force had still been accelerating these steel mountains, such that a tens of miles thick layer of gale was gradually raised from underneath these mountains, quaking the space and generating a deafening noise. It squeezed the blood out of the bodies of some weak Xiu Clan craftsmen and non-humankind slaves.

This time, Yu Ji, Yu Feng, and the other seven Pan Yu saints invaded Pan Gu world, bringing some high-level non-humankind beings with them. Among all who followed the saints to Pan Gu world, five were 'crowns', including Blood Crown, seventeen were 'seals', who were a level lower than 'crowns', and thirty-nine were 'staffs', who were a level lower than 'seals'.

'Crowns', 'seals', 'staffs', these non-humankind beings were all as powerful as divine gods in Pan Gu world, that they each had numerous strong warriors under their commands, and a series of Yu Clan families following their leads. In Pan Yu world, they could decide a fate of any living being, or even any family, with a simple word, and each one of them had a certain number of conquered worlds under their control.

Even the weakest 'staff' had thousands of conquered worlds controlled in his hands. In those conquered worlds, these high-level non-humankind beings were the highest rulers, even more powerful than the original gods of those worlds.

Yu Huo's clone gave a resonant growl while casting a small mind-controlling magic. Under the effect of the magic, driven by their

pride, these 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' burst into raging roars as they rushed up into the sky. Their warriors followed right behind them.

They were the owners of tens of billions of worlds, conquerers of countless species; they controlled the lives of uncountable living beings...Pan Gu world was nothing but one of the countless worlds which they would conquer in the future. In their eyes, the fate of Pan Gu world was nothing different from the fates of all the worlds that they had conquered.

They were extraordinary, so powerful! When had they ever been pushed into such an embarrassing situation by 'weak barbarians'?

They now intended to frighten Ji Hao with true powers, to let the leaders of all barbarians in this world know that any living being who dared to go against the great Pan Yu world people would be erased from the universe. Is body would be cursed and its soul would perish; it would cease to exist for good.

Tens of thousands of non-humankind beings rose from the non-humankind army while releasing strong energy waves. Tens of thousands of pre-world treasures floated above their heads, each creating a suffocating pressure.

As the conquerors of millions of worlds, these power-holders from Pan Yu world were stunningly wealthy.

Seeing all those pre-world treasures, Ji Hao's eyes even turned green. Earlier, with a few spare pre-world spirit treasures, Spirit Wa largely improved the power of his mill of Dao and strengthened his Pan Gu body. If he devoured all pre-world treasures that belonged to these non-humankind beings, he might be able to directly reach a high level of his Pan Gu body cultivation!

"Very...fleshy!" In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man talked in an evil tone which was learned from Ji Hao. He had spent a lot of time with Ji Hao these years after all. His eyes shone with a bright blue light, fixed on those pre-world treasures through Ji

Hao's eyes. Suddenly, he shouted out loud with a rumbling voice, "Those small things can't stop them...Twist the space, change the Dao of nature, and crush them with the great Dao. Seal these treasures and make them suffer!"

"Look, this is... the plate of Pan Gu great Dao!" Following the mysterious man's voice, a hazy round silhouette emerged from behind him, quickly merging into Ji Hao's embryo of Dao.

Ji Hao suddenly remembered that back when he was a child, every time the mysterious man appeared in the spiritual space, he sat on a grey lusterless round plate with legs crossed. Later on, when Ji Hao remolded his sword for the first time, the mysterious man merged the hazy plate, which seemed to be condensed from airstreams, into the sword.

In a long period of time after that, the mysterious man had nothing left around him. But today, all of a sudden, a blurry, round silhouette emerged from behind him, and judging by its outline, it seemed to be the hazy round plate that Ji Hao used to see when he was a kid. Before, Ji Hao didn't know what the round plate was. But right now, as it had merged with his embryo of Dao, Ji Hao was stunned.

All types of great Dao of Pan Gu world were contained in the round plate. Aside from the main great Dao, the rare types of Dao could also be found. The powers of Dao wove together and merged into strands of bright glow, imprinted in Ji Hao's embryo of Dao.

Ji Hao felt like a tiny ant which was suddenly forced to swallow an elephant.

He felt stuffed, that he even wanted to throw up. His embryo of Dao had turned heavy like a giant iron ball; he even felt dizzy. He used to be able to control his spirit power as freely as controlling his own arms, but now, the spirit power had turned extremely heavy too. He felt like an ordinary human being who had stayed awake for nine days, that his eyelids seemed to be glued together.

No matter how hard he tried, he could not open his eyes.

Now wasn't the time to figure out the background story of the round plate. He raised his head with effort while his eyes shone with a dim, mysterious light. He pointed his finger slowly at the heaven and earth divine tower, which stood in the center of the heaven.

The space of Pan Gu world quaked slightly. Surrounding the bodies of all 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs', the space rippled weirdly. Pan Gu world was suddenly woken up from a deep sleep, bursting into earth-shaking roars like a giant who suddenly had nine-hundred and ninety-nine glowing-red searings pressed on his butt.

No Pan Gu world creature, not even an ant, sensed this sudden change of the great Dao. Even Donggong and Ximu only faintly felt that some abnormal ripples seemed to be stirred up from the world.

As tens of thousands of pre-world treasures were flying up to the heaven, the slight ripples were perfectly normal. Therefore, neither Donggong nor Ximu dug deep into this.

The tens of thousands of pre-world treasures paused in the air for a moment, because Pan Gu world had released a vast power of Dao that was enough to suppress their powers. At that moment, these treasures lost all their powers.

In the next moment, the tens of thousands of steel mountains fell on the bodies of all 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs', crushing them immediately and perishing their souls.

Following behind them, the tens of thousands of their warriors burst into shrill howls while being swirled away by the fierce gale which was brought up by the falling steel mountains. Within a blink of an eye, they were all gone.

The mountains kept falling, and landed in the non-humankind army.

The earth was quaking, with tens of thousands of black streaks of flame rising, slowly spreading in the air and forming enormous black mushroom clouds.

Uncountable non-humankind warriors died instantly under that strike.

# Chapter 1723: Natural Rewards Power Falling Like Rain

Dark clouds rose into the sky. The earth was shaking, covered in lava-like flame which had been burning strongly.

Countless non-humankind beings died within a blink of an eye. Their bodies were crushed and their souls perished directly under the strike of the steel mountains. Some lucky Jia Clan warriors with especially strong bodies weren't hit directly by the steel mountains. They stood between the mountains with their bodies curled, screaming heartbreakingly while being burned by the fire on the earth.

They weren't crushed by the steel mountains directly, but the destructive impact force broke their bones and harmed their internal organs. The fire was burning their bodies, but they could not struggle up from the ground. They had no choice but to watch the fire spread on their bodies and burn out their skin and muscles layer by layer.

As for the dark-kind warriors and non-humankind slaves within the area affected by the steel mountains that fell from the sky, they were destroyed instantly, without leaving a trace. Who shared the same fate with them were those wise but fragile Xiu Clan craftsmen.

Only a few cities of great calamity managed to hold off the effect of the magnetic force, and luckily dodged the steel mountains. At the moment, these few cities floated in the air, with clouds of black smoke rising from them.

Standing on these few cities, countless Yu Clan nobles looked down with deathly pale faces. They watched countless strong Jia Clan warriors being turned into nothingness in the fire.

Emperor Xun stood on the wall of a flying fort, dumbly looking at

the suddenly destroyed allied army with Wu Bi. His crotch area was wetted, then a strong smell of urine could be sensed. He actually peed himself in fear.

"Revenge, revenge! We Chu Wu Clan never suffered such a great loss before!" Wu Bi yelled hysterically, his body twitching. Nearly a hundred Chu Wu Clan, who had already turned into devils, stood around him, their eyes occupied by a blood-red light.

The casualties were way too heavy. The Chu Wu Clan offered countless living sacrifices to turn tens of thousands of their people into devils, but now, except for Wu Bi and the group of commanders around him, all the others were killed by Ji Hao. Those tens of thousands of devil members were the best of the best, absolute elites among the entire Chu Wu Clan. The number of these people wasn't huge, but still, losing them could bring the Chu Wu Clan down!

"Damn it! Damn it! Dirty! Lowly! Shameless!" Tens of 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' teleported themselves back to the few surviving flying forts, their faces paled. They tremblingly looked at the heaven and cursed in rage.

Earlier, tens of thousands of trusted subordinates followed them up to the sky, but only around ten percent of them survived. These survivors all had one-time-use powerful secret treasures which teleported them away from the dangerous zone and saved them from the deathly disaster before the steel mountains landed on them.

They watched their warriors disappear under those violently falling steel mountains. These top-grade Yu Clan nobles, who had trampled upon countless worlds, conquered countless species, who were able to harvest the lives of uncountable livings beings with one simple word, were now with awfully pale faces. Their faces seemed like those of rotten zombies which were dug out of an ancient tomb.

"Gather military forces! Gather a stronger military force from the worlds we have conquered! Ten times stronger! A hundred times, ten-thousand times!" A 'crown' shouted hysterically with a dark face and a malicious tone, "This slight loss is nothing. Evenly, each of us has lost no more than fifty-million warriors. But, every single one of us has thousands of worlds and uncountable warriors under our command!"

Each of these high-level Yu Clan beings controlled thousands of conquered worlds at least, which were like Pan Xi world that Ji Hao once visited. All local creatures from those conquered worlds were their slaves. Even the smallest conquered world had the population of hundreds of billions. If one warrior existed among every ten local creatures, any small conquered world would be able to provide tens of billions of warriors, not to mention the medium and large scale worlds.

If these tens of high-level Yu Clan nobles were truly crazy enough to gather all military forces under their command from all of the worlds they controlled, they would be able to raise an unimaginably great army. The number of warriors in this army would be hundreds, thousands, even tens of thousands of times greater the number of all Pan Gu world creatures. This army would drown the Pan Gu world like a flood.

The group of high-level Yu Clan beings were howling and screaming, madly cursing Ji Hao for destroying this elite army of theirs in such a lowly evil way. They swore that they would immediately raise an even larger army with even better equipment to launch a retaliatory offensive.

"We followed the great saints here only for seeing the true face of this world. We didn't expect it to be such a great world, and we didn't know that this world has so many great worlds around it, waiting for us to conquer." said an elderly crown, "Therefore, we didn't bring our main military forces with us...Now, it's our turn to let these barbarians know what despair truly is."

The old 'crown' pushed the dazzling crown worn on his head slightly up, then continued proudly, "Just like the creatures from all the worlds that we have conquered, these bloody barbarians shouldn't have any other emotion but despair."

Ji Hao stood before the heaven gate with the mill of Dao rotating slowly behind him, swallowing those pre-world treasures one after another.

Except for the treasures that belonged to the ones who survived luckily, all the other pre-world treasures, which belonged to the tens of thousands of Yu Clan beings who died under the steel mountains, were devoured by the mill of Dao. Seeing the tens of thousands of pre-world treasures, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang had their hearts burning from time to time. But, they didn't have the courage to ask Ji Hao for a share, because suddenly, layers of clouds of coiling golden lights and purple mists emerged from the sky. Along with a magical, mystical, resounding voice of Dao, wisps of purple mists and golden light descended from the sky, sacredly merging into the bodies of Ji Hao, Feng Xing, Yu Mu, Kua E, and his brothers. The lightning-fast movements of the golden lights and purple mists somehow seemed to be slow.

Kua E and his brothers, who had thrown the steel mountains down, earned the greatest natural rewards power. By now, they looked to be showering under a rain of light. The purple mists and golden lights merged into their bodies without an end, brightening the lights in their eyes and raising the powers in their bodies. Gradually, colorful clouds rose around their bodies, rolling and glowing.

Kua E suddenly burst into a thunderous roar while an intense energy wave could be sensed from his body. He broke through a bottleneck, and instantly released a vast power that even forced Ao Bai and Qing Qiang back for two steps.

# Chapter 1724: Arrogant Challenge

Ever since the ancient heaven fell, the original divine gods of Pan Gu world disappeared, and their descendants turned weaker and weaker.

The Zhu Rong Family followed and served the humankind as the Great Libation, sharing the natural fortune. For this reason, Zhu Rong Family always kept developing. But, except Zhu Rong Family, the other divine families, even including Gong Gong Family, had all been depopulating and weakening.

Kua E, his brothers, and the divine descendants from the other few divine families stayed in the heaven and guarded it, wishing that the heaven would rise again one day. But, they barely lived a life in the heaven. They survived under the protection of the divine heaven and earth formation, but even though their divine bloodlines remained, their powers turned weaker and weaker.

For example, Kua E and his brothers were born with tremendous physical strengths, far beyond the level of Divine Magus. But, their magical powers weren't even as great as those of the Senior Magi from the Magi Palace!

However, today, having been nourished by the natural rewards power, the powers of Kua E and the other thousands of divine descendants were improved rapidly, and their physical strengths soared, especially Kua E. Kua E made a major progress and suddenly broke through the bottleneck, reaching the level of ancient divine kings.

His tremendous power rolled in all directions, with a hazy mountain faintly visible above his head. He expanded his body to a thousand miles and wielded his arms. He let out giant streams of divine power, roaring across the sky and hovering around his body like raging dragons.

The pair of yellow snakes coiled around his arms also expanded

like balloons. As Kua E's spirit creatures, they had also been upgraded rapidly. Their powers were raised, their bloodlines were purified, and within a couple of breaths, they turned into a pair of yellow dragons, coiled around Kua E's body.

The pair of yellow dragons suddenly opened their eyes, raised their heads, and roared deeply and strongly towards the sky.

Lying lazily on Ji Hao's shoulders, the pair of fire dragons were stimulated by the roars. They leaped up and expanded to hundreds of meters long, floating above Ji Hao's head. They also raised their heads high and roared out sonorously. They were letting out streaks of flame, which rose into the higher sky, forming dense fiery clouds and interweaving with the yellow mist arising from the pair of yellow dragons. The fiery yellow clouds spread out in every direction, gifting the heaven gate a splendid glow.

"We will be loyal to Emperor Ji Hao to the end!" Kua E growled resonantly towards the sky. Sensing the divine marks and spell symbols inside his body which suddenly turned so much clearer than before, he deferentially kneeled and seriously took an oath of fealty to Ji Hao, along with the others.

They stayed in the heaven and guarded it for so many years, all because they believed that a powerful divine emperor would emerge one day to lead them and prosper the heaven, to retrieve the glory of the heaven. The heaven had fallen for too long. The only motivation for Kua E and his brothers to keep guarding the heaven were the stories about the old days of the heaven, when the supreme, mighty heaven ruled over the whole world, that they heard from their ancestors when they were kids.

Finally, the heaven now had five divine emperors. More importantly, Ji Hao gave them a chance to earn this great natural rewards power, which boosted their strength and strengthened their bodies, allowing their almost dying bodies to regain their inexhaustible life-force. Therefore, they decided to pledge loyalty to Ji Hao, just like how their ancestors swore an oath of fealty to

the ancient divine emperors.

As for Donggong, Ao Bai, Qing Qiang and Zhu Rong...

They didn't know Donggong well. The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind never had a good relationship with the heaven, for which reason, the divine gods and their descendants would never follow the leadership of phoenixes and dragons. As for Zhu Rong, in the eyes of Kua E and his brothers, Zhu Rong was just like them, and as proud divine beings, they had no reason to follow Zhu Rong, did they?

Ji Hao, who surprised them and benefited them over and over and over again, was the only person that they wanted to be loyal to!

"Alright!" Ji Hao solemnly looked at Kua E and his brothers, then seriously accepted their oath. He took out his divine seal and gently pressed towards them. Beams of divine light landed on their bodies. Immediately, strands of colorful light rose from a treasury in the heaven, following which, some enormous divine armors flew over, clankingly putting themselves on Kua E and his brothers.

"From this day on, you are my divine commanders, higher than the other divine commanders!" Pointing at Kua E, Ji Hao let out the nine dragons chariot, "When I go out, you will be guarding around my chariot.

Kua E and his brothers shouted out loud in excitement, and even started dancing.

Back in the ancient times, guarding around the chariots of divine emperors was a great honor, reserved only for the top-grade divine warriors. The ancestors of Kua E and the others were mostly river gods and mountain gods, at the medium level among divine gods.

But this time, Ji Hao let Kua E and his brothers guard around his chariot, to be in charge of his own safety. This was the greatest

honor and the best award to these divine beings, who had guarded the heaven so loyally and determinedly for so many years.

Watching Ji Hao bring thousands of extraordinary powerful divine beings under his command so easily, Donggong glanced at the hundreds of male cultivators scattered around him and sighed helplessly.

The eyes of Qing Qiang and Ao Bai were almost burning in fire because of jealousy. However, they each wore a proud face and scornfully turned their eyes away, gazing into the distance. Those were just thousands of remnants in the heaven, beggars who built cities for human beings for living. How could these divine people...ever be compared with the pure-blooded elite dragons and phoenixes? The dragon-kind and the phoenix-kind were both greatly powerful, and these thousands of divine beings meant nothing to them.

Zhu Rong grinningly looked at Ji Hao, feeling nothing but delighted.

Ji Hao was a natural ally of his. Therefore, the more powerful Ji Hao became, the more powerful Zhu Rong would be. When Ji Hao and Man Man had kids, the one who would succeed to the divine throne in the future would be a possessor of the Zhu Rong family bloodline! Thinking of this, Zhu Rong gave an even brighter grin.

A deep roar could be heard from down below while a heavily armored Yu Clan noble, who was holding a dark staff with a black skull on top, cursed with a shrill voice. He trod on a dark cloud and marched straight to the heaven at lightning speed.

From a long distance away, this Yu Clan being burst into shouts, "Cowards, sneaky shameless a*sholes, besides killing our brave warriors with those dirty tricks you played, do you dare to fight me one-to-one like a true warrior?"

While flying up swiftly, he continued, "I am 'Skull Staff Mingmo' from Pan Yu world. Which one of you dares to fight me?!"

Mingmo's eyes glowed with a misty dim light, with a grey-colored circle spinning and sparkling behind him. Every time the circle flashed, it would bring him up by hundreds of miles. Ji Hao and the others didn't do a thing to stop him. In about ten minutes, he finally stepped onto the ground of heaven.

"You didn't try to stop me, did you?" Mingmo chuckled and said, "You can go to hell then...I can wipe all you cowards out all by myself!"

Banging his skull staff heavily against the ground, he laughed out loud, "Once I kill you, I will become a 'crown'!"

"Eh? Do you know that Blood Crown is dead already? You're well-informed!" Ji Hao smiled with surprise.

# Chapter 1725: Interesting Sidelights of the War

On the flying fort, Yu Huo's clone looked at the heaven, as if absorbed in thoughts. "Mingmo...a 'staff'...But, he seemed to be much more powerful than the few lower-ranked 'crowns'. Such a forbearing one! Is he trying to bypass the 'seal'-level and directly become a 'crown' through this opportunity?" He said.

Giving a weird smile, he waved his hand and continued blandly, "But, this is indeed a good chance. In our Pan Yu world's conquering history, we never suffered such a great loss. If he kills a few high-level leaders of the humankind at this point in time, the glory he earned would indeed turn him into a 'crown'."

Yu Huo's voice wasn't loud, but many Yu Clan nobles around him heard it.

A grey-haired Yu Clan old man, whose beard nearly reached the ground, snorted with a dark face. He scornfully glanced at Yu Huo's clone, then said coldly, "Yemo Tian...as far as we know, even though you're Blood Crown's son, your mother had a lowly bloodline. Therefore, you're ignorant, and we understand that."

This scholar-like Yu Clan old man sneered and slightly raised his head, continuing proudly, "A crushing defeat like this is something we have suffered multiple times. Let's not mention the things that happened too long ago. Thirteen-million years ago, on the Dream Wasteland in Pan Luo world, the allied force composed from the private armies of three 'crowns' were wiped out by local creatures with geographical advantages in one battle."

"Nine-million and seven-hundred-thousand years ago, Pan Wai world, Dark Light Flow Sand, the private armies under the direct commands of seven 'seals' were destroyed by local creatures, also with geographical advantages. Within six-hours, eighty billion warriors, slave warriors, and slaves were devoured by the flowing

sand."

"Five-million, four-hundred and thirty-thousand years ago, in..."

Puff!

An exquisite spear pierced into the old man's back and came out of his chest. The young Yu Clan man who was holding the spear twisted his wrist and shredded the old man's heart, then sent a dark electric current into the old man's body, annihilating his soul.

"The things that weren't recorded in our history books never happened. This is the most sacred rule of our highest code of law." The Yu Clan young man pulled out the spear, took a few steps backward, and stood behind a higher-level man. "Therefore, I've always been emphasizing this, that we should restrain our people, especially those nerds from Flow Moon." Afterward, the higher-level Yu Clan man said slowly.

"Some vague stories never happened. But, these nerds believed those stories, and recorded them in their secret files. If the files spread out, too many people would be scared and worried. Therefore, we have to strictly stop this kind of thing from happening." He said blandly.

Hearing him, a 'staff' smiled and nodded, "So, we have to severely punish those people who talk nonsenses, regardless of their statuses and family backgrounds...Anyone who says a thing that shouldn't be said will be punished."

Yu Huo's clone smiled. He looked at these high-level Yu Clan beings, who still had their hair covered in dust and hadn't yet recovered from the terrifying strike that happened just now, and said, "So today, in this battle happening in Pan Gu world, the brave and powerful Mingmo launched the most sacred challenge to the local creatures in this world...And before this..."

"Nothing happened before this!" All high-level Yu Clan beings on the scene grinned.

A few non-humankind slaves carefully walked up and dragged away the corpse of the Flow Moon old man. A few fierce battle beasts widely opened their jaws and madly tore the corpse into pieces. Thus, this 'reckless' Yu Clan old man, who said a series of wrong things at the wrong moment in front of a group of wrong people, disappeared.

Same as the things he mentioned, this wise Flow Moon man never existed in the universe. Everything about him would soon be wiped out by a mysterious power. All traces left by him would be erased in no time, and before long, not a single Yu Clan noble would ever mention him, think of him, or even remember him.

"However, if Mingmo won the challenge, he would earn a great glory to match his victory." Said Yu Huo's clone with a chuckle, "After all, that will be a splendid victory."

The other high-level Yu Clan beings glanced at each other, then nodded in agreement.

It was Yu Huo's clone who occupied Yemo Tian's body, but in their eyes, it was Yemo Tian talking. To them, Yemo Tian was not worth mentioning, but according to all kinds of ridiculous, strange, and hypocritical social rules of their society, they just couldn't ignore anything that Yemo Tian said.

After all, Yemo Tian now represented those families which discovered and invaded Pan Gu world in the first place. Those families had some hidden powers, which were permitted by some hidden rules.

The sun shone upon the world. Through the sunlight, Ji Hao watched this ridiculous and shameless show which was staged down below, sad and hilarious at the same time. He took a step forward and grinned to Mingmo, "Do you already know that Blood Crown is dead and there is a vacancy for 'crown' now?"

Mingmo narrowed his eyes, looking at Ji Hao with both surprise and doubt as he asked, "Do you know that too?"

Ji Hao smilingly nodded and responded, "But, I believe you shouldn't risk to challenge us...I suggest that you go back down right now to gather your warriors and raise a stronger army."

Scornfully glancing at Mingmo, Ji Hao continued coldly, "By killing your warriors, we can earn a great natural rewards power. Natural rewards power is a good thing. You shouldn't die here. You should go back, gather more of your people, and bring them here to die, for us to earn a greater natural rewards power...That's what you should do!"

By saying what he said, Ji Hao despised the entire Pan Yu world. He treated them like pigs waiting for slaughter, which were brought right to his door. Hearing him, Mingmo growled in rage. Following his voice, his skull staff suddenly burned with a grey fire. He wielded the staff and whacked towards Ji Hao's head.

Ji Hao conveniently punched on the staff. Mingmo's expression changed instantly while he was pushed back by a tremendous power, that he nearly failed to grasp his staff and let the former send it flying away. "You have such a monstrous strength!" He stared at Ji Hao in shock and shouted.

Ji Hao kept the smile on his face as he took two steps towards Mingmo, lowered his voice, then chuckled, "I am curious about one thing... Did you wipe out all defeats from your expanding history?" Clicking his tongue, Ji Hao continued, "I have just slaughtered a giant number of your warriors, but you don't seem to feel a thing, do you? It's like you've been through worse, haven't you? I'm curious about those things. Can you tell me some?"

Mingmo's face turned even darker. He roared towards the sky, then from his skull staff, countless grey figures flew out and marched towards Ji Hao along with shrill screams.

# Chapter 1726: Kill Mingmo

A dark prismatic mirror floated in the air. The group of high-level Yu Clan people didn't leave. Instead, they had their eyes fixed on the mirror.

When Mingmo released a wave of grey figures from his staff and sent those deafeningly crying things towards Ji Hao, quite a few high-level Yu Clan beings couldn't help but praise.

"Mingmo slaughtered all living beings in thirty-six worlds and absorbed the death power from those poor beings before they died. Afterward, he spent billions of years in creating this 'Crying Souls', which is so terrifying.

"For sealing these fierce souls, Mingmo almost spent every penny of his to buy enough 'Nether God grey crystal' and make this skull staff."

"So annoying! Because of him, for thirty-million years, not even a hundred grams of 'Nether God grey crystal' could be found in any market, so we had to put many works down."

A large number of high-level Yu Clan beings praised Mingmo's staff. They were the highest power-holders in their world, but still, making a staff like this would cost a great price. Not to mention the fact that Mingmo had to slaughter all living beings in thirty-six worlds to collect those greedy, fierce, violent, and evil souls, which were sealed in his staff now!

These high-level Yu Clan beings were far, far away from the heaven, but when the crying souls surged out of the staff, they still felt that the evil dark power emerge just around them. Striking their bodies, it stirred up a faint light of defense from their live-saving treasures.

Facing the overwhelming wave of crying souls, Ji Hao released his spirit power. He sensed the endless despair and the boundless

fear. He saw worlds being emptied and all living beings slaughtered; from the intelligent species to the tiniest insects, so violently and cruelly. Even plants were shredded and incinerated...

Not only did these grey figures absorb the deepest despair that creatures had before they died, but they also contained the great hatred of a world before it was killed. The hatred generated an indescribably great power. Touching the power, even average pre-world treasures would be stained and corroded, losing their powers.

Only one type of power in the world could rival this highly corrosive scary power.

Ji Hao gave a bright shout. Following his voice, the descending natural reward power merged into his mill of Dao and gave it, which was dark because of the power of destruction and glowing because of the power of creation, a thick golden rim.

Over ten-billion non-humankind beings were killed under his direction. Therefore, Ji Hao had earned a great natural reward power, which was even greater than what he earned for conquering the flood and helping form the Pan Gu Motherland.

The great natural reward power merged with the mill of Dao and made the entire mill shine with a golden light, looking like a golden statue. From the mill, endless streams of purple mist rose into the sky, hovering above his head as they brought a sacred, brilliant purple glow to the entire sky.

The crying souls marched towards Ji Hao with the strong hatred from the thirty-six dead worlds and the never-ending death power and despair. But, before they approached Ji Hao, they were drawn into the mill.

The golden light generated from the natural reward power quickly dispelled their dark power and death power. The destroying part of the mill spun, with countless marks of the Dao of destruction interwoven on it, condensed into sharp traces like

shark teeth that shredded these crying souls immediately.

"Ashes to ashes, earth to earth... You were slaughtered in your own worlds. But for your next life, as people, animals, or plants in Pan Gu world...you shall live a good life."

Ji Hao grimly looked at Mingmo. For creating the Crying Souls, he collected countless souls of the creatures he killed, shredded and mixed them, then merged measureless death power and despair into them. The crying souls were evil, fierce mixtures of souls.

The mill of Dao shredded the crying souls and took away their dark power, with the purest gains of souls remaining. The marks of their original worlds, which were supposed to exist inside these souls, had been erased. By now, these grains of souls were pure and flawless, like the cleanest water.

Earlier, the mysterious man sent the plate of Pan Gu great Dao into Ji Hao's embryo of Dao and allowed Ji Hao to crush the non-humankind army with the power of the great Dao. At the moment, Ji Hao's mind wasn't thoroughly separated from the great Dao of Pan Gu world yet. Therefore, he could still clearly sense the spirit of Pan Gu world.

Pan Gu world needed these soul grains.

Pan Gu world needed these souls grains in the reincarnation, to forge more lives, so that the world could keep growing and developing, so that more flowers, birds, insects, fishes could exist in this world. It needed them to boost up the life-force of Pan Gu world unlimitedly!

After all, these soul grains came from all creatures of thirty-six worlds!

How many new lives could Pan Gu world create with these soul grains? The soul grains were so mysterious and precious, and could only be generated slowly by the power of creation of a world.

To Pan Gu world, these pure soul grains that Ji Hao extracted was an unexpected fortune! Therefore, the spirit of Pan Gu world immediately told Ji Hao— Pan Gu world needed these soul grains.

But of course, Ji Hao could choose to merge all these soul grains into his embryo of Dao, to nourish it. But, absorbing the soul grains extracted from the souls of all creatures of thirty-six worlds...Even Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei and Priest Yu Yu would explode, right?

"Ashes to ashes, you shall all live a good next life." Ji Hao gave his best wishes with the simplest language.

The mill of Dao sparkled beautifully, gifting each soul grain a faint glow while it merged with the Dao of reincarnation of Pan Gu world.

The sky above the heaven brightened up suddenly, as purple swirling clouds emerged layer after layer, pouring down strong streams of natural rewards power, flooding into Ji Hao's body and his mill of Dao.

Mingmo's face had been twisted badly, as he watched the Crying Souls being devoured by Ji Hao's mill of Dao with both shock and fear. Tremblingly, he attempted to bring them back, but all of a sudden, a frosty beam of light flashed across the air. Ji Hao activated the golden bridge and teleported himself to before Mingmo's face, then swung the Pan Gu sword straight down to his head. The sword glistened with a bone-piercing cold light.

Countless high-level Yu Clan nobles, who had been watching this fight through a magic mirror, gasped in shock. Then, they turned around and walked straight away without any hesitation.

They fled to Liang Zhu City at their highest speed, to gather stronger armies to conquer Pan Gu world!

# Chapter 1727: Gathering Armies

In a nameless world, a highly corrosive, dark mist drifted in the air. Between soaring cliffs and deep abysses, numberless enormous, ferocious-looking monsters had been fighting each other for resources.

Occasionally, golden metal plates would swish across the sky while releasing electric currents. Treading on the metal plates, tall and muscular, heavily armored Jia Clan warriors looked around in an awe-inspiring way, like gods. Seeing these Jia Clan warriors from a distance, the monsters fled desperately, and the ones who didn't manage to run hurriedly knelt on the ground.

In the center area of this world were about ten strangely designed spiral towers, standing tens of thousands of meters tall. Giant electric currents had been coiling on top of each tower, sizzling deafeningly.

Countless local creatures in long black robes gathered under the towers, paying a tribute to a Yu Clan noble in one voice.

On top of the tower in the middle, inside a great hall with all doors widely open, a middle-aged Yu Clan man quietly knelt on the ground, twitching while sweat was streaming down his back. Between his eyebrows, his erect eye was squirming while releasing wisps of black light, which had been flowing into his other two eyes.

A great faith power gathered from all directions. With the faith power from the local creatures in this world, this Yu Clan man had been crazily melting his erect eye. His erect eye shrank into the size of a thumb, dazzling brightly. The cold light beams emitted from his erect light were sharp as blades, piercing deep into the space.

This melting process wasn't just an evolution of his body, it was also a corrosion to the great Dao that this Yu Clan man pursued.

A Yu Clan man's erect eye contained an extremely strong power. Therefore, only the power of the great Dao could melt this erect eye. During the melting process, this man would gradually control the great Dao of a world and become the ruler of this world, like a divine emperor in the ancient heaven of Pan Gu world.

The praying voices of the local creatures grew higher and higher, and the middle-aged Yu Clan man who kneeled in the hall twitched even more intensely. Suddenly, his erect eye exploded into strands of sharp light, thoroughly merging into the rest of the two eyes.

The space quaked suddenly. With the help of the faith power from the local creatures, the spirit of this Yu Clan man finally merged into the space of this world, controlling a part of the great Dao of this world. A cold and strong power spread out of his body. He clenched his fingers, slowly pulling out an oddly shaped long staff.

"As a colonizer...Even though I have attained such a great power, if I want to be admitted..." The middle-aged Yu Clan man slowly stood up and filled his handsome face with a scornful smile while saying, "I really wish that a great war can break out and let all those 'crowns', 'seals', and 'staffs' die...We all have the same power, so why can you stand so high?"

A dark beam of light shone directly out of the space and sent out an exquisite black bell, quietly floating before his face. The middle-aged Yu Clan man grabbed the bell and gently shook it. Hearing the deep, frosty tinkles from the bell, his expressions changed suddenly, then he burst into a wild laughter.

"They lost so many elite warriors? A bunch of useless old people who occupy the high places...It's our turn to show what we can do. Pan Gu world? And such a great world group? It's time to let the great saints know that only we, the colonizers who are showering blood in colonies, are the true hope of our kind."

"Embattle! Prepare for the war! Target, Pan Gu world!" The

middle-aged Yu Clan man snorted coldly, but the entire world had sensed his will. Following his order, countless monsters who had been fighting violently against each other roared impatiently towards the sky.

In a beautiful world, groups of slim and glistening crystal dragons had been flying in the sky, while glowing-white unicorns were running in the forest. A large number of Yu Clan young man in exquisite armors had been hunting relaxedly in the forest, with warm smiles on their faces.

A millions of miles wide flying city quietly flew across the sky. The city was entirely built with white crystals, glaring under the sunlight. On top of this city, a Yu Clan man was holding a black bell while smilingly faintly. His erect eye had been melted long ago, leaving a pair of pupils dazzling with a sharp white light and releasing an inexhaustible brightness and heat. "You, who stood high above the masses, know nothing but schemes. You have even forgotten how to fight, forgotten the smell of war...You should just let us replace you."

"Prepare for the war! Our target is Pan Gu world!" The Yu Clan young man chuckled, then crumbled the black bell in his hand and collected the hidden coordinates of Pan Gu world.

Large groups of crystal dragons hovered in the sky, gathering around the city. On the ground, a group of crustacean local creatures, who were the pre dominators of this world, rode on unicorns while approaching speedily.

In a sizzling world which was predominated by deserts and decorated with oases, in a broad great hall on top of a thousand-miles-tall pyramid, a Yu Clan old man in a yellow robe laughed with a deep voice. In his pair of eyes, two tiny suns were faintly visible.

"I am more powerful than 'crowns' back in the hometown by ten folds! Because of their noble family backgrounds, they touched the

edge of the great Dao of our world, and are sitting at high positions." The Yu Clan old man crumbled the black bell in his hand and continued slowly, "And, I am ruling thirty colony worlds in this area, controlling the great Dao of all these thirty worlds."

"I am more powerful than them by ten folds...But, I am still a colonizer, a country bumpkin, a lowly robber in their eyes!" The old man curled up his lips and said, "Ah, noble lords, did you let the creatures in a barbaric world wipe out over ten billion of your elite warriors? In a single time? Aren't you too ashamed to continue sitting on your thrones above the clouds?"

"Gather the army and prepare for war! Target, Pan Gu world!" The old man's voice echoed through a whole thirty worlds. The saints rose into the sky on dense clouds. From the rising sands, numberless giants who had humanoid upper bodies but scorpion tails marched out. They wielded all kinds of enormous weapons while gathering towards the tremendous pyramids in their worlds. An army of ten-billion scorpion men was raised from each one of these thirty worlds.

More and more worlds which were occupied by Pan Yu world people were stirred up. With all kinds of purposes and goals, they gathered their vast armies and quickly triggered the portals that led to Pan Gu world, heading to Liang Zhu City.

The tremendous, horrifying military forces belonging to Pan Yu world were fully activated at this very moment.

Pan Gu world and the hundreds of thousands of untouched worlds around it were their targets.

# Chapter 1728: Chose A Battleground

Standing on the platform before the heaven gate, Ji Hao lightly kicked Mingmo's head with his tiptoe.

He was surprisingly weak. His skull staff was powerful indeed, that according to Ji Hao's estimate, even Ao Bai and Qing Qiang couldn't eradicate those crying souls without a suitable secret magic. If the battle happened between Mingmo, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang, the latter two would end up being torn into pieces without a doubt, having their souls devoured. Even under the protection of the natural fortune of the heaven, the best they could have done was keeping themselves from being slaughtered. But, it would never be easy for them to launch any counterattack on those crying souls.

After all, the staff was a scary secret treasure made from the souls of all creatures from thirty-six worlds. Its power was great enough to make even some powerful beings despair.

However, as to Mingmo's own power...Ji Hao had been fighting against Yu Clan nobles for long. Based on his experience, he clearly sensed that the source of Mingmo's power was the Nether Moon, the power of death and soul. Mingmo was a 'staff', but he didn't have a full control of the Nether Moon power, or the power of the original great Dao in Pan Yu world which was represented by Nether Moon. In other words, he was just average.

Perhaps, he controlled one percent of the power of the Nether Moon. But for sure, he was far weaker than Blood Crown, or the few 'crowns' under Yu Man's leadership.

The mill of Dao had still been spinning quietly, shredding crying souls and sending soul grains into the Dao of reincarnation of Pan Gu world. Streams of natural reward power had been descending from the sky, flowing into Ji Hao's body along with a beautiful natural melody.

Ji Hao's mill of Dao had turned golden and shiny. He gave a heavy kick and sent Mingmo's head down from the platform, then conveniently kicked again, sending his body down as well. But before that, he seized the space bangle worn on Mingmo's wrist.

As a 'staff', Mingmo's bangle was jammed with all colorful kinds of treasures. Ji Hao recognized some of them, but some were completely strange to him. Many of these treasures shone blindingly and gave weird, vast sense of power. Clearly, these were incredibly valuable pieces.

"That thing didn't buy himself this 'staff' title, did he?" Ji Hao frowned and said, "It seems that we know too little about Pan Yu world. If we have the chance, we need to capture a few high-level ones to see exactly how things are working in their world, and to figure out the backgrounds of those 'crowns', 'seals', and 'staffs'!"

Ji Hao looked around while pondering. With the power of the sun which covered the entire world, Ji Hao clearly saw that in Liang Zhu City, a group of high-level non-humankind beings had been sending out black bells. Each black bell stirred up large space ripples, then disappeared in a giant portal, without a trace.

Obviously, Pan Yu world nobles had been gathering military forces. They were preparing to raise an even greater army to attack Pan Gu world.

Ji Hao knitted his brows, thinking about a plan for what was going to happen. He wouldn't be as honest and straightforward as ancient divine emperors who chose to leave the heaven and the divine heaven and earth formation, which provided them with a strategic advantage, to fight the non-humankind all over the world.

The divine heaven and earth formation could be counted as the most inclusive magic formation in Pan Gu world, as it provided the fiercest offense and best defense. Fighting the enemies with the divine heaven and earth formation was the smartest thing to do.

Pu Ban City couldn't serve as the battleground, because with one exchange of moves, the whole city would be flattened.

The ancestral lands of large families and clans couldn't become battlegrounds either. Even though each ancestral land was covered in powerful defensive formations, it wouldn't be able to stop the tide-like non-humankind army.

The heaven could be relied upon. Ji Hao wanted the enemies to attack the heaven first. However, after watching Ji Hao throw Mingmo's body directly down from the heaven, no matter how stupid and arrogant these non-humankind beings were, they wouldn't let it happen twice.

"So, I need to find you a target that you have to attack. I need to find the most suitable target for you." Ji Hao grinned abruptly, said, "It turns out that having Emperor Xun in Pu Ban City is a good thing to both the city and the humankind!"

Emperor Xun colluded with the non-humankind. Basically, he was now on their side. For this reason, the non-humankind army wouldn't attack Pu Ban City, and Pu Ban people would be spared from the flames of war. Also, because Emperor Xun was on the enemy's side, the large clans and families who followed his head wouldn't be attacked by the non-humankind either, and the people from these families and clans would be safe.

Letting Emperor Xun ascend to the throne, letting him be the human emperor, this was such a frustrating thing at first. But now, it seemed to be not so bad, right?

Ji Hao couldn't help but feel a bit surprised. Did Emperor Shun truly have his mind controlled by the enemy, or did he let this happen on purpose?

As he knew more and more secrets about Pan Gu world, Ji Hao now dared not to underestimate anyone in this world. Did Emperor Shun send Emperor Xun to the throne on purpose? Did he? The more Ji Hao thought about it, the deeper he believed it.

"Pu Ban can't become the battleground, neither will they be stupid enough to fly up there again. In this case, we should find them the best target underneath the heaven!" Ji Hao laughed and turned to the northeast side of Pu Ban City, looking at the Yao Mountain City.

"The God of Mountain, follow my order!" Ji Hao raised his divine seal and waved towards the Yao Mountain city. Then, he turned around and grinned to Kua E and his brothers, "Half a month... Expand Yao Mountain City by a hundred folds, with twelve layers of city walls, all connected. Can you do that? Every living being in the heaven will be available to you."

Kuala E had his eyebrows knitted. He was going to tell Ji Hao that it was an impossible mission. However, once he heard Ji Hao say that the entire heaven would be available for him, he puffed out his chest and laughed, "If the five divine emperors will follow my directions too, ten days... In only ten days, we can easily expand Yao Mountain City by a hundred folds. Back in the ancient heaven, a city could be built in just one night!"

While Kua E was talking, the Yao Mountain City quaked.

The earth waving like water pushed the entire Yao Mountain City and the surrounding fertile lands for over ten-million-mile in radius, including the tens of mountains around the city, to the area right under the heaven, where Buzhou Mountain used to stand.

The Yao Mountain city area moved as slow as running horses at first. But, as Ji Hao activated a greater and greater earth meridian power, the vast area began moving at lightning speed, leaving shreds of afterimages behind. At last, hundreds of thousands of miles could be covered within one second.

Giant clouds of mist were rising from the city. After twenty-four hours, the entire city was moved to the area right under the heaven.

"Expand the city. This will be the battleground for us to fight the

non-humankind!" Looking down at the Yao Mountain City, Ji Hao said mildly, "Expand it by a hundred folds, and connect the earth meridians in the city with the entire divine heaven and earth formation. I will drain the enemies' blood in this place."

# Chapter 1729: Treacherous Messenger

Divine gods had the powers to move the mountains, dry the oceans, and turn the deserts into a sea.

Led by Kua E and supported by thousands of divine gods who were building experts, billions of Magi, dragons, phoenixes, Ji Hao's disciple, Shermie and his uncountable water-kind elite forces, along with the help of all kinds of powerful tools found in the heaven, the new Yao Mountain City was built in ten days.

The new Yao Mountain City was an enormous fort.

Surrounding the city were twelve-layers of, thousand-miles-tall city walls, glowing splendidly, embossed with legendary creatures. Every single embossment on each wall contained an amazing power, and was highly lethal.

The outermost wall was tens of millions of miles long, connected with the earth meridians and the stars. Under the orders given by the five divine emperors, the powers of the natural stars were poured into this wall. This wall was nearly transparent, with the beautiful lights flowing in it. The starlight swirled swiftly in the wall, causing a deep, muffled buzzing noise. Under its effect, any stranger who approached the wall even slightly would feel a sharp pain from his or her soul.

All twelve walls were especially sturdy. Unless all the earth meridians and natural stars connected with the walls were shattered simultaneously within a moment, these walls were unbreakable. Not even a mark would be left on these walls, no matter how strong the enemies could be.

Not to mention the fact that all kinds of cruel machinery and evil dark magic created by the group of Master Magi through years of studies had been buried in the walls. These walls seemed to be motionless, but in fact, each wall could be as dangerous as a thousand life-eating beasts.

Surrounding the outermost wall, twenty-seven rivers had been flowing around the city, including nine rivers of flowing sand, nine of lava, and nine rapidly flowing water rivers. Each river was a thousand miles wide, filled with traps. Falling into any of these rivers, even an iron man would be melted in a moment.

Surrounding the twenty-seven dangerous rivers was a vast ocean, expanding for millions of miles. In the bottom of the ocean, undercurrents and hidden ditches were interweaving. Numberless water-kind creatures raised giant waves from the ocean. Giant clouds of poisonous gas and paralyzing mists had been rising from the ocean, with thunder bombs and whirlpools everywhere. Any living being who stepped into this ocean without a divine token given by Ji Hao would die.

Following Ao Bai's orders, dragon troops had been heading to this area, wave after wave. Large groups of pure-blooded dragons led numberless flood dragons, boa dragons, carp dragons, centipede dragons, and all other kinds of mix-blooded dragon-kind members, along with oddly-shaped, powerful water-kind spirit creatures, entering and stationing in this ocean. Thousands of crystal palaces belonging to the dragon-kind stood on the submerged flowing sand beaches in straight lines, turning this vast ocean into a dead zone with a fierce aura of killing.

Each day, numberless pure-blooded dragons would hover around above the ocean, raising enormous waves while roaring and training the water-kind army on the water surface. Square ten-thousand-men arrays lined up perfectly on the water surface. Looking from the sky, one would see the heads of uncountable water-kind creatures, without a single drop of water visible.

Surrounding this vast ocean, cliffy mountains were scattered. Countless deep, dark valleys and bottomless naturally formed pits were hiding in this mountain area. In east, south, north, and west, a hundred-miles-wide broad path was lying in each direction, leading to the ocean. If the non-humankind army intended to

attack Yao Mountain City, these four paths would be their best choices.

The four paths were clean and flat, without any trap or ambush. But, at the end of each path was a giant, blood-red bay, filled with cold and sticky blood. Numberless blood sea shura warriors from the Netherworld had been waiting quietly in the four blood bays, and the four blood bays would be the first dangerous zone that the non-humankind army had to face.

Ji Hao contacted Netherworld Hierarch. With the bodies of all the warriors who would die on this battleground, he traded for Netherworld Hierarch's full support.

No one knew exactly how many zombies and evil ghosts Netherworld Priest had accumulated in the Netherworld during the past countless years. But without a doubt, that would be a terrifying number. With a full support from the Netherworld, at least, Ji Hao wouldn't encounter a shortage of military strength. Mentionably, the zombies and evil ghosts from the Netherworld were even much fiercer than the warriors under Ji Hao's command. The longer they fought, the larger their number would grow. Therefore, these four blood bays would become four horrible death traps to cause the enemies heavy casualties, as heavy as possible.

The right time, the right location, the right people; fighting a war in Pan Gu world, Ji Hao wasn't prepared to give up on any of these three factors.

He was building the best battleground under the most advantageous natural conditions to harm the non-humankind as much as possible, with the most favorable battle formations. No matter how many troops the enemies would send, Ji Hao would try his best to destroy them all. If everything didn't work, if he failed, he believed that Priest Dachi, Priest Qingwei and Yu Yu would show up and make their moves by then.

Mounting on a whale dragon, Ao Hao, who called himself 'Ao Ritian', stayed on the boundary of a blood bay and the water area of the ocean, clicking his lips while looking at the countless grey figures which had been quietly and swiftly moving in the sticky blood.

"My dear ancestors, where the hell did he find these scary things? Oh my, I'd rather challenge the human emperor one-on-one than fight these monsters. So damn scary!" Before he finished his sentence, he grabbed a giant shark and threw it into the blood bay.

Following a shrill scream, the blood and flesh of the shark were corroded instantly by the blood, and before long, the bones melted too. All that was left was a hazy pale-grey shark silhouette that quickly merged into the blood, turning into one of those swiftly moving figures.

Seeing this, Ao Hao and the group of dragons standing behind him widely opened their eyes. Just now, they had one more dreadful impression of the Netherworld.

As they were sighing about the terrifying power of this sticky blood, a cloud of dust rolled up from the north path, which was right in front of them. With all the dust, groups of dark-skinned weird creatures rushed over, wearing golden armors.

These six-meters-tall creatures had wolf heads, human bodies, and horse legs, along with dark-green eyes. A thrilling coldness had been releasing from their entire bodies, while the heart-shaking winds gusted around them. Wherever they trampled across, the earth turned into sand. The dark sand rose into the sky, quickly approaching Yao Mountain City along these strange creatures.

Tens of thousands wolf-headed creatures showed up, but their leader was a nine-meters-tall, muscular creature with an eagle head and a pair of bull legs. Holding a golden staff, the eagle-headed creature walked to the edge of the blood-red bay, raised his

head and looked at Ao Hao and the other dragons.

"I want to talk with your master...I bring a message from my great, supreme master. Barbarians, we aren't here to fight a war. We are here for our mutual benefits...Bring me to your master. Otherwise, you will regret!"

Ji Hao had been closely watching the whole Yao Mountain City area, without giving Ao Hao one chance to cause any trouble. A quarter of an hour later, Ji Hao met this eagle-headed messenger in a great divine hall.

# Chapter 1730: The Inner Concern of the Non-humankind

In the central area of the heaven, the East Emperor Palace...

As the palace where the ancient East Emperor Taiyi lived, it was entirely built from golden crystals, towering and magnificent. A golden stream of sunlight poured down from the higher sky like a tremendous waterfall, enveloping the entire palace. Because of the multiple reflections and refractions, the whole palace was filled with eye-piercing lights. Every inch of the palace was dominated by the brilliant sunlight.

Sitting on the enormous, tree-shaped throne of East Emperor, Ji Hao had been delightfully enjoying the warm sunlight along with Mr. Crow, who stood by his side, the pair of fire dragons coiled on his lap, and a group of Gold Crow Clan elders.

The dark-skinned, eagle-eyed messenger, who had weird spell symbols inlaid on his golden armor with dark-green crystals, appeared to like the sunlight quite a lot. With fascination, he breathed deeply as he politely kneeled on the ground and pressed both hands on the earth. His fingers were locked together in a strange way, then he put his forehead on the ground and kowtowed to Ji Hao.

"The highest ruler of sun, under the order of Yu Meng, the Supreme Divine Ruler, the dominator of the sun and deserts, the defender of sandstorms and starvation, the protector of wildland bandits and wolves, the controller of death and darkness, the leader of mummies and poisonous snakes, I, Su, have brought you the kindness of Yu Meng."

After the super long title, Su raised his left hand. Worn on his left wrist was a bangle, which was shaped like a coiling snake, exquisite and mysterious. The tiny golden scales of the snake opened one after another while emitting a strong wave of space

power. From the bangle, Su took out a series of beautiful and powerful treasures, then carefully put them on the ground in a straight line.

Those were twelve golden, glittering, exotic treasures. Ten among the twelve were pre-world spirit treasures, and two were pre-world supreme treasures. Even though among all pre-world treasures, these were relatively lower-grade pieces, as the gifts for the beginning of a relationship, they were already rich and impressive, especially the two pre-world supreme treasures. One of the two pre-world supreme treasures was a strangely-shaped golden coffin, embossed with countless golden scorpions. From the coffin, faintly audible, shrill screams could be heard from time to time, making Ji Hao feel that numberless fierce creatures were hiding in it!

If Ji Hao guessed right, the golden coffin was a rare, 'hatchery'-type of treasure, with countless highly poisonous and dangerous scorpions in it. Ji Hao opened his erect eye. Nine suns glowed inside the eye, allowing Ji Hao to feel the powers of the scorpions inside the coffin. Ninety-nine percent of those scorpions were as powerful as Magus Kings, meters long, while the rest were all at the level of Divine Magi, hundreds of meters long.

The other pre-world supreme treasure was a golden machete, with hazy strands of sand roaring around its smooth surface. Through a single glimpse at the blade, Ji Hao felt that a wave of thin but sharp blade power strands was coming right at his face, attempting to cut his body and soul into pieces.

The blade had been vibrating. Glancing at the blade, Ji Hao immediately realized that the blade could become a disastrous sandstorm at any moment, to sweep across millions of miles and wipe out all creatures it touched.

In desert areas, the power of this blade could be maximized.

"Interesting treasures... Supreme Divine King Yu Meng? Why did

he send me these gifts?" Ji Hao looked at Su with interest as he smilingly asked the question. Ten pre-world spirit treasures and two pre-world supreme treasures, these constituted such a heavy gift.

"I brought the kindness of my supreme master. Divine King Yu Meng hopes to make friends with you, instead of enemies." Su raised his head and said politely, "This is not what just my master wants. This is the wish of all my master's allies too."

Ji Hao raised his brows and glanced at the few Gold Crow Clan elders around him, then grinned and said, "But, we are enemies now. You gathered armies...Hmm...You're also sent here from another world just now, aren't you?"

Su nodded seriously and responded with a deep voice, "I, Su, am the most loyal messenger of my supreme master. My supreme master is the ruler of our world. He controls all the greatest powers of our world, all evils...He wanted us to raise an army...So, as his loyal followers, we raised an army and came here."

Eyes sparkling with a bright light, Su sighed in surprise, "Pan Gu world, it's the first time I heard this world's name. But, I have to admit that this world is so beautiful...In your world, clear springs can be found everywhere, and beside spring water, you have rivers, lakes, even oceans! Can you believe that?"

Uncontrollably, Su quivered, then sounded more and more excited. "And, you have so many green plants! Unbelievable, in our world, in commoners' countries, even the highest king has ten-thousand trees at most in his palace! Only Yu Meng, the Divine King, has a whole ten-million large trees in his palace. But in your world, trees, flowers, grasses, they're everywhere!"

Shaking his head, Su sighed again and then continued, "In your world, the trees owned by a commoner are actually more than all the trees possessed by a king from a commoners' country in our world. Pan Gu world is so, so rich and amazing."

Ji Hao gave a dry cough. Hearing Su, he felt like listening to a group of robbers giving comments on their own things. That wasn't good. Having a group of greedy, inexperienced wives casting their covetous eyes on one's stuff, this wasn't good.

"Just alright, just alright. Our Pan Gu world is not too rich, it's just average." Ji Hao smiled and said, "What exactly is the kindness that you bring from your Divine King Yu Meng?"

"To you, such a powerful being, trying to conceal or being over-cautious would be an insult. I'll be straightforward. My master, the supreme Divine King Yu Meng, he and his allies want to cooperate with you!" Su looked around, pondered for a while, then said cautiously.

"Cooperate?" Ji Hao grinned and asked, "How? What do I need to pay? What can I get?"

"Let those powerful 'crowns', 'seals', and 'staffs' fall in this world. Let them shed their last drop of blood in this world. My master and his allies promise you that if you help them to destroy those power-holders in our world, they will never lay a finger on even an inch of land of Pan Gu world after they bring the entire Pan Gu world under control...Even though this world is so rich and fertile!" With the deep voice, Su gave a reply.

Su understood that this sounded offensive, yet he couldn't control but add, "So much clear water, so many trees...This world is so rich, so, so rich."

Ji Hao gently knocked the head of one fire dragon while sinking in thought. His finger tinkled silverly against the fire dragon's head.

Pondering silently for quite a while, he laughed, "Your master is speaking for those...highest rulers away from home, isn't he?"

"Or, is this an... internal power struggle between the central power-holders and the away-from-home power-holders from Pan

Yu world?"

# Chapter 1731: Endless Greediness

"Perhaps, only my master can answer your questions."

Su carefully let out a golden bead from his mouth. On the golden bead, weird patterns were inlaid with obsidians. He glanced at Ji Hao, seeing him show no signs of objection. Then, he carefully put the golden bead on the ground, pushed his hands before his chest, and cast a spell.

Following a muffled bang, the golden bead split up into a beautiful, blooming flower. A beam of golden light shone from the flower, then clouds of tiny golden light spots drifted down from the light beam. Within the light spots, a tall and sturdy, dark-skinned, handsome man showed up.

The man's erect eye was gone, but his face was featured obviously as a Yu Clan being. The beautiful face was predominated by a strong pride, and hiding deep behind that was cunningness and evilness. All these features proved that he was a pure Yu Clan noble.

"A dark-skinned Yu Clan noble? First time I see one!" Seeing this man, Ji Hao immediately gave this mean comment.

"I tanned myself, so my skin can share a color with the people under my leadership. My dark skin gives me this affinity." Said this dark-skinned Yu Clan man. His long hair were coiled into a strangely shaped bun on top of his head, and he was wearing a golden armor, decorated with emeralds and luxurious patterns. He smiled and nodded to Ji Hao, then continued saying, "I am Yu Meng, the Divine King of Pan Sha world and the other ninety-nine desert worlds."

Before Ji Hao said a word, he spread his hands and laughed, "But of course, as a title, 'Divine King' means nothing. Some of my friends call themselves emperors, some call themselves rulers, some created weird titles like 'governor-general'...But in fact, we're

all the same. We're the claws and tusks of Pan Yu world, on the millions of conquered worlds."

Ji Hao calmly looked at Yu Meng. Judging by what he said, he was clearly very different from the other Yu Clan nobles.

"Unlike the others, I prefer to manage the worlds I rule in a mild way." Yu Ming gave a bright grin and said, "Therefore, ninety-nine deputy commanders and subordinates of mine are powerful local creatures from the worlds I ruled, like Su... Su is loyal and devoted. He is my messenger, my envoy. It was me who sent him to you, dear Emperor Ji Hao."

"Just say what you want to say." Ji Hao continued looking at Yu Meng and said coldly, "I think you didn't send Su all the way here to deliver these superfluous words, did you? What do you want? What do you need me to do? And, what can I get?"

In the light, Yu Meng bowed slightly to Ji Hao and said something that Ji Hao had been expecting.

Yu Meng had conquered a whole hundred worlds. His subordinates were countless, and the creatures he ruled over were vast in number. In the hundred worlds he conquered, he was the highest leader, the king of gods, the ruler of gods.

However, Yu Meng wasn't born in a noble family.

Back in Pan Yu world, Yu Meng's ancestors were the members of a branch family of a low-grade family. The family fell, so Yu Mengs's ancestors recruited a group of weak warriors and started a journey of universal expedition with their humble possessions, without a foreseeable future. After countless dangers and difficulties, his ancestors luckily discovered a small world with no mighty power. They carefully invaded this small world, looted resources, and accumulated strength. They spent hundreds of years, but finally, they conquered that small world.

With the efforts of twelve generations, Yu Meng's ancestors used

that small world as a springboard, and began invading the surrounding worlds. When Yu Meng took over the family, his family had already controlled thirty-five worlds.

As a powerful being, with the great strength of his family, Yu Meng spent merely thirty-thousand years to conquer all the worlds that he could find. Once a whole hundred worlds were ruled by his family, he titled himself as Divine King. Thus, he became the highest ruler of all creatures from one hundred worlds.

Everything seemed to be so wonderful.

Vast territories, numberless people, the highest power, great strengths, and a long span of life. He should have nothing to complain.

The only flaw was —

"Those 'holy beings', who are even greedier than the blood-sucking mummies in deserts, those greedy b*stards from top-grade large families!" In front of Ji Hao, Yu Meng wasn't trying to conceal his anger and hatred at all. "They blew up everything. They refuse to die with the rotten Pan Yu world, but insist on dragging us to hell with them!"

Yu Meng's family had conquered so many worlds. During the long conquering history of his family, inevitably, they had to make connections with Pan Yu world — They needed stronger Jia Clan troops, more flying forts, more functional battle puppets, they also needed more divine towers...

As a low-level small family, Yu Meng's family had many great shortcomings. Therefore, they had no choice but looting resource of the worlds they conquered to purchase what they needed from Pan Yu world.

As the conqueror of so many worlds, Yu Meng's family was generous, and this generousness quickly caught the attention of the true power-holders in Pan Yu world!

"They didn't even bother to find an excuse!" Yu Meng looked at Ji Hao with a sullen face and said coldly through gritted teeth, "The small family my ancestors belonged to was a vassal family of a top-grade large family."

"When the small family fell, that top-grade large family dumped them like garbage, without even taking an extra glance at them. They let my ancestors live a vagrant life, let them risk their lives...But, when we built our own foundation, they just pounced on us like greedy zombies to suck our blood and marrow."

That was a top-grade large family in Pan Yu world, with one 'crown', two 'seals', and five 'staffs'. That family had the noblest bloodline, a great power and a terrifying strength. When the people from that family found out about Yu Meng's family, they gave a simple word, because of which, Yu Meng and everything he had became the private properties of that family. After that, Yu Meng had to send a giant amount of resources and over a billion elite warriors to that family, added with millions of beautiful female slaves. Besides, he needed to spend so much time and energies on maintaining the relationships with the member of that family...

"Pan Yu world is on the verge of collapse. Currently, that world has to loot as many resources as possible to slow down its collapse." With a heart-deep hatred, Yu Meng sneered, "Among the hundred worlds that belong to me, sixty-three are about to die because of the endless looting...In thirty-five mediums-scale worlds, you can't even find a large pool."

"They are way too greedy, and their boundless greed will destroy everything earned by my ancestors and me with our greatest efforts."

Looking at Ji Hao, Yu Meng continued honestly, "So, Emperor Ji Hao, we hope that we can combine our powers with yours and... let them die!"

# Chapter 1732: Despairing Infertility

Yuan was full of anger and grievance, but on hearing him, Ji Hao was so delighted that he even wanted to applaud. If he weren't considering the face of this potential future ally, he would have leaped up, clapped his hands, and maybe even danced a little.

The golden light beam expanded in all directions and became a soft light screen that wrapped up the entire palace. The wind roared out from the light screen, and following the wind, Yu Meng disappeared, while a boundless dessert appeared in the light. As the desert showed up, a very real, scorching and dry air came over from the light.

"Ah, the smell of my hometown!" Su raised his head, shaking his head as he sighed.

"My family is lucky. In a hopeless situation, my ancestors discovered Pan Sha world. Relying on this small desert world, my family went through the roughest time, slowly developing and expanding." Yu Meng's voice could be heard from the light screen. With a deep affection, he sighed, "But, my family is also so unlucky..."

Hearing his story, Ji Hao began nodding.

Unlucky indeed. His family found Pan Sha world in a desperate situation. In Pan Sha world, his ancestors resumed their spirits, had the first income, earned their seed capital, and started their expansion and innovation.

But, what frustrated them was that the worlds surrounding Pan Sha world were all infertile, predominated by deserts. Sands everywhere, sandstorms every day; small, large, numerous suns floated in the sky. In these worlds, plants and water were the most important resources.

The images in the light screen changed, showing a rapidly

flowing river. The river flew across a yellow dessert, connecting a series of oases like a pearl necklace. Triangular white sails were moving on the river; in oases, weird-looking intelligent creatures lived a peaceful life.

The image then zoomed out to show the countless oases by the riversides. Because of this great river, the desert was decorated with different scaled oases. Even though the deserts were still the absolute dominators of this world, but based on a rough calculation, the oases had occupied about twenty-percent of the world.

One could see that in the early stage of the invasion, Yu Meng's ancestors had already built a hegemony in this world. Countless dark-skinned local creatures were floating in the air with reverence, kowtowing to the Jia Clan warriors treading on metal plates. Supervised by Jia Clan warriors, they dug out golden rocks from under the sands, building pyramids and enormous statues.

Surrounding each pyramid, beautiful halls were built. Large groups of Yu Clan nobles in luxurious clothes, as well as Jia Clan commanders and Xiu Clan masters were leisurely walking in the hall. The spring water and wine were served everywhere by countless local creatures in golden armors devoutly. Troops of local warriors gathered to the military camps around the halls from every direction.

Yu Meng's family was growing rapidly. Trained by Jia Clan commanders, those local warriors turned brave and battlewise. Their great potentials were inspired, and they mastered countless types of strange magic, attaining great powers.

Trampling across the Chaos, Yu Meng's family invaded more and more worlds. Under Yu Meng's leadership, the number of the worlds conquered by his family finally reached one hundred!

Those were one-hundred words ruled by deserts, but with abundant water resources and oases. Yu Meng and the species he

ruled lived free lives in these worlds. Led by Yu Meng, the enormous powerful army composed from local creatures of these worlds even began trying capture natural stars from the Chaos, then plant the stars with rich water resources in their worlds to moisturize these desert worlds.

Everything was going in a good way until...

A secret survey corp from the Holy Realm in Pan Yu world suddenly showed up outside the base of Pan Yu's family, which was located in Pan Sha world. At lightning speed, they paid surprise inspections to all the worlds that Yu Meng's family controlled, and next, in a very aggressive way, they ordered Yu Meng's family to come back under control of the large suzerain family, to be under their protection, while paying enough tributes to them.

"So greedy, Pan Yu world and those bloody nobles." Murmured Yu Meng.

The images in the light screen changed quickly. In these desert worlds, the great rivers flowing across deserts were taken away one after another, directly sent back to Pan Yu world through portals.

To Pan Yu world, a great river was not worth mentioning, but to the desert worlds ruled by Yu Meng, any river could be the lifespring of tens of millions of lives.

Forced by the suzerain family, Yu Meng and his family yield without a choice. Helplessly, they watched the worlds they ruled being drained one after another. The rivers were drawn away one after another, leaving them the deserts and the withering oases.

What was even worse — Those suzerain family people didn't even let pass the plants in the oases in these desert worlds. They accurately calculated the numbers of each of these worlds, then plundered a giant amount of green resources from these worlds, over and over again!

Under the unlimited looting of the suzerain family, the worlds controlled by Yu Meng's family withered quickly, collapsing and dying. In the light screen, tens of purely dark, six-meters-tall wolf-headed creatures walked on the desert. They looked at the sky, opened their mouths to inhale towards the sun. Then, they scooped some sand from the ground and put it into their mouth, chewing and swallowing.

"Are they poor? They are so poor!" Yu Meng's voice gave an indescribable feeling, "These people of mine used to fancy sizzling grilled meat, clear spring water, thick yogurt...But, after that bloody suzerain family found us, in mere twenty-thousand years, my people evolved into monsters which can feed on sand!"

Ji Hao popped out his eyes in shock.

Mr. Crow widely opened his mouth, cawed out loud, then sighed, "Caw, that's a great ability. So much sand! They can't eat it all no matter how hungry they are, right?"

"That isn't the problem!" Yu Meng growled with rage, "Dignity is the problem! My people want to eat meat and drink wine. They want everything that they deserve! But now, in those poor worlds, they can only stuff their stomachs with sand!"

"So, Emperor Ji Hao, let's fight together and kill those bloody scums!" Yu Meng roared out in fury.

# Chapter 1733: Lowly Yu Meng

The light screen glistened, showing different images.

Yu Meng showed Ji Hao what he and his family had been through, and the changes happening to the hundred worlds they conquered. With an extremely honest voice, he offered to ally with Ji Hao. He promised Ji Hao that he had already gathered a large group of reliable allies who shared the same pain with him. They prepared to join hands and destroy those power-holders in Pan Yu world.

Ji Hao remained silent for long, without saying 'yes'.

Towards the end, Yu Meng even burst into growls, "Emperor Ji Hao, what are you hesitating for? This is such a great chance, but are you letting it go? If you reject my offer, together, we will crush Pan Gu world along with those greedy Pan Yu world scums!"

Yu Meng shouted angrily, "We want to ensure the success, but that doesn't mean that you and the world you represent are necessary!"

Ji Hao was stroking the horns of a fire dragon with his fingers, making the fire dragon gasp loudly for air. The dragon breathed out thin streaks of flame from its nostrils while baring its teeth towards those ferocious-looking creatures in the light screen.

Another while later, Ji Hao responded coldly, "It's a very attractive offer. Joining you to destroy those top-grade nobles who are threatening Pa Gu world... very attractive. But, how can I trust you? And, the same question, how much can I and Pan Gu world get from this?"

This time, Yu Meng was silent for quite a while.

Trust, what a big issue! Could Ji Hao trust Yu Meng? Did he dare to trust Yu Meng? Yu Meng believed that if he were Ji Hao, he wouldn't trust a stranger who suddenly showed up and offered to

ally either.

Not to mention the fact that Ji Hao and Yu Meng should be archenemies. In Pan Gu world, Yu Dynasty, which had the Liang Zhu City as a hub, and the alliance of human clans based in Pu Ban City, were sworn enemies. The blood hatred between the Yu Clan and the humankind could never be erased.

In this essential point of time when Pan Yu world leaders gathered armies and prepared to launch a full invasion to Pan Gu world, as a human being, how could Ji Hao trust Yu Meng, who was a member of Yu Clan? At this moment of life or death, which could cause a world-changing effect, who dared to, could, or would trust an enemy?

Suddenly, the light screen trembled, then Yu Meng's deep voice could be heard, "I don't know how to make you trust me. I can only let you make your own decision. Perhaps, you will reconsider my offer after you see what I am going to show you. I hope that you can remember this, you are facing a rotten world, rotten people...But, at the same time, this is an unimaginably powerful world, and these people can make you despair."

The light screen shook suddenly. The desert was gone, replaced by a small hall which appeared to be shabby, based on the exaggeratedly luxurious lifestyle of Yu Clan nobles.

The floor of this hall was paved with ordinary white jade, and the walls were actually cast from bronze. The candlesticks, lamp holders in the hall were also made from regular bronze. In the alliance of human clan, such a building could be counted as a luxurious one, but to Yu Clan nobles, this could only serve as a temporary servants' room.

Yu Meng was wearing a strangely styled golden armor and a blood-red cloak, standing in the hall with bared feet. He was picking up a golden bead from the ground, which looked just like the one placed in front of Ji Hao. The golden bead became a

blooming flower, and he calmly put the golden flower on a shelf by a candlestick, then lit up a few white candles.

A sizzling noise started as an invisible magic seal in the hall was triggered. Following a dazzling light, fire sparks flashed into this hall from the door's directions. After a couple of breaths, a ground-shaking bang could be heard, and next, a defensive screen which was composed from thirty-six layers of formations was broken, then a shrill voice echoed through the hall.

"Vulgar...lowly, low-grade noble...Why are you hiding here?"

Following this voice, a Yu Clan young girl walked in with small steps. Her head was held strangely high, such that her chin was almost pointing at the sky. She was wearing a exaggerate blood-red billowing dress that was decorated with extremely complicated black rose patterns, having her arms and shoulders bared.

A few Yu Clan young men and about ten muscular Jia Clan warriors followed the girl into the hall, surrounding her for protection.

The girl was holding an exquisite hand fan, which was made from an unknown type of crystal. Swinging the hand fan in extremely small oscillations but at an extremely high frequency, the girl narrowed her pair of slim, upturning eyes, seeming to be quite mean. Slightly curving a mouth corner down, she threw a sideways glance at Yu Meng and said, "Vulgar, what are you doing? What are you hiding? Are you doing an unpresentable thing here? Or, do you have woman hidden in here?"

The few Yu Clan young men rushed to the central area of the hall while laughing as they kicked a folding screen which was placed behind Yu Meng, made from colorful marbles, making it fall to the ground. While giggling and chatting, they searched through the entire hall, then shrugged and shook their heads to the girl.

The girl's sour face was eased quite a lot after that. She then proudly looked at Yu Meng and continued yelling coldly, "I am

asking you questions. Are you mute now?"

Ji Hao was watching what was happening in the light screen with interest. Yu Meng was the ruler of a hundred worlds after all. Even though the hundred worlds ruled by him and his family were all desert worlds, poor and infertile, and most of them were weak, but no matter how, he was the ruler of a whole hundred worlds!

Through the light screen, through the measureless distance, Ji Hao actually felt the terrifying scorching power from Yu Meng. That was the power of deserts. Based on Ji Hao's experiences, Yu Meng was much stronger than Blood Crown. Blood Crown was like a tender beautiful flower blooming in a greenhouse; it looked gorgeous, but a cold airstream could make it wither immediately. Unlike him, Yu Meng was like a wild dog's tail grass, with a thriving life-force. If one put the dog's tail grass and the flower together, the grass would drain the flower's life-force within a short span of time, then take its life away.

Yu Meng was seriously powerful, while the girl who broke into his hall was at the level of Magus Kings at most. The Yu Clan young men and Jia Clan warriors surrounding her were slightly stronger than her, but not so much!

"Shouldn't you just slap her to death?" Ji Hao knitted his brows. He thought of Zhu Rong Tianming, who used to put him in difficult situations a long time ago...With Yu Meng's power and strength, he should slap the girl to death, shouldn't he?

"Eh!" Seeing what happened next, Ji Hao and the group of Gold Crow elders in the hall widened their eyes and stood up from their seats in shock.

In the light screen, Yu Meng politely kneeled before the girl with a twisted smile, put his forehead heavily against the ground and said, "Dear Miss Lanyu...What can I help?"

Lanyu snorted coldly as she raised her head high.

In the East Emperor Palace, Su gave a deep growl and kneeled towards Yu Meng in the light screen, knees thudding loudly against the ground.

# Chapter 1734: Bloody Dignity

Su kneeled on the ground while twitching slightly, with blood veins bulging under his dark skin one after another. A scorching death power began spreading from his body. From the backside of his neck, black, metal-lustred eagle feathers slowly grew out, standing on his skin like sharp arrows.

Ji Hao covered Su's body with spirit power, sensing the wrath in his heart and the desire to destroy everything. As his master, his god, Divine King Yu Meng actually kneeled under the weak woman's feet.

Ji Hao felt the sense of humiliation in Su's heart.

In the light screen, Lanyu walked to Yu Meng and squatted, lifting Yu Meng's chin with her hand fan. Slightly tilting her head, she looked at Yu Meng's dark-skinned face and said, "Bumpkin, dark bumpkin who looks so dirty and stingy...Poor Lanxi, she's marrying to such a... bloody bumpkin!"

Lanyu smiled, raised her head, and asked the few Yu Clan men, "Have you ever seen a noble with dark skin? We have one here!"

The few Yu Clan young men laughed almost hysterically, that they couldn't help but bend their bodies forward and backward, even shedding tears from their erect eyes. They pointed at Yu Meng, expiring with laughter.

Yu Meng kneeled on the ground, remaining polite and silent, letting Lanyu make frivolous remarks about his brows, eyes, nose, and mouth.

"Teeth are neat and clean...I thought you may have some shredded meat between your teeth...Just like the few three-headed dogs I am keeping. They just can't get their teeth clean after eating." Lanyu gently stroked Yu Meng's face with her tender little hand. Her palm went down through his neck, slowly through his

muscular chest and abdomen.

"Dear Miss Lanyu!" Yu Meng's face blushed a deep pink. Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and widened his eyes with great interest. That pinkness on Yu Meng's face was the power of death condensed from the hatred which belonged to millions of lives he slaughtered. An intent of killing intent rose from Yu Meng's heart!

However, Lanyu didn't understand what that pinkness meant. She giggled while squeezing his muscles, then covered half of her face and pretended to be shy. "Ahyaya, you're not bad as a man...Lucky Lanxi, she always has a good appetite. Perhaps, you can satisfy her?"

Yu Meng clenched his fists tightly. As he took a deep breath, the pinkness on his face faded. That death power attained by slaughtering millions of creatures was restrained and well-controlled. Therefore, Lanyu didn't feel the great danger hiding in it.

Lanyu stood up and laughed with a hissing voice while looking at Yu Meng in a weird, indescribable way, "Bumpkin, you're stupid and dirty indeed, but I heard that you bumpkins are like animals, that you always have a... 'brute force'!" She giggled.

"If you were not Lanxi's fiancé, I'd certainly try your 'brute force'!" Said Lanyu slowly, "Shame, those bloody elders...Alright, after Lanxi has tasted you, I'll talk to her about this. Perhaps, I'll...have a chance after you two get married..."

Lanyu giggled flirtatiously while the few Yu Clan young men stared viciously at Yu Meng, as if he had murdered their fathers. One Yu Clan young men even put his hand on the hilt of his sword, seeming ready to challenge Yu Ming at any moment.

Yu Meng kneeled on the ground without saying a word, like a statue.

Finally, Lanyu was satisfied by Yu Meng's attitude. She stood up

and continued, "Tonight, there will be a banquet to welcome you... bumpkins who returned with your armies! I'm delivering a message from Lanxi, that tonight, you must pretend to not know her...She doesn't want to talk to a bumpkin right in front of that many true nobles!"

Quivering slightly, Lanyu continued as if she were surprised by her own words, "I understand her. Her mother is a concubine indeed, but after all, she's a member of my family, and many beautiful young noble boys are obsessed with her, right? She's not as good as I am, but she will be one of the most beautiful flowers in the banquet. If she has anything to do with a bumpkin...how shameful would that be?"

"Therefore, even though those old people have decided to let Lanxi marry you, you are not allowed to get close to her before the wedding. You can't talk to her, or destroy her perfect image in the eyes of true nobles. Otherwise, you and your family will be expecting a punishment!"

Lanyu threatened Yu Meng in a rude tone, then reached out her right hand and gently crooked her little finger.

Yu Meng smiled as he raised his head and clapped his hands. Following his move, a two-feet-squared golden box quietly appeared in his hands. He opened the box, releasing a blinding glow of treasures. A glowing mist flew out of the box like water, spreading on the ground while glistening.

Merely ten objects were contained in the box, all rare and precious pieces of jewelry, exquisite as naturally crafted artworks. Lanyu threw a glimpse at the pieces of jewelry in the box, curved up her lips to give a faint smile, and said, "Alright, it's not bad for you bumpkins to have these."

Turning around, Lanyu chuckled and walked out while swinging her little hand fan.

The few Yu Clan men immediately followed behind her like flies

behind a piece of rotten meat. They tried their best to fawn on her.

A Jia Clan warrior walked to Yu Meng, bent his waist, and grabbed over the golden box in Yu Meng's hands while giving him an unfriendly threatening glance. Yu Meng responded with a dry laugh. He took out a bag and picked up a few pieces dark-yellow crystals from it, showing them to this Jia Clan warrior and handing over the bag.

The group of Jia Clan warriors glanced at each other and nodded in satisfaction. Carrying the golden box and the bag, they rushed out of the hall in large steps, following behind Lanyu.

Yu Meng let out a deep, deep breath, then a red light flashed across his face.

He stood up and turned around, casting a magic to seal off the entire hall. Afterward, he began talking with a frosty voice, "Dear Emperor Ji Hao, are you still doubting our honesty? Look, in front of those great nobles, we, 'bumpkins', what are we?"

"Power is not the only thing that we're striving for...We need dignity more!"

"Damned dignity!" Yu Meng wielded his arm and continued through clenched teeth.

# Chapter 1735: A Banquet in Liang Zhu City

"Dignity, you can't see it, you can't touch it, you can't eat it, nor wear it...But sometimes, you can't leave without it. Without it, you'll feel like walking naked on the street, so twisted, so uncomfortable."

Yu Meng was wearing a luxurious black long robe which was vividly embroidered with scorpions, snakes, eagles, and wolves with purely golden silk threads. He was also holding a pure gold staff, with a giant emerald inlaid on top. Worn on his wrists and ankles were golden bangles, all inlaid with emeralds.

Ji Hao followed behind Yu Meng. He had changed his face, and was dressed in an exotic style. Through a broad path paved with golden bricks, they walked slowly to a magnificent palace which was ablaze with lights. Meanwhile, they had been smilingly looking at the beautiful Yu Clan girls on the road.

Perhaps, the tremendous armies brought high-level Yu Clan beings enough confidence and allowed them to feel that their lives were ensured, that no outside force could threaten their lives. Thus, the pride and extravagance buried deep in the bones of these young Yu Clan nobles now erupted fully.

Numberless young Yu Clan nobles came to Pan Gu world with their family armies for military exploits. They excitedly brought their girlfriends, lovers, female companions, besties...Right near Ji Hao, some gorgeously dressed Yu Clan young men had constantly been surrounded by beautiful young girls, and the air was suffused with perfumes and the strong scents of hormones.

"It's not spring yet, but I smell something like...rutting animals." A group of human maids carefully walked by the golden road as they carried purely golden trays. Ji Hao conveniently picked up a blood-red glass of wine and poured it into his mouth.

Yu Meng glanced at Ji Hao in amazement. "As the spokesman of

the great Dao of a world, your way of talking is as impressive as the venom of rock snakes in Pan Sha world...Great ancestors, you actually came here alone!"

"This is Liang Zhu." Yu Meng put his mouth near Ji Hao's face and continued saying through his gritted teeth, even with a trembling voice, "Earlier today, the highest leaders from seven-thousand, eight-hundred and eighty colony worlds arrived in Pan Gu world with their armies...Their armies are stationed right around this city!"

Taking a deep breath, Yu Meng snorted in a weaker tone, "I allied with you because I want those scums to die, not because I want you to get yourself killed!"

Yu Meng truly wanted to cry now. Two hours ago, Ji Hao suddenly showed up right before his face, intending to attend the welcoming banquet tonight. Yu Meng was scared out of his wits!

Ji Hao had been looking around carelessly. A few non-humankind slaves carried a giant lantern and ran past him. Conveniently, Ji Hao put the empty glass on a non-humankind slave's head, letting it run away with the glass.

"Of course, I'm not here to die. I'm just curious about you. So, I wanted to come here to see exactly what kind of people you are." Ji Hao opened his erect eye and released wisps of scorching hot golden light, which contained hints of death power. "No matter how many colony world leaders are stationed in this city with their armies, I believe that once I want to leave, no one can stop me!"

Yu Meng didn't say another world, but narrowed his eyes and looked at Ji Hao from head to toe, showing an extremely complicated and unspeakable feeling. Ji Hao slapped on Yu Meng's shoulder and chuckled, then continued speaking in a low voice, "Don't even think about betraying me. Otherwise, I'll tell everyone about you colluding with me. If that happens, neither of us can be benefited."

Yu Meng helplessly sighed as he spread his hands and murmured, "Do I look like an idiot? All the way, how many people have seen me attending the banquet along with you? Dear Emperor Ji Hao, do not make a scene in here."

Ji Hao gave a bright grin. He elegantly nodded to a few Yu Clan young girls around him, slightly opening his mouth and exposing his snow-white teeth. His grin was brilliant, and the face he used was handsome, but his exotic dressing style and his slightly darkened skin, which shared a color with Yu Meng's skin, immediately told these girls about this background story.

"Bloody bumpkins!" said a Yu Clan young girl with high cheekbones and thin lips, who looked quite mean. The girl quickly swung her hand fan and even took out a small bottle of perfume, spraying towards Ji Hao.

A thick, violet mist spread out. The Yu Clan girl threw Ji Hao a sideways glance. "Sisters, be careful! I heard that these bumpkins from colonies...Sometimes, they only shower once a year. Oh, my great heaven, I will die if their hands touch me!"

The few Yu Clan girls giggled with shrill voices like hens which were laying eggs. Their high-pitched voices could be heard from a long distance away. Hearing them, quite some nobles from Pan Yu world laughed as well while looking down on Ji Hao so proudly.

Yu Meng unwittingly lowered his head, his face darkened as he remained silent.

Behind him, his group of subordinates lowered their heads too. Facing these high-level nobles from Pan Yu world, Yu Meng's people were clearly not confident enough, that they even slowed their breaths down.

It was not just Yu Meng and his people who acted like this. Among all people walking on the broad road, at least eighty-percent of Yu Clan nobles had their heads lowered embarrassedly and cautiously while they stayed absolutely silent. Same as Yu

Meng, they were 'vulgars' from colony worlds. Back in the worlds they ruled, they stood high above the masses, but facing the high-level ancestors from Pan Yu world, they didn't even have the courage to raise their heads.

What a twisted society, twisted rules...! Ji Hao sneered in his head. 'Aren't these high-level nobles afraid that this might cause internal division?' Ji Hao wondered.

He glanced at the west. Over there, Priest Mu and Priest Hua had been fighting intensely against the ten saints from Pan Yu world, with the defensive formations based on the peaceful world. Priest Hua and Priest Mu were in home court advantage, while the ten saints were in absolute advantage of number. The ten saints were fighting with their true powers without using clones, but being suppressed by the great Dao of Pan Gu world, they weren't able to defeat Priest Hua and Priest Mu within a short span of time.

As long as the ten saints didn't return to Liang Zhu City, Ji Hao had nothing to fear. Thinking of the ten saints, Ji Hao sighed slightly, "Because of those saints, you...eh?"

Yu Meng's face twitched. He lowered his voice, snorted in anger, then responded, "Please, do not pick up a dangerous topic like this in here...Right now, we are a group of bloody bumpkins. We need to act like lowly bumpkins."

While talking, they walked to the gate of the magnificent palace. The banquet would take place in here.

# Chapter 1736: Stiff Hierarchy

In the vast, deep hall, under the lights which shone as bright as the sunlight, metallic long tables were placed in perfectly straight lines, surrounded by maids, who were dressed as prettily as butterflies, and large groups of Yu Clan men in black uniforms and with serious expressions, who patrolled in the hall.

Seeing Yu Meng and his people, a Yu Clan man in a black uniform walked over with stiff, puppet-like steps, carefully asking Yu Meng for his name, family name, the name of the family that his ancestors belonged to, and the names of the worlds currently ruled by his family. Afterward, he took out a fist-sized jade slip and looked up in it.

"That's right...White Flower Skylark Family, a vassal family of Ado River Family, ninth-grade. Your original family name is Molo, and you're the conquerors of Pan Sha world and the other ninety-nine worlds...By conquering so many worlds, you earned the special permission to use the noble family name 'Yu'. Lord Yu Meng and his thirty-five people, please follow me to your seats!"

Yu Meng silently nodded to the man, and the man responded with a faint smile, but had an obvious scorn flashing across his eyes. He turned around and guided Yu Meng, Ji Hao, and the others into the hall, with that accurate but stiff pace.

Roughly speaking, Pan Yu world families were divided into nine grades. The families at grades one to three were large and powerful, true power-holders, and were all named after the famous rivers in Pan Yu world.

The name of Yu Meng's suzerain family was Ado River. Ado River was a very famous, vast river in the topmost continent of Pan Gu world, ranked top five in both terms of drainage volume and area. As a family named after such a great river, without a doubt, Ado River Family had a sublime status in Pan Yu world.

The families at grades four to six were the stabilizing force of the entire Pan Yu world. Most of the famous commanders, masters, and artists in Pan Yu world were born in these families. These families were named after the famous peaks and mountain ranges in Pan Yu world.

The families graded as seven to nine were literally low and small in Pan Yu world. Most of these families were vassal families of higher-grade noble families, and they barely had any liberty. Their territories, possessions, lives, all in all, everything they had belonged to their suzerain families.

People from the suzerain families held power over the lives and properties of these small families. They demanded everything they wanted from these lower-grade families...But in return, they provided these small families with nothing but nominal protection, and the leftover resources that they didn't want anymore.

These lower-grade families were named after animals, which would be embossed on their family emblems. The more powerful a lower-grade family was, a stronger creature they would be named after.

White Flower Skylark was a fragile kind of bird in Pan Yu world. These birds fed on grass seeds, and could barely defend themselves.

Yu Meng's family was named after this kind of bird. Apparently, even among ninth-grade small families, his family was the weakest type. It was reasonable for a family like this to fall because of its weakness, and be eventually forced to leave their hometown for an expedition journey.

While following the man in a black suit to the prearranged seats, countless thoughts flashed across Ji Hao's mind.

Even though Yu Meng was from the White Flower Skylark Family, a ninth-grade small family, he now ruled a whole hundred

worlds, and had tens of billions of elite warriors like Su under his command. However, the power-holders from Pan Yu world still treated him like a lower-grade being, as if they could still take his life away at any moment they wanted...Ji Hao could not understand what was going on in these high-grade Yu Clan nobles' heads.

From a distance away, Ji Hao saw tens of long tables at the end of the hall. These tables were cast from gold, inlaid with countless pearls and gemstones. Under the bright lights, these tens of tables shone with dazzling brilliance.

Gathered around these tables were some tall, luxuriously dressed, handsome, god-like Yu Clan men. Every single slight movement they made described their aristocracy and elegance. Ji Hao could even sense the pride releasing from every single pore of theirs. The patterns embossed on the family emblems, which were worn on their left chests and carved out of precious crystals, were all rapidly flowing or mist-covered great rivers.

Abruptly, Yu Meng pointed at a middle-aged, golden-crowned Yu Clan man among these people, and said, "Yu Di, the current leader of Ado River Family. My fiancee, Lanxi, is an illegitimate daughter of a distance cousin of his...You see, this time, in order to gain a better control of my family, they did make some efforts."

His voice was low, such that only Ji Hao could hear him, and was filled with grievance. With that voice, he murmured, "A sl*t that every man can be with is going to become my wife, and one of our children will become the next leader of my family...When we have kids, who will be able to tell me if I am truly the father?"

Ji Hao patted Yu Meng on a shoulder while glancing at Yu Di.

'Yu', this word had a special meaning in the society of Yu Clan people. In Pan Yu world or colony worlds, anyone who managed to lay a finger on the power of great Dao and grow powerful enough would be gifted with the title 'Yu'.

Under the same title, as the ruler of one-hundred worlds, Yu Meng could only stand here and look at Yu Di from such a long distance away, without being able to go anywhere near him.

The man in a black suit stopped waking, pointed at a long bronze table, and said with a bland, emotionless tone, "Here, the seats of White Flower Skylark family. Please remember that without permission, you are not allowed to step in the frontal area, but can only stay in the bronze table zone...Please keep respecting high-grade families!"

Ji Hao looked around. In the vast hall, about three-hundred less dazzling golden tables were placed behind the tens of golden tables with pearls and gemstones. The golden table zone could hold nearly ten-thousand people.

Beside the golden tables, nearly two-thousand silver tables were in the hall, surrounding the golden table zone.

The number of bronze tables in the hall was the largest, higher than thirty-thousand. The bronze table zone was separated from the golden table zone and silver table zone by a, hundreds of meters wide area. A line of Yu Clan men in black suits stood in this area, hands resting on their lower abdomen while looking at these lower-grade family members with faint, frosty smiles on their faces.

Their expressions were weird. Their eyes were filled with disgust when they looked at Yu Meng and the other lower-grade family people, as if looking at a group of wild beasts which were covered in excrements.

# Chapter 1737: What He Saw, What He Heard

The broad hall was filled with people, but well-organized.

The striking grading system made all attendees stay in their own zones. People from lower-grade families had no chance to approach the ones from higher families, while higher-grade family people had no intention to come to the lower-grade zone.

Beautiful maids walked in the hall in straight lines. Their long dresses were like clouds. Based on appearances and heights, they were clearly divided into a few grades.

The trays carried by the higher-grade maids were carved out of colorful gemstones. The tableware contained in the trays were purely golden. Even tiny wine cups were inlaid with large gemstones. These maids served the top-grade nobles attentively in the core area of the golden table zone.

The medium grade maids carried golden trays which contained silver tableware. The pearls and gemstones inlaid in the exquisitely polished silver tableware were smaller in size than the ones inlaid in the golden tableware. The wines and deserts on these silver trays were a grade lower than the ones on the golden trays.

Ji Hao found out that even the tableware served on the silver trays carried by lower-grade maids were clearly divided into three grades. The top-grade tableware was made from copper, medium-grade ones from bronze, while the lowest grade ones were made from brass...The ones placed in front of Yu Meng and his people, who were from the White Flower Skylark Family, were brass!

The brass tableware was inlaid with a few cheap crystal and rubies. Affected by the opulent and luxurious living style of Yu Clan people, they were perfectly polished and decorated with beautiful embossments, even be counted as artwork. However, in comparison, the brass tableware looked extremely poor.

"You're treated... so differently!" Ji Hao picked up a large brass wine cup and took a sip of the wine which was poured for him by a maid.

The wine tasted not bad, with an aroma of fresh grapes. It was clearly freshly brewed, and could never be compared with the aged wines for the silver table zone and the golden table zone.

This should be a large 'get-together' banquet, but the attendees were actually treated so differently. Ji Hao couldn't help but shake his head and sigh — No matter how, Yu Meng was a powerful being who ruled a whole hundred worlds, with a mentionable individual strength. He shouldn't be treated like this, should he?

Yu Meng and his people sat in their seats with their face darkened, without saying a word but gulping the wine. Their eyes were all fixed on the surface of the table. Unlike them, Ji Hao had been curiously looking around, especially at the silver table zone, which was hundreds of meters away. He saw more and more Yu Clan, Jia Clan, and Xiu Clan people gathered around in that zone, but none of them were as strong as Yu Meng's people.

The non-humankind nobles gathered in the silver table zone were in an awkward place. Their lives were guaranteed, with nothing to worry about. Therefore, these people didn't need to leave Pan Yu world for expedition. Even if they might have a chance to go on expeditionary trips to other worlds, they would go as commanders, under the leadership of the members of their suzerain families and with the family armies. They would have clear destinations.

The conquered worlds would be ruled directly by their suzerain families. At the very most, these silver-table-zone people would serve as medium-level to high-level officers in these worlds, without a chance to control them entirely and dig into the great Dao of nature of these worlds. Therefore, Ji Hao immediately discovered this 'fault' that existed in the strict hierarchy system of Pan Yu world, which was like a great rift valley.

Among the people from the families graded four to six, world rulers titled 'Yu' rarely existed. Which meant, these families weren't as powerful as their suzerain families, neither were as strong as those lower-grade families which took the risk to leave their hometowns for expeditions and earned harvests.

Yu Meng would be able to easily slaughter all silver-table-zone people on the scene, all by himself.

Nevertheless, these medium-level families outranked the lower-grade families by far, and had been greedily making demands to the lower-grade families along with their suzerain families.

Countless thoughts flashed across Ji Hao's mind as he looked around with narrowed eyes. Suddenly, he saw some familiar faces walking into the hall.

Led by the member of the twelve families in power in Yu Dynasty in Pan Gu world, a large group of people walked in with sullen faces. The faces of a few emperors in power were twisted badly.

Ji Hao watched them walk in, then being guided to the edge of the bronze table zone by a few men in black suits, and settled down in a corner.

Once, some Yu Clan nobles from Pan Yu world told Ji Hao that the ancestors of the twelve families in power in Yu Dynasty were all from fallen small families. Some of them weren't even nobles. They took the risk, formed an expedition troop, and started a life-risking journey in the Chaos. After a long vagrant life, they luckily found Pan Gu world.

Judging by the locations of their seats, their families were truly low-grade. But after all, they used to be the higher rulers of Yu Dynasty. Before the few saints from Pan Yu world discovered Pan Gu world, they domineered over Pan Gu world and allowed themselves to do whatever they wanted. Now, they became the lowest, most underappreciated ones among their own people.

Ji Hao poked Yu Meng's rib area with a finger, then pointed at Yemo Luoye and the other Yu Dynasty emperors, and asked, "Do you know them? The emperors in power from Yu Dynasty in Pan Gu world!"

Yu Meng turned around, glanced at them, then gibed, "These idiots! They will end up in a much more miserable life than ours! Anyhow, the one-hundred worlds we controlled are truly under our control. Ado River Family can only rob those worlds through our hands."

"These small family idiots... They spent such a long time, but none of them managed to touch the great Dao of Pan Gu world and earn the title of 'Yu'...Regarding the things that happened or will happen in Pan Gu world, they have no right of speech. They will be devoured, then disappear for good. Honestly, they may vanish suddenly at any moment."

"As for that girl...Perhaps, many years later, she can be found in a secret palace belonging to some young men from a large family."

During their conversation, Ji Hao and Yu Meng saw a few Yu Clan young men walk to Yemo Luoye from the silver table zone while laughing.

# Chapter 1738: Borrow A Nest, Lay An Egg

Obviously, Yemo Luoye and the people surrounding her turned quite nervous.

Yemo Luoye instinctively sensed the bad intention held by the few silver-table-zone Yu Clan young men. She was just like a rabbit which discovered its natural enemies once it saw their shadows flashing on the ground.

Surrounding her were the people from the twelve families in power in Yu Dynasty. The twelve families in power had become a community with a common figure. Therefore, at the moment, they had no choice but stand together side by side, and combine their powers to defend themselves from the storm. The beautiful Yemo Luoye attracted too many lascivious men, which would be a huge trouble to this small community.

Ji Hao looked at the few silver-table-zone Yu Clan young men with interest, who were clearly a little drunk. Their faces were blushed, and even their nostrils were expanded a little. 'Go, go... Harass Yemo Luoye, go bring troubles to the twelve families in power!' Ji Hao wished so.

Ji Hao was curious about the current strength of the twelve families in power. They had dominated Pan Gu world for so many years, and they never stopped exploring this world. Ji Hao refused to believe that these twelve families would give up on Pan Gu world so willingly. After all, their powers had soared.

He was expecting some twist in the situation.

He always felt that the current situation in Pan Gu world was chaotic, and some people had been making efforts to worsen this chaotic situation. But, these people were smart, that only some slight vague traces were left behind them.

Ji Hao had been expecting turbulences and the final outburst.

Before that, he would try his best to bring every single one of them more troubles. He had the confidence to hold the situation despite all the chaos, and to gain enough from this messed up situation. He was even more confident about his own safety.

The few Yu Clan young men walked up to Yemo Luoye. One of them lowered his head and said something to Yemo Luoye with laughter.

Hearing him, Yemo Luoye abruptly opened her erect eye, her face blushed. She clenched her teeth while determinedly shaking her head as she gave a reply with a low voice.

Afterward, the few Yu Clan young men dropped their faces. One of them took one step forward and threw a slap to Yemo Luoye's face. From beside her, 'Yemo Tian' darted out and gripped the young man's hand.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows and opened his erect eye, released strands of bright light that only he could see. The light landed on Yemo Tian's body.

That wasn't Yemo Tian. Ji Hao sensed an extremely dark, twisted, and deep soul power from him, but the real Yemo Tian shouldn't have such a power. It was even much greater than Yu Meng's power.

"Poor kid. Does this mean that someone had planted a seed in him long ago?" Turned his eyes away from Yemo Tian, Ji Hao then looked at Master Spirit-slaughter who sat behind Yemo Tian, seeming to be a guard.

In the others' eyes, Master Spirit-slaughter looked simply like a nearly six-meters-tall, golden-skinned muscular man, but in Ji Hao's eyes, his entire body was wrapped in bright colorful glows. And within the glow, flowers had been blooming, with beautiful girls flying and dancing, added with layers of magical images.

"A sky devil, ridiculously strong." Ji Hao nodded and grinned.

The more evil things, the better, the more troublemakers, the better. What a messy situation! The situation was like a potful of mixed congee, and Ji Hao truly wanted to add some croutons or rhubarbs in it to make it worse.

Yu Huo's clone, who was using Yemo Tian's body, cast a few growls at the young men with a deep voice and a dark face. Immediately after that, the faces of the few silver-table-zone young men turned awfully sour. As they glanced at Yemo Tian, the latter showed his left palm. Upon his palm, the hazy figure of Pan Yu's brain quietly emerged. Seeing Pan Yu's brain, the few young men swiftly glimpsed at Yemo Tian as if he were a ghost, and next, they bowed deeply to him, turned around, and walked straight away.

Their families were graded way higher than the twelve Yu Dynasty families in power, but no matter how strong their families were, they could not go against a lucky one who had earned Saint Pan Yu's favor. Therefore, they had no choice but to leave in anger. They had to wait until they found someone powerful enough to rely on, then they would come back to hunt Yemo Luoye, who had caught their attention.

Suddenly, the atmosphere in the hall was stirred up. Some tall and handsome Yu clan young men smilingly stood up and cast their eyes to a side entrance of the gate.

Seven to eight brilliantly dressed Yu Clan young girls with floral crowns walked in while chuckling. They laughed and chatted with silvery voices, as if they didn't even see the others. They were light on their feet, seeming to be even dancing. Showering under the bright lamplight, their snow-white lower legs occasionally exposed from under their dress hemlines, leaving white afterimages behind.

About twenty well-dressed Yu Clan young men followed behind them, smilingly attentively and echoing their words.

Ji Hao had a sensitive hearing, which allowed him to hear what

these good-looking Yu Clan young men and girls said through the conversions happening between thousands of people and from hundreds of meters away. They were discussing the newest poem created by a famous noble poet from Pan Yu world. Occasionally, some of them would stop walking to repeat a line of the poem with an aria-like tone, then win a series of acclaim from the others.

Ji Hao picked up his wine cup and took a large gulp What the hell? Did these Yu Clan young people know that they were here in Pan Gu world to fight, and to kill or be killed? Looking at these featherbrained, careless young nobles, Ji Hao truly wanted to cause them some troubles right now.

He looked around and found that this great hall was barely under defense, and everyone was laughing, chatting, and drinking.

If he now released the tens of millions of blood sea ghosts and half-dragon warriors hiding in his sleeves ... he should be able to deliver a massacre in this place, right?

An intent of killing arose from his heart, but abruptly, he heard something quite interesting. He hurriedly threw a quick glance at Yu Meng and found that Yu Meng's face was even darker than Su's skin.

Among the group of young nobles who walked in just now, three young men were chasing after a girl who had a pinkness on her face.

"Lanxi, will you really marry that bumpkin?"

"Great Red Sun, I cannot understand this! What are Ado River Family people thinking? How can that bloody bumpkin deserve you?"

"Oh, my heart is breaking. Thinking that your beautiful body is going to be touched by a stinky bumpkin...Lanxi, come to my place tonight, will you? Do you remember what I offered you? My family is willing to double the price for you to carry my child!"

"Ignore this stingy guy. Lanxi, my family can triple the price that I offered you last time!"

"My family will raise the price by six folds if you are pregnant with my kid before you marry that bumpkin. Besides, we will raise a strong army for your father to pay a safe expedition trip, and allow him to have his private territory, right under his direct control!"

"How about that, Lanxi? That's not a low price."

"So interesting...! Why are they in such a rush to gift their children to you?" Looking at Yu Meng's extremely sullen face, Ji Hao slowly asked a question.

# Chapter 1739: Secret Code of Law

Ji Hao grinned in a very evil, unkind way. He kept talking evilly and unkindly until Yu Meng had blood veins bulged from his forehead with wrath, "I thought it's a common thing, that for the family interest, Ado River Family planned to rope you in with a worthless illegitimate daughter."

Ji Hao shrugged and rudely threw the wine cup to the table, then continued, "But, they are also going to give you a son, that's way too friendly. Hah, marry a daughter to you, with a son carried in her belly...Are they preparing to swallow your White Flower Skylard Family?"

Yu Meng clenched his fingers. Ji Hao even heard the creaking noises from his bone joints.

As the highest ruler of a whole hundred worlds, the Divine King of countless local creatures from the worlds he ruled, Yu Meng possessed the greatest power and the highest status back in his place. He was used to standing high above the masses, to having hundreds of responses to his one single call, to be powerful and supreme.

Ado River Family forced him to marry to an illegitimate daughter...

That was acceptable to Yu Meng. After all, Lanxi had the noble blood of Ado River family flowing inside her body, even though she was just an illegitimate daughter. According to Yu Clan people' social rules, even as an illegitimate daughter, Lanxi's noble bloodline made her far more aristocratic than Yu Meng, by a thousand folds, maybe ten-thousand folds. Therefore, in their marriage, Yu Meng would be the one who might gain extra advantages.

Indeed, Lanxi's reputation was not quite fair, and she had been with a relatively large number of men before she married Yu

Meng, but that didn't matter. Who among the young Yu Clan nobles wasn't like that?

Not to mention Lanxi, Yu Meng himself might have forgotten about the total number of the girls he had slept with. Apart from the lovers whom he used to maintain long-term relationships with, he also had uncountable one-night partners. Therefore, Yu Meng couldn't care less about Lanxi's bad reputation. According to the Code of Law of Yu Clan, the sons of Yu Meng and Lanxi would be qualified to propose to any girl from any top-grade family, because of their half Ado River bloodline.

In this way, three generations later, a male descendant with a noble, top-grade-family bloodline would emerge from Yu Meng's family. Thus, White Flower Skylark Family would naturally become a high-grade family. Even if they could only make it to grade three, that would already be much, much higher than their current grade.

Improving the family bloodline, then raising the family status, during this process, the Flower Skylark Family would surely have to pay a giant price. But compared to the rise of the family status, everything would the worthy. But, this whole thing couldn't include Lanxi marrying to Yu Meng as a pregnant woman while Yu Meng wasn't the father! And, with all kinds of secret magic created by Yu Clan people, Lanxi's baby could be a boy, if that baby was expected to be one.

According to the Code of Law of Yu Clan, if Yu Meng and his direct relatives all died, the kid that Lanxi gave birth to after she married Yu Meng would have the first right of inheritance of Yu Meng's family. At such a time, if some man stepped up to announce that Lanxi's son was his illegitimate son, and proved it through a paternity testing, this man would attain the administration authority of Yu Meng's family!

This ridiculous rule was seriously included in the Cold of Law of Yu Clan, as an admitted, powerful law in Yu Clan society. No one

would ever question this law. If this truly happened, the others would only be jealous of that man, 'That boy was so smart! He took the possessions of some poor guy's family so easily, and brought such a shame on that family. Brilliant!'

Blood Crown had the same plan. If he weren't so unlucky to run into Ji Hao, ending up dead in the middle of his plan, even accidentally guiding Yu Huo and the other unstoppable monsters from Pan Yu world to here, he would do exactly the same thing. As a 'crown', Blood Crown hooked up with Yemo Tian's mother and successfully planted Yemo Tian in the Yemo Family. When the time was ripe, he would wipe out all direct relatives of Yemo Family, then reasonably attain an administrative authority of everything Yemo Family had. After that, Yemo Tian would become his claw, reaching into Pan Gu world.

This perfect, almost successful plan ceased suddenly, all because of Blood Crown's death.

Even worse, Yemo Tian became a clone of Yu Hua. His soul was eaten, and body was occupied.

Blood Crown's plan of 'reasonably, legally invading Pan Gu world' had failed, but the few young Yu Clan nobles around Lanxi had still been making new offers to her, without giving up. Every one of them was trying his best to make Lanxi agree to be pregnant with his child.

Delightfully looking at Yu Meng's twisted face, Ji Hao said slowly, "Annoying indeed, hah? Is that girl your fianceé? This is truly a creative plan. They can't wait to put a future inheritor in her belly to swallow your family, eh?"

With a gloomy look, Yu Meng responded, "This is not a rare thing. We have many laws that made our behavior very weird and evil to outsiders. According to the highest law included in the Senior Code of Law, all conspiracies can be ignored, as long as no one discovers them...All successful evil plans will be righteous and

just."

"Including murder?" Ji Hao raised his brows.

"Including murder!" Yu Meng looked at Ji Hao as if he were looking at a 'bumpkin and said, "How strange is this question of yours. Is murder a big deal? Each year in Pan Yu world, in every family, from the top-grade ones to the lowest ones, some people will die suddenly. Who would dig into their death? No one, unless the dead ones were too important to be neglected!"

Shrugging like Ji Hao just did, Yu Meng went on with a bland voice, "The Secret Code of Law is protecting all of us. As long as we do things clean and smart, and do not let our plans come to light, all schemes, conspiracies, and dirty tricks are allowed."

Ji Hao continued looking at Yu Meng, as if absorbed in thoughts. Later, he threw a sideways glance at Lanxi and the other nobles, and said, "So, under the protection of the Secret Code of Law, those people are going to give you a son, then get you and all your families killed and swallow your family properties...Are you gonna let that happen?"

Yu Meng took a deep breath and replied, "Lanxi is a b*tch. Since she dared to do this, it seems that her father prepared to cast aside the interest of Ado River Family and work for himself. Indeed, marrying me and drawing me over to their side would make my family a dependency of Ado River Family forever. But, how could these ever be compared with her father owning one or even a couple of worlds as his very own territory?"

"The territories owned by the members of top-grade families aren't the same as our territories."

Yu Meng snorted with a faint smile, then cast his sunken eyes to Ji Hao and said, "If I want to pay my homage to the Secret Code of Law for once, will people be willing to help me?"

# Chapter 1740: The Power of Magus Curse

Sensing the fierceness and cruelty in Yu Meng's eyes, Ji Hao grinned. That was right. As the highest ruler of a hundred worlds, Yu Meng shouldn't be such a nice soft guy, even though he had been restrained by all kinds of rules from Pan Yu world all these years.

Sometimes, people could be like the lava inside a volcano, highly restrained. The lava might solidify into a rock, becoming a part of the cold volcano. Or, it could boil and erupt out of the volcano vent, even blowing up the volcano vent and making itself a higher, greater volcano.

Obviously, Yu Meng was the second kind of lava.

"Wait a minute, wait a minute." Ji Hao smilingly nodded, picked up the wine cup, then continued, "Secret Code of Law? So, you'll be innocent as long as nobody catches you? I like this kind of code of law a lot."

Lanxi had been 'flirting' with the few Yu Clan young men. More specifically, they were bargaining. Lanxi wanted to sell herself for a better price, and the few young men had been running an intense competition. They wanted to 'purchase' Lanxi and the territories and people of White Flower Skylark Family at an affordable price.

Abruptly, Lanxi raised her head and saw Yu Meng, who had been staring at her.

The lady knitted her brows and slightly opened her erect eye. A beam of cold light flashed across her erect eye, filled with disgust. Soon, she filled her face up with a sweet smile, turned around, and affectionately grabbed a Yu Clan young man's sleeve.

Watching Lanxi pull another man's sleeve intentionally with such a flirtatious manner and right in front of her fiancé, Ji Hao was shocked by the family education of Ado River Family young

people, and the living style of the entire Yu Clan.

A few men in black suits noticed Yu Meng's gaze. They walked over and shielded Lanxi from Yu Meng's cold and brutal gaze. "Don't cause any trouble, bumpkin." A man warned Yu Meng with a frosty voice. This man was wearing a badge which was embroidered with a longsword, wrapped in coiling thorns. This badge should be representing a powerful department of discipline of Yu Clan.

Yu Meng spread his hands and responded calmly, "I won't. White Flower Skylark Family people are the best rule flowers."

The man in a black suit curved up a lip corner and sneered, "You better be. Don't cause troubles to your own family, neither to us. Our Great Censorate is responsible for the maintenance of order for this banquet. If anyone dares to bring us a trouble, we will be glad to send him to the dark prison in the Great Censorate."

Lanyu, who had extorted some precious pieces of jewelry from Yu Meng earlier this day, also walked into the hall. The pieces of jewelry were now worn on her body, making her shine resplendently. With those exotic pieces of jewelry, a long golden dress, and the golden beautiful patterns painted on the backs of her hands, she looked just like a god from another world, beautiful, charming, and noble.

Numberless Yu Clan young men sighed in amazement. Even the few who had been fawning on Lanxi immediately turned away from her and came to Lanyu's side. They told Lanyu their names and the names of their families, eagerly ingratiating themselves to Lanyu's favor.

With a charming smile, Lanyu chuckled from time to time with a sharp voice. Surrounded by countless Yu Clan young men, she was like a blooming flower that emitted a strong aroma, attracting all kinds of butterflies, bees, and flies.

The few men in black suits were also attracted by Lanyu. They

turned back and slowly moved towards her.

A few maids walked pass the group of Yu Clan young men gathered around Lanyu. Their large dresses swept across the young men' bodies, and their hair even floated past a few young men' faces. The faint aroma left behind by these maids caught the attention of some young men who had been trying their best to fawn upon Lanyu. The few young men couldn't help but turn around to glance at the maids.

The maids left through the path between the silver table zone and the bronze table zone, passing by Yu Meng's table like a group of butterflies. Ji Hao reached out a hand and cast a spell with a low voice. As he clenched his fingers towards a maid, tens of invisible strands of smells were grasped in his hand. These smells belonged to the tens of Yu Clan young men who were touched by the maid's dress, including the few who attempted to make a 'deal' with Lanxi.

Ji Hao then picked up a large bronze wine cup and filled it with wine. After he sent the strands of smells into the wine cup, the wine began vibrating intensely. Tiny bubbles arose from the bottom of the cup, causing a series of popping noise. Along with the noise, the wine split up, exposing tens of tiny humanoid figures which were condensed from the wine.

These tiny figures were only as big as thumbs, but they were all lifelike. If one looked closer, one would find that they had the exact same faces as some of the group of Yu Clan young men around Lanyu.

"Magical!" Yu Meng, who sat close to Ji Hao, glanced at those tiny figures who had been rolling in Ji Hao's wine cup. With a low voice, he exclaimed, "What are you going to do? Can you kill them in this way? How amazing. My family has no such high-level magic."

"Not magic, this is a curse." Ji Hao smiled and looked at Yu Meng

while explaining, "A secret inherited curse from Southern Wasteland clans in Pan Gu world. I have a shallow knowledge on curses. Many old Southern Wasteland Magi can do this a hundred times more secretly than me, but get a result ten-thousand times fiercer and scarier. I can only do this because I have a great power."

Smilingly nodding to Yu Meng, Ji Hao picked up a bronze table knife and planted it into the cup, conveniently cutting the tiny figures in the cup into pieces. Soon, what was held in his hand became a cup of wine again.

All of a sudden, tens of Yu Clan young men surrounding Lanyu burst into shrill howls as a giant amount of blood erupted from their bodies and enormous wounds appeared on them, as if an invisible giant was cutting them with a tremendous blade. Their limbs fell off their bodies as their bodies were cut into pieces. Some of them even had their heads directly chopped off in this invisible attack.

Blood splashed like fountains, covering Lanyu. Amidst with Lanyu's hysterical, deafening shrieks, tens of young nobles died right on spot. A minute ago, they were so alive and energetic, that even their blood seemed to be replaced by hormones. But now, they lied on the ground in pieces, soaked in their blood. People in the hall began screaming, and the situation immediately turned chaotic.

Ji Hao dropped the table knife, raised his wine cup, and grinned to Yu Meng, who was dumfounded already.

"To the Secret Code of Law!" He said.

"To the Secret Code of Law!" Stiffly, Yu Meng raised his cup as well.

Yu Meng's whole body was cold as ice, while his heart was twitching. He did not know how on earth should he defend himself against such a curse.

# Chapter 1741: Nailhead Seven Arrow Book

"Quiet, Quiet!"

A stately Yu Clan old man walked out of the crowd and poked his golden staff heavily on the ground, causing an ear-piercing buzzing noise. The entire hall quaked slightly as a strong power swept across the soul and body of everyone on the scene, immediately stimulating the spirits of all panicked Yu Clan nobles and calming them down.

"This is just a small situation, not even worth mentioning!" The old man said while opening his erect eye. The pupil in his erect eye was dark-golden, with faintly visible silver threads of light flashing inside. "It seems that the local creatures in this world have given us a small welcoming gift...But, that's alright. Soon, they will learn what true horror is!" This old man continued with a bland smile.

Large groups of men in black suits from the Great Censorate surged into the hall, expertly cleaning the hall without leaving even a stain of blood on the floor. As they sprayed a little special perfume, the scent of blood was covered by a strong floral aroma. After that, everything seemed to go back normal.

Lanyu suffered a palm strike on the back of her neck, as she was covered in blood and frightened so much that she couldn't stop crying and screaming. As a result, she fainted and was then sent out. Ji Hao saw quite a few Great Censorate people surround her. Clearly, she was going to face a serious investigation.

More Great Censorate people came to the hall, that by now, one could see men in black suits everywhere, looking cold and serious. They stared fiercely at everyone in the hall like hunting dogs searching for prey. Anyone in the hall could become their prey.

About ten Yu Clan nobles with serious expressions gathered together, running a discussion with a low voice.

"Yu Dun, the current leader of Ado River Family, is only a 'seal'. But among all alive elderships of Ado River Family, three were 'crowns', nineteen were 'seals', and forty-three were 'staffs'. Therefore, Yu Dun is holding a great hidden power." Yu Meng glanced at the old man who walked out the first to maintain the order of this place, then lowered his voice and said to Ji Hao.

Ji Hao nodded. In Pan Yu world, 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' didn't have lifelong tenures of their titles. Except for death, many situations would cause an alternation of power, making these high-level nobles who controlled the Holy Realm be replaced.

After being relieved from their titles, these former 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' would have all kinds of privileges in Pan Yu world, which would become a part of their family powers, to strengthen the foundations of their families. This was an extremely complicated game of power, that only the top-grade large families had the qualification to take parts in.

Even though Yu Dun was merely a 'seal', Ji Hao clearly saw two 'crowns' standing by his sides. While talking to Yu Dun, these two 'crowns', who seemed to be much younger than him, had been showing considerable respect to him, as they listened to each word he said so carefully. As Yu Meng said, Yu Dun held a great hidden power in his family.

Yu Dun and the other few gathered and discussed for a while, then scattered quickly. They each calmly and quietly called their trusted subordinates and gave a series of orders.

Before long, the hall became noisy again, as if nothing had just happened. Countless Yu Clan young men gathered together, surrounding beautiful girls and making efforts. From a distance away, Ji Hao heard Lanxi's silver laughter once again.

What a strong-minded girl! The sudden death of the few young men who tried so hard to earn her favor didn't affect her at all. She masterly walked between those noble young men, whose eyes were

glowing brightly, arousing their desires while skillfully making sure that no one could take any advantage of her.

"Your fiancée is an expert with men." Ji Hao gave Yu Meng an unkind sneer.

"Your power amazed me, even scared me." Ignoring what Ji Hao said, Yu Meng said slowly, "If you can show me an even greater power, I will be glad to introduce you to a few important allies of mine."

"Isn't what happened just now enough?" Ji Hao looked at Yu Meng, his eyes narrowed.

"What happened just now has shocked me strongly, but to my allies, that may not be good enough!" Said Yu Meng straightforwardly, "If you can show me a greater power, your power would be very important to our future decisions."

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes as well. Future decisions? Regarding their future attitude to Pan Gu world? These 'bumpkins' did have plans. Even though they were 'bumpkins' in the eyes of people from large Yu Clan families, deep inside, they were proud and arrogant Yu Clan nobles!

Smiling faintly, Ji Hao nodded.

People walked into the hall like streams of water. The bronze table zone was almost filled up. Seventy percent of the seats in the silver table zone were occupied, while the seats in the golden table zone were taken by forty to fifty percent. People talked loudly as they walked around. In the hall, Yu Clan nobles, Jia Clan nobles, and Xiu Clan nobles divided into countless groups, chatting and laughing while wearing all kinds of complicated expressions, intriguing against each other or exchanging interests...

This hall was like a giant dark whirlpool, containing all kinds of dirtiness.

Suddenly, the area that Yu Meng and Ji Hao stayed in quieted

down. Numberless nobles in this area showed a trace of shock on their faces while watching Yu Dun walk slowly over with his golden staff.

Surrounded by ten guards, Yu Dun came to Yu Meng's table. Before Yu Meng could stand up, he had already amicably pressed a hand on Yu Meng's shoulder. "Yu Meng, we're family from now on. Hmm, Lanxi is over there. Why don't you go talk to her? Later on, I hope that you can ask her for a dance." He lowered his head and grinned while talking to Yu Meng.

Yu Dun shook Yu Meng's shoulder and continued with an unassailable tone, "The first dance tonight belongs to you and Lanxi. No one can take this privilege away from you, because I say so."

Hearing this, countless people stared straight at Yu Meng from all directions, eyes turning red from jealousy.

The current leader of Ado River Family personally invited Yu Meng to have the first dance tonight with a girl from his family. What an honor!

White Flower Skylark Family was going to rise...Merging with the bloodline of Ado River Family, White Flower Skylark Family people would soon climb up to the top. It was like a sparrow becoming a phoenix, a wild grass becoming a ganoderma!

Yu Meng, how could this b*stard be so lucky?

Yu Hao and Yu Meng's families politely stood up.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye and fixed it on Yu Dun.

In the heaven, on a simply styled white bone altar, the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book quaked slightly and released a suffocating power.

Taisi was dancing around the altar, making a strange step while fully activating the power of the book. Through an indecipherable connection, the book was connected with Ji Hao's eye of Dao.

# Chapter 1742: Curse Him to Death in Public

The Nailhead Seven Arrow Book was a mysterious inherited treasure belonging to Shaosi and Taisi, terrifyingly powerful.

Ji Hao didn't sneak into Liang Zhu City and follow Yu Meng into this banquet of the non-humankind without any preparation. On the contrary, he prepared everything before he started this journey, including Taisi and the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book as a trump card.

Taisi was the God of Life and Death now, and the book had a horrible power, perfectly matching his divine position. Ji Hao was a divine emperor; as a divine God, Taisi was under Ji Hao's command. Therefore, Ji Hao was naturally able to use Taisi's power, and the mysterious, disastrous power of the book. The moment Ji Hao opened his eye of Dao, the book had already locked on Yu Dun through tens of millions of miles.

An imperceptible power coiled in the air, slowly wrapping Yu Dun's body like thin threads. Next, the power winded around the few trusted subordinates around Yu Dun, then reached to the group of 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' who had close contact with Yu Dun just now.

Yu Dun acted amicably and warmly while talking to Yu Meng. His voice was neither low nor high, and could just be heard by the hundreds of people in the surroundings.

"Yu Meng, you're a good boy. Really, I mean it. Under your leadership, the White Flower Skylark Family has had a mentionable development. You are a very capable young man. We, Ado River Family, need fresh blood like you." Yu Dun gave a bright grin and continued, "I know that you young people are passionate, that you often take impulsive actions when encountering with certain situations."

"But, we are nobles, the highest Yu Clan nobles, so we should

solve problems in the way we Yu Clan nobles do, instead of using violence." Yu Dun gently patted Yu Meng's shoulder and said with a soft and warm voice, sounding like both a warning and reminder. "If you use violence under any negative situation..."

Yu Dun chuckled and straightened his body, then said sincerely, "Violence and killing can solve most of the problems, but not all. Young man, think when things happen."

Yu Meng slowly stood up and reverently bowed to Yu Dun, "Your wish is higher than everything. Every word from you represents the highest wisdom. I will remember every word you said, and I not do anything that I shouldn't be doing."

Yu Dun gave Yu Meng a complicated glance, then glimpsed at the group of people from his family. His eyes quickly swept across Ji Hao's body, sharp as blade. Ji Hao lowed his head and showed his politeness and cautiousness, which were just right.

Nodding slightly, Yu Dun continued in satisfaction, "Good boy, really good!"

He made a fist and gently punched on Yu Meng's chest for twice, then glanced around. Within the bronze table area, everyone who received his glance bowed deeply to him, without daring to straighten their bodies back up in a long while. As everyone in the surrounding was bowing, Yu Dun seemed to be even taller and majestic.

Giving a faint smile in satisfaction, Yu Dun knocked the ground loudly with his golden staff and caused a deep but strong buzzing noise, then said, "So, relax everyone! Enjoy the wine and the dainty dishes, and just relax. This banquet is an opportunity for you to know each other...Many families from far away haven't arrived yet, but look, how strong is our Pan Yu world!"

Hearing him, all the others in the hall laughed. They glanced around and laughed even louder.

Not to mention anyone else, within the bronze table zone, the family of everyone who was invited to this banquet had controlled one or more worlds. Among them, some were like Yu Meng, who had conquered and ruled over a whole hundred worlds!

People from tens of thousands of low-grade families had gathered in the bronze table zone. If they combined their powers, the result would be horrifying.

Yu Dun laughed loudly as well. However, Ji Hao clearly saw a shred of shade flash across his eye corner. Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. He didn't know where that shade came from, but he had already quietly triggered the power of the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book.

Above the heaven, clouds drifted in the sky. Giant strands of natural power had been devoured by the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book, turning into some mysterious kind of power. Behind Taisi, who was dancing, a dim and hazy figure emerged silently and released an evil and mysterious power from the ancient time. That power flew into the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book like a rapid river. Taisi paused suddenly, then his eyes turned into a scary pale white color. Countless grey spell symbols rolled in those eyes. He began shaking and twitching as if he had suffered an electric shock; surrounding the altar, he danced faster and faster.

Yu Dun smilingly turned around and walked to the golden table zone. Tens of 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' had entered the area, and were standing in the middle of the hall with smiles, waiting for Yu Dun.

Yu Dun walked away step by step. He left the bronze table zone and walked into the silver table zone while smiling as he nodded to the leaders of the few most powerful fourth-grade families. The few family leaders hurriedly bowed to him to greet back.

Suddenly, people began screaming. Everyone who had eyes on Yu Dun widened their eyes in fear and shock, as if they couldn't

believe their own eyes!

Yu Dun was the current leader of the powerful Ado River Family, a Pan Yu world noble with a 'seal' title, the holder of a great hidden power. But, at this very moment, grey blood had been flowing out from his two eyes, nose, mouth, and ears.

Grey blood?

Black, a mysterious, ominous color.

The grey blood flowed down his face like streams. At first, Yu Dun felt nothing, but kept walking step by step with a warm smile on his face, which was already covered in the grey blood. While walking, the grey blood flowed down his clothes, leaving a clear grey trace behind him.

Three breaths later, Yu Dun opened his erect eye. His erect eye was already rotten into minced meat, mixed in the grey blood that flowing out of his eye socket. Yu Dun kept moving forward, as if he had no feeling at all. Suddenly, he fell heavily to the ground.

Within a short span of time, under the witness of so many people, his body decayed and became air-slaked, eventually turning into a puff of ash that lied on the ground. It seemed that his body had suddenly gone through millions of years.

None of Yu Dun's life-saving treasures reacted. He was also carrying all kinds of one-time-use magic talismans, but any of those triggered weren't triggered either.

Right in front of so many Yu Clan nobles, he was torn apart by the secret enemy like a fragile piece of paper. He died, decaying thoroughly.

Following a series of clanks, about ten trusted subordinates around Yu Dun also fell to the ground, quietly turning into ashes.

A tremor went through Ji Hao's body as he sensed a piercing pain from his internal organs. He was attacked by the counterforce from the Nailhead Seven Arrow power, and suffered quite a serious

inner injury.

# Chapter 1743: Curse Them to Death In A Row

When Shaosi and Taisi's clan was destroyed, they both were little kids. Therefore, they knew very little about their clan.

Taisi inherited the Nailhead Seven Arrow power, which was a disastrously powerful treasure, but he couldn't tell where it came from. All he knew was that the Nailhead Seven Arrow power was powerful, scarily and ridiculously powerful.

Ji Hao once tried to figure out to background story of this mysterious treasure, but after failing to find any detailed record about it in the secret book collections of the Magi Palace, he gave up. However, this time, Ji Hao actually felt its horrifying power.

Yu Dun was the current leader of Ado River Family, a high-grade noble from Pan Yu world with a title of 'seal', a powerful being who had already touched the original great Dao of his world, a wealthy being who had at least one pre-world spirit-treasure with him for his own protection. Nevertheless, he was cursed to death so quietly. Ji Hao believed that Yu Dun was under the protection of at least ten layers of defensive magic seals or formations, but none of those delivered any effect.

So quietly and silently, Yu Hua was cursed to death, without even knowing.

Yu Meng's neck creaked, as he strenuously turned his head around and gave Ji Hao a slow glance, which was filled with an extreme horror, with his deeply sudden eyes. He was shocked, or to be precise, awfully frightened by Ji Hao.

As the leader of the White Flower Skylark Family's suzerain family, Yu Dun had been suppressing the White Flower Skylark Family so hard, that White Flower Skylark Family people were forced into a nearly hopeless situation, barely having room to

breathe. But, this powerful being was killed right on the spot, so quickly, so easily, like a meaningless street dog.

Yu Meng wasn't stupid. On the contrary, he was smart. He clearly knew that it was Ji Hao who did it.

But, it was so, so dreadful. A 'seal', the current leader of Ado River Family who stood high above the masses, who was one of the highest power-holders in Pan Gu world, who was such a strong and fearful being, was killed with no extra effort. More frightfully, same as last time, Yu Meng failed to figure out what kind of magic Ji Hao used to kill Yu Dun.

The hall was quiet. All Yu Clan nobles, Jia Clan nobles, and Xiu Clan nobles, from higher-grade families or lower-grade families, who were family leaders or ordinary family members, had been maintaining an absolute silence.

With fear, people had their eyes fixed on Yu Dun's clothes, on his golden staff which landed heavily on the ground, on the three pre-world spirit treasures and one pre-world supreme treasures, which fell out after he turned into ashes.

Based on Yu Dun's position, on the social status of Ado River Family, and the wealth accumulated by Pan Yu world people by conquering and looting countless worlds, it was a reasonable thing for Yu Dun to own a pre-world supreme treasure. People in the hall looked at that nine storeyed, pyramid-shaped pre-world supreme treasure which was glowing with a faint golden light. Everyone sensed the strong energy waves releasing from the treasure.

Judging by the overwhelming, mountain-heavy energy waves, this pyramid was a defensive pre-world supreme treasure!

Everyone on the scene felt the brewing wrath inside the fist-sized pyramid. Supreme treasures had spirits. The treasure sensed the death of its owner and was so infuriated.

This was the scariest part of this whole thing. This pyramid had a

strong spirit which was highly active and tightly connected with its owner. It had been closely watching on its owner, guarding every inch of its owner's body. If any enemy attacked, it should be able to immediately activate itself and defend its owner. It was a defensive pre-world supreme treasure, yet it made no reaction at all but 'watched' its owner being killed by the invisible attack, without even having a chance to save the last trace of his soul. You Dun was gone, erased from the universe; even his original soul was crushed by the invisible attack.

Pre-world supreme treasures had their own dignity and pride. This pre-world supreme treasure that belonged to Yu Dun was driven crazy by its owner's death. Tremendous waves of golden power erupted from this tiny pyramid and quaked the entire hall.

"Great three suns and nine moons!" After a while, which was short as a moment but long as the entire lifetime of a world at the same time, a noble from the golden table zone finally burst into shriek. "What...What happened? What is hiding in this bloody Pan Gu world?"

Right in front of hundreds of thousands of Pan Yu world nobles, under the protection of a pre-world supreme treasure, a 'seal' was quietly murdered!

Was this a joke? Was this a nightmare? All Pan Yu world people on the scene dared not to believe that this was true. They would rather believe that they were all sinking in a nightmare and nothing before their eyes truly existed.

If it were Pan Gu world creatures who killed Yu Dun in such an undetectable way, then what exactly was hiding in Pan Gu world? Was this world truly as simple as they thought it was? Could this world truly be conquered as easily as they expected?

Quite a number of colony world rulers who gathered in Pan Gu world under orders began exchanging glances. They suddenly realized that if Pan Gu world were really so easy to conquer, why

would those greedy top-grade family people allow them to come here to share profits? Those high-grade families must have suffered defeats or fallen into traps in this world, for which reason, they summoned the colony rulers and their armies, to fight for them and die for them!

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes and sensed his internal injuries.

The Nailhead Seven Arrow Book was supremely powerful, but the counterforce from it was destructive too. After cursing Yu Dun to death, the counterforce from Nailhead Seven Arrow Book attacked Ji Hao and left a great number of cracks on Ji Hao's internal organs, despite the toughness of his body. These internal injuries were extremely hard to heal, that Ji Hao had flushed his internal organs over with his spirit blood over and over again, but it took at least a hundred times longer than usual for these injuries to heal.

But, these injuries were still bearable.

Glancing at the group of 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' who had talked with Yu Dun earlier, Ji Hao took a deep breath and quickly connected with the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book again.

The entire heaven was quaking slightly as the tremendous natural powers had been flowing into the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book. Ji Hao triggered the power of the entire heaven to support the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book, also adding slight traces of the great Dao power of Pan Gu world to it.

As a divine emperor, Ji Hao had the qualification to use a certain amount of the power of the great Dao. At the moment, he tried his best to merge the great Dao power that he could control into the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book while casting a curse on the group of 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' who were targeted just now.

The invisible attack descended suddenly. Grey blood began gushing out of the eyes, noses, mouths, and ears of those 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs'. All non-humankind nobles in the hall let out

shrill screams and shrieks. Countless noble girls even fainted and fell on the ground with their eyes rolled up and mouths wide open like dead fishes.

Normally, seeing these girls faint and fall to the ground, numberless noble young men would have attentively rushed up to hold them already. But today, no one took an extra glance at them.

Everyone was staring at those 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' who had no idea what happened to them. People watched them decay and collapse, until they eventually became puffs of ashes that thudded on the ground.

# Chapter 1744: Disturbed Poison

His heart was injured, as three heart arteries were broken.

His liver was injured, as ninety percent of his liver had withered.

His lungs were injured, as his pulmonary alveoli were ruptured.

...

After killing over ten 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' in one breath, Ji Hao sensed waves of sharp pain from inside his body. Same as his targets, he didn't feel any offensive force either, but his internal organs suffered actual harm.

Suffering the unbearable pain, Ji Hao nearly burst into shrill howls despite his toughness and the great cultivation of his heart of Dao. That pain didn't just come from his body, it also came straight from the deepest area of his soul, as if countless people had been cutting his soul with tiny saw blades. Ji Hao felt that he was going to be killed directly by the pain.

Cold sweat oozed out of his forehead, flowing down to his chin through his cheeks, then dripping to the ground like raindrops.

In other circumstances, some non-humankind beings would have noticed Ji Hao's strange behavior long ago, since he acted so weirdly. But at the moment, all hundreds of thousands of non-humankind beings on the scene had their faces covered in cold sweat, filled with shock and fear. Some of them had even been shaking, letting out a bone creaking noises.

Some maids dropped the large trays carried in their hands, causing a series of clank as all kinds of exquisite wine containers smashed on the ground. Normally, these maids would have been dragged out and beaten to death already. But today, those mean non-humankind beings didn't have the mood to punish these careless maids. Instead, everyone was dumbfounded, with their eyes fixed on the remains of the group of 'crowns', 'seals' and

'staffs' which were left on the ground after the terrifying death of their owners.

About ten pre-world supreme treasures and tens of pre-world spirit treasures floated in the air, quaking intensely while releasing a suffocatingly strong pressure that almost disabled all non-humankind beings on the scene from moving.

These pre-world supreme treasures and spirit treasures were infuriated by the death of their owners, and were losing control, just like the small golden pyramid that belonged to Yu Dun. Under their protection, their owners were actually killed without even a chance to fight back. No one even knew who the attacker was.

This was a huge humiliation to these pre-world supreme treasures and spirit treasures. Among these treasures, many had been with the families of those dead 'crowns', 'seals', and 'staffs' for generations. These treasures were proud as top-grade supreme treasures and spirit treasures, and had deep affections for the families of their owners. These treasures were as smart as human beings, and by now, they were on the verge of an outburst of rage.

"Who was it?" A high-pitched voice could be heard from the crowd as a middle-aged Yu Clan man walked out, brows knitted. A fist-sized, exquisite purple feather crown floated above his head, pouring down strands of rainbow-like light to shield his entire body.

This was a 'crown' who had just arrived. The purple feather crown above his head was a pre-world supreme treasure with an especially great defensive power. Countless tiny and complicated spell symbols hovered around the crown, leaving hazy glowing trails in the air like fireflies.

Ji Hao sensed the power of the feather crown and found it to be quite interesting. It had a considerably great defensive power against all kinds of magic curses. These Yu Clan nobles were apparently not stupid, that they had already figured out the

method that Ji Hao used to kill Yu Dun and the others, and had already made the most correct reactions.

'However, even though you have prepared yourself, I can still easily kill you. This is Pan Gu world. The moment you entered into this world, you are suppressed by the great Dao of nature of this world. Can your pre-world supreme treasures release even ten percent of their powers?' Ji Hao laughed in his heart. He attempted to activate the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book once again, but a sharp wave of pain attacked from his internal organs, making him lose his eyesight temporarily, and nearly put him down to the ground.

Ji Hao hurriedly gasped for air while widening his eyes in shock. Alright, the counterforce from the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book was way too scary, and seemed to be based on the law of causality. Ji Hao could not understand it, nor figure out a way to defend himself against it. Ji Hao had an almost unbreakable body, but still, he was injured quite seriously by the counterforce from the book. He wanted to kill more people with the book but he could not afford to suffer a stronger counterforce.

Snorting slightly, Ji Hao had countless thoughts popped out in his head. Some ridiculous thoughts faded immediately, but the ones that might provide a better chance of success had still been emerging in his mind.

Right at this very moment, the pyramid belonging to Yu Dun had gathered enough wrath and power. Along with an earth-shaking bang, countless golden light beams burst from the pyramid, then everyone on the scene sensed the sky-collapsing fury of the pyramid.

All living beings in the hall felt the will of the pyramid — 'Hand over the killer, or no one on the scene can live!'

The golden light was blinding, dazzling in the air. Yu Clan nobles in the hall raised hysterical, shrill shrieks and screams. The thousands of Yu Clan nobles who were the nearest to the pyramid

were hit by the golden light, and their bodies immediately exploded into golden sand, drifting all over the hall.

Another wave of golden light was released from the pyramid, bringing the strong will to everyone's heart — It wanted the killer. Without the killer, it would kill everyone in this hall without hesitation to avenge Yu Dun!

The pyramid was a pre-world supreme treasure. Even though its main function was defensive, as a genuine pre-world supreme treasure, the power erupted from it was at the level of peak-Divine-Magus while no one was controlling it.

Sadly, many of the non-humankind beings on the scene were noble young men and ladies like Lanxi and Lanyu. They didn't have great individual strengths, but they attended this banquet because their families were powerful. They came here to gain some experiences and make friends.

Among these noble young ladies and men, the ones at the level of Magus Kings could already be counted as hard-working. Facing the peak-Divine-Magi-level power released by the golden pyramid, these noble young people had no power of resistance at all. With a slight touch, the golden light destroyed their bodies.

More terrifyingly, led by the pyramid, the pre-world supreme treasure and spirit treasures that flew out from the bodies of the other dead 'crowns', 'seals', and 'staffs', were all agitated, especially the few with the power of killing. They released extra sharp and strong powers, that before they launched an attack, the powers they released had already blown up thousands of non-humankind beings.

Ji Hao smiled. He slightly moved his sleeve and dropped tens of colorful beads quietly to the ground.

People had been walking around in the hall, and soon, these tiny beads were kicked away without leaving a trace.

Strands of colorful mist were released from the beads, quickly merging into the air and turning invisible, without any smell. The mist quickly spread out in the hall and covered each corner within a couple of breaths.

The 'crown' with a feather crown glowing above his head had still been trying his best to maintain the order of this place. He growled loudly in rage, but suddenly, his raging growls turned into panicked roars, "Poison? Be careful! Take antidote now!"

Before he finished, tens of thousands of people had already thudded heavily against the ground, their faces darkened.

# Chapter 1745: A Cold Sword Light

These colorful beads were poisonous, made by Yu Mu with the power of the 'Department of Disease' of the heaven. The Department of Disease of the heaven controlled all kinds of diseases in the world. Therefore, even the strongest poison in the world was just like a toy in the Department of Disease. Yu Mu was a master of magic poisons. With the powers of the Department of Disease and the Disease Streamer, he made these beads. One could easily imagine how powerful they were.

Strands of poisonous mist spread out and attacked incredibly fast. Tens of thousands of weak non-humankind beings fell straight down, their faces turned purely dark. The darkness soon spread to the other parts of their bodies through their necks, and wherever it reached, their blood and flesh rotted quickly. Large blood spots emerged from their dark skins, while black blood gushed out of their mouths and noses.

The hall was thrown into a great chaos. Some people fled outside while crying and screaming, but they were already affected by the poison. Outside the hall, a great number of loyal guards attempted to rush in to protect their masters, but at the front door, they bumped into the ones who surged out. Some wanted to go in while some wanted to go out. As a result, the front door was firmly blocked, and the poison spread faster and faster, further and further.

"Antidote? Now!" Yu Meng alarmedly glanced at Ji Hao and growled with a deep and dry voice.

Yu Meng was a powerful world ruler. Most of the worlds he ruled over were predominated by deserts. Therefore, the powers of Dao he attained were tightly related to suns, sands, death, and strong poisons. Therefore, Yu Meng was immune to many toxins and poisons, that he could even feed on average poisons.

Nevertheless, the poisonous beads made by Yu Mu were way too dangerous. Despite his power, Yu Meng felt that his throat was itchy, as if being filled with blisters. Yu Meng was awfully startled by this strange feeling. Was he poisoned? Could he still be poisoned as such a powerful being?

Ji Hao took out a small bottle and put it into Yu Meng's hand. Covered by the chaotic situation, he silently showed his real face. The exotic black long robe from Pan Sha world that he was wearing immediately turned into a faint golden ceremonial robe while he walked through the crowd with airy steps like a gust of wind, towards the 'crown' who was shouting hoarsely to maintain the order, with a feather crown above his head.

While walking, Ji Hao had already pulled out the Pan Gu sword. While walking past some panicked non-humankind nobles, he mercilessly wielded the sword and sent it deep into their bodies. The sword tip brought out vividly red streams of blood and raised even shriller screams.

Quite some non-humankind beings saw Ji Hao killing in the hall, but they were frightened so badly by the suddenly attacking poison that they failed to realize that an enemy had already launched an offensive. Instead, they thought that Ji Hao was a Yu Clan being who seized this opportunity to solve some personal grudges.

They watched Ji Hao walk through the crowd, step by step. Behind him, blood had been flowing in streams as countless non-humankind nobles lied on the ground, twitching and struggling, hands covering the wounds on their vital body areas. The moment the Pan Gu sword sank into their bodies, the sword light destroyed their life-force. On the verge of death, these non-humankind beings widely opened their mouths, but failed to make any sound.

Moon Crown Yu Mi, the current leader of Lanao River Family, one of the twelve 'crowns' in Pan Yu world, who, according to the legends, was able to predict the future, suddenly raised his head. Floating above his head, the purple feather crown emitted a

blinding dark light, then poured down splendid light streams. The moment Moon Crown saw Ji Hao, the purple feather crown expanded by tens of times and transformed into a tower, covering his entire body.

"He...isn't one of us!" Yu Mi pointed at Ji Hao and shouted out loud, "Guards! Stop him! Kill him! No! Capture him alive! Alive! I want him alive!"

Ji Hao was less than three-hundred-meters away from Yu Mi. Surrounding him were desperately fleeing Yu Clan nobles. The Pan Gu sword shone with sharp beams of light and penetrated the bodies of more and more non-humankind nobles. These non-humankind nobles never even tried to pull out their weapon and fight back, but ran away from Ji Hao at their highest speeds.

Yu Mi's raging voice echoed through the entire hall, enlightening a large number of fleeing Jia Clan nobles. They abruptly turned back and stared at Ji Hao. As the bravery contained in their blood erupted, hundreds of six-meters-tall Jia Clan warriors burst into furious roars.

"Barbarian!" A golden armored Jia Clan general raised his first. Following a streak of flame, a three-headed meteor hammer appeared in his hand. While wielding the meteor hammer, he approached Ji Hao with large steps.

The other Jia Clan warriors all pulled out their weapons and approached Ji Hao in anger. Some fleeing Yu Clan nobles stopped unconsciously and turned around to look at Ji Hao.

After taking seven to eight steps towards Ji Hao, the faces of a half of the hundreds of Jia Clan warriors turned purely black. As they quivered intensely, blood spurted out from the mouths and noses of some of them.

"Idiots!" Yu Mi roared in anger, "Take the antidotes, then go get him! Have you forgotten how to fight already?! A bunch of useless things!"

Hearing him, these Ji Clan warriors hurriedly began rummaging their pockets, tremblingly trying to find some pills.

As these Jia Clan warriors paused, Ji Hao laughed out loud and flashed across the air. The golden bridge sparkled between his brows and brought him directly to Yu Mi through the distance of hundreds of meters, leaving a clear stream of light behind. Above Yu Mu's head, the strangely shaped tower, which was transformed from his purple feather crown, emitted strands of colorful light. The moment Ji Hao teleported himself, waves of ripples were stirred up from the space between Ji Hao and Yu Mi.

Within this moment, the tower showed its unimaginable power. The distance between Yu Mi and Ji Hao were merely hundreds of meters, but the tower expanded to a whole billion miles!

No average being was able to cover such a huge distance to attack Yu Mi, but with the golden bridge, Ji Hao easily broke this space magic seal cast by the tower and easily rushed up to Yu Mi.

Ji Hao let out his divine seal, raised clouds of purple mist, and illuminated the entire area with a golden light. In this very moment, the tremendous power of the great Dao of Pan Gu world descended and suppressed Yu Mi's power to an extreme degree. The tower above his head let out a deep buzzing noise while dazzling and quaking.

"Since you're already here, don't ever leave. Pan Gu world is vast enough to be your grave!" Ji Hao gave a large grin. While talking, he wielded the Pan Gu sword and launched the combined move of the five with all his power.

Swords lights emerged from the air and merged into the Pan Gu sword instantly. As the sword lights flashed, the hearts of countless non-humankind beings in the hall turned ice-cold, because they saw the strangely shaped tower above Yu Mi's head, which was a measurelessly powerful pre-world supreme treasure, cut into two. The Pan Gu sword then went down from Yu Mi's

head and sliced him into two parts as well.

Ji Hao laughed loudly, causing a sharp pain to generate from his internal organs, which were injured by the counterforce from the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book.

"Great! Great!" He laughed wildly while four, hundreds of meters long sword lights swept across the entire hall.

# Chapter 1746: The Power of Sword Realm

"No!"

Ji Hao killed Yu Mi with a single sword move, while Yu Mi, who was known as someone with the power to foresee the future, failed to predict his own death. The great Dao of Pan Gu world suppressed his power by ninety-five to ninety-seven percent, and barely left him with a power of resistance. Thus, he died.

The Pan Gu sword continued buzzing. The deep and strong buzzing noise made it sound like a heavy axe more than a longsword. Just now, not only did it kill Yu Mi, it also destroyed a pre-world supreme treasure. Some original wildness deep inside the Pan Gu sword seemed to be aroused, that it kept buzzing and boosting Ji Hao's boiling blood. Along with the buzzing noise, Ji Hao's inner injuries, which were caused by the counterforce from the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book, had been healing speedily.

Numberless non-humankind beings witnessed Ji Hao killing Yu Mi with the sword as easily as slaughtering a chicken. Their brains were blanked out.

Those colony nobles who came from the worlds they conquered and ruled, who had attained a high position by fighting and killing, managed this situation fine. As veteran warriors, they were shocked by the death of Yu Mi, a high-grade noble, but weren't frightened. On battlefields, anyone could fall, no matter how high was his or her social status, wasn't this right?

Unlike them, the nobles from Pan Yu world, who had been standing high above the rest, felt that even their souls were shaken by Yu Mu's death. Yu Mi was able to predict the future, but he had actually been killed so easily. How could this even be real? He was a 'crown'!

Earlier on, with the power of the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book, Ji Hao killed two 'crowns' in a row, but that didn't shock these Pan

Yu world nobles as much. After all, magic curses were mysterious, and the visual impact delivered by the traceless curse power was surely not as strong as the violent sword-hack-killing and the splashing blood. Without being able to fight back, Yu Mi was killed by a single sword move. This caused a certain strong psychological effect on many Pan Yu world nobles.

"This is impossible!" Some young Yu Clan noble men screamed heartbreakingly, their faces blushed, especially the ones from Lanao River Family. They subconsciously kneeled on the ground, their heads in their arms. They did not know what to do, as if their whole world had collapsed.

The noisy and chaotic hall suddenly turned strangely quiet. The people stopped running, but dumbly stared at Ji Hao and his sword, with fear and shock. Some smart and battlewise non-humankind nobles discovered the four sword lights created by Ji Hao, and sank into an even deeper fear.

"Leave the hall with your people and your allies!" Suddenly, Yu Meng heard Ji Hao's frosty and emotionless voice lingering around his ears.

He quivered, with his fine hair stood straight up. Attacked by a tremendous sense of crisis, he couldn't even see things clearly anymore, and his internal organs began twitching. He turned around and gave an order to his few trusted subordinates with his eyes, then quickly warned some of the others in the hall by using a special silent voice magic.

While doing all this, Yu Meng had already rushed brutally to the front door of the hall with his people. He pulled out a golden staff which was carved with a wolf head and wielded it, sending the people near the front door flying away, then rushed out with giant steps.

The moment Yu Meng rushed out, the four sword lights Ji Hao created landed in the four corners of the hall.

The sword lights shone dazzlingly and stood in the corners of the hall like four enormous swords. Following shrill sword buzzing noises, the sword lights suddenly changed colors — The one in the east was a sword light of the great Dao of destruction, with a color of mysterious black; the one in the west was a sword light of the great Dao of creation, bright and clear. The one in the south was a sword light of the great Dao of sun, golden and splendid, and the one in the north was a sword light of the great Dao of extreme negative, with a cold and peaceful silver color.

As the four sword lights landed on the ground, centering on the spot trodden under Ji Hao's feet, a magic formation was composed, connecting with the natural stars and the earth meridians. Clouds of mist rose from the ground. Within the mist, hazy mountains could be seen, with rivers flowing slowly. The magic formation expanded suddenly, covering the entire hall and the hundreds of thousands of non-humankind nobles in the hall.

This was called 'heaven-killing, earth-slaughtering sword formation', created by Ji Hao based on Yu Yu's sword formation, with the power of the divine heaven and earth formation and the vast natural powers. Once this great formation was composed, the entire roof of the hall was gone. Countless natural stars were quietly hanging in the sky, staring at the ones in the hall like merciless eyes while emitting a thrilling, bloodcurdling power.

The earth buzzed slightly while sharp gusts of winds blew in through the floor. Wherever the winds blew across, bone-deep wounds were left on the legs of countless non-humankind beings in the hall.

Heavily armored or protected by secret treasures, when the sharp winds blew across, the clothes of all these non-humankind nobles remained perfectly undamaged, but their bodies were already harmed badly.

Blood splashed like a rain while shrill howls could be heard without an end. The highest few 'seals' on the scene finally

recovered from the shock and wrath brought by the death of Yu Mi. They pointed at Ji Hao and burst into sonorous growls, "Kill him!"

Ji Hao smiled. He raised the Pan Gu sword and let Yu Yu's Dao of sword raise a tsunami in his heart. His entire embryo of Dao transformed into a blinding sword light as it swept across the entire hall with an endless sword intent, turning the hall into a fierce sword realm.

Waves of sword lights descended from the sky, from the cold natural stars, covering all non-humankind beings in the hall like a storm.

Waves of sword light erupted from the ground, tens of meters long, spinning swiftly on the ground like windmills. Wherever the sword lights reached, body parts were sent up into the air like the eruption of volcanos.

Strands of sword power winded in the sky like brooks, merging into larger streams, then forming great rivers. The rivers of sword power surged and roared, shredding all armors, battle robes, secret treasures, and fleshy bodies into pieces.

Sword, sword, sword...

The eyes of all non-humankind nobles in the hall were dazzled. They saw everything in the hall turn into a sharp sword under the effect of an invisible power.

The tables became swords; the chairs became swords too; the wine cups and wine pots all became swords. Corroded by the sword intent, even their long hair became countless straight, clanking, sharp swords.

The swords were swishing in the hall, clanking against each other while lunging and impatiently devouring blood and flesh.

The non-humankind nobles in the hall let out heartrending shrieks. Before they figured out what exactly had been happening,

they felt a million long swords cut into their bodies all at once, then they exploded into clouds of blood mist.

The shadows of the swords flashed while the sword power occupied the whole area. Blood boiled in the hall while the fierce sword power reached directly into the sky. Within a blink of an eye, more than half of the hundreds of thousands of non-humankind nobles who excitedly gathered here for a banquet were slaughtered.

# Chapter 1747: Besieged Circle Upon Circle

"The highest three suns and nine moons...All Pan Sha world ancestors' souls...This is so beautiful!"

Yu Meng stood outside the hall, stunned. While watching the blood falling like a rain and sensing the strong blood scent in the blowing wind, he unwittingly began praying to the ancestors' souls of Pan Sha world creatures. Pan Sha world was the first world conquered by his family.

If any high-grade noble from Pan Yu world heard Yu Meng, a Yu Clan noble, praying to the ancestors' souls from another world, Yu Meng would be regarded as a 'heresy', and would be burned to death on a burning stake. But, at the moment, under the current circumstances, no one heard his murmuring at all.

The hall was wrapped in a meters thick layer of sword power. Some people in the hall attempted to rush out while some guards took actions to rush in from the outside. But, all of them were shredded once they touched the interweaving, four-colored layer of sword power. Their armors, bodies, and souls were all shredded.

Inside the hall, sword lights and sword power strands had been flashing and interweaving. Every bone-piercing cold strand of sword power brought up a sharp stream of blood while sending body parts up into the sky. Before the body parts fell on the ground, the shapeless and traceless sword intent would tear them into pieces.

Numberless non-humankind nobles had been shivering in the hall. They weren't dancing; their bodies trembled intensely and uncontrollably because tiny but sharp strands of sword power had been rapidly penetrating their bodies, tearing them apart.

Following shrill 'popping' noises, countless holes appeared on their bodies. At last, a giant strand of sword power burst out, thoroughly mincing them and ending their pain.

The ones who weren't cursed to death by the Nailhead Seven Arrow Book or killed by Ji Hao tremblingly gathered together and activated their defensive treasures, generating layers of light shields. The light shields merged together and formed a thick light screen, firmly shielding all of them. They screamed with dry voices and angrily urged their guards, who waited outside, to come in and protect them.

The sword power dominated the entire great hall. Soon, most of the non-humankind beings in the hall would be killed right on the spot, unless Supreme-level powerful beings showed up to tear open the sword realm which was sealed off by Ji Hao. Ji Hao carefully spared the small area where Yemo Luoye and the other Yu Dynasty people stayed in. Except them, all the other non-humankind beings in the hall would die.

Yemo Luoye, Dishi Yanluo and the other Yu Dynasty people stood stiffly, without daring to move a finger. The sharp swords powers and sword light nearly brushed across their bodies. This small group of people watched everyone around them being slaughtered, while they themselves stayed perfectly unharmed.

"Ji Hao...He wants us to break with the other nobles!" As the emperors in power of Yu Dynasty, these people weren't stupid. They immediately figured out Ji Hao's intention, but couldn't do a thing to him at all.

Ji Hao heard Yemo Luoye and the others cursing him in low voices. Amidst the strands of sword power, streams of splashing blood, and countless bodies sent flying by heavy sword power strikes, he gracefully and deeply bowed to them. While straightening up his body, he swung an arm backward and hacked a muscular Jia Clan noble, who crazily punched on him, into two.

The divine seal floated above his head. The power of the great Dao of Pan Gu world was locked on this great hall through the divine heaven and earth great formation. Except for Ji Hao, every living being in this hall was now under the suppression of the great

Dao of Pan Gu world. Therefore, Supreme-level non-humankind beings now could release divine-level powers at most, while divine-level non-humankind beings had been dragged down to even beneath the level of Magus Kings.

Ji Hao was such a terrifying being. He owned the Pan Gu bell and Pan Gu sword, both of which were incredibly powerful supreme treasures. He also possessed the unbreakable Pan Gu body. What made him even scarier was that he had attained a giant amount of saint's power from Priest Mu!

Saint's power...Those so-called 'crowns', 'seals', and 'staffs' in the hall might have surpassed Ji Hao by far in cultivation, but in the terms of power quality, they couldn't even touch a shadow of his.

With a slight sword move, Ji Hao created an eye-piercing beam of sword light. Facing the sword light which was motivated by the saint's power, the defensive seals used by the non-humankind nobles provided no power of resistance at all. Layers of magic shields were cut open, as more and more bodies were torn into pieces. Then, endless sword lights and sword power surged up and minced those non-humankind beings.

Maintaining a faint smile, Ji Hao activated the Pan Gu bell to shield his body, then approached the group of highest nobles who gathered together, slowly with the Big Dipper step.

"Guys, the weather is not bad." Ji Hao gave a warm grin and greeted the nearly one-thousand top-grade nobles gathered in this area.

In the center of this crowd, tens of non-humankind nobles stared at Ji Hao with their teeth clenched. "Tell those useless things outside to break in right now! We'll allow them the time span of ten more breaths. If they..." Roared a grey-haired 'staff'.

The 'staff's voice suddenly faded as he looked at Ji Hao with a soul-deep fear.

The Pan Gu sword released a beam of sword light that was hundreds of meters long. The cold sword light pierced the defensive light screen which was created by this group of top-grade nobles joint-handedly. Along with a deafening tearing noise, the light screen was torn apart layer by layer, and their pre-world treasures were cut broken one after another. Quite a few supreme treasures with defensive powers let out painful screams.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the mysterious man sat above Ji Hao's embryo of Dao with his legs crossed. While excitedly waving his hands, he yelled, "Yes, just like this, this sword has merged with the Pan Gu axe which opened up this world...It can even open up a world! Ji Hao kid, break their heads!"

Indeed, the Pan Gu sword in Ji Hao's hands had merged with the Pan Gu axe which belonged to Saint Pan Gu, and had once opened up a world and slaughtered millions and millions of Chaos monsters!

In front of the Pan Gu axe, the spirit treasures and supreme treasures used by these non-humankind nobles were just a pile of scrap metal pieces.

Before, Ji Hao wasn't powerful enough to fully activate the Pan Gu sword's power. But, with the saint's power 'generously' gifted by Priest Mu, Ji Hao was already able to activate the sword to a certain degree.

The sword light was bone-piercingly cold. More and more spirit treasures and supreme treasures were broken. Suddenly, a warmth rose from Ji Hao's body while he activated his tremendous strength with his thriving spirit blood and pushed the Pan Gu sword violently forward.

Under layers of protections, the group of top-grade non-humankind nobles vented hoarse screams. Ji Hao sliced their throats with the Pan Gu sword and sent over a thousand heads up into the sky, making the blood squirt tens of meters high.

Outside the hall, numberless non-humankind guards who witnessed this lost their minds.

They roared hysterically and cursed Ji Hao with the evilest languages they knew. Shrill alarms could be heard from every direction while countless non-humankind armies marched over, surrounding the hall layer by layer.

Within a twinkling of an eye, billions of elite non-humankind warriors encircled the entire hall and covered the sky and the earth.

Ji Hao laughed out loud as he pushed his hands forwards. The sword power instantly spread out from the hall and swept across the area with a radius of three-thousand miles.

# Chapter 1748: Slaughtering in the Turmoil of War

Liang Zhu City fell into a turmoil of war. A strand of sword power nearly brushed across Yu Meng's body. A few beautiful emeralds on his golden armor burst into a bright light and cracked into pieces.

Yu Meng was startled. He hurriedly yelled at his subordinates and brought them to flee further away at the highest speed. Earlier, he clearly watched Ji Hao easily kill so many top-grade nobles. Even though Yu Meng believed that he could defeat any of those spoiled high-grade nobles without making an extra effort, he still didn't have the courage to face Ji Hao on his own.

"He is a frightful being, but we can trust him." Yu Meng gritted his teeth, telling the others about his thoughts through the silent voice magic. "The only thing we need to prevent is this monster swallowing us as his new targets after our goal is achieved."

Low voices could be heard from around Yu Meng's ears.

"Damn it, Yu Meng! Is this the ally you suggested? What a damnable guy, but I like him!"

"Ahah! Have you all seen how he killed Yu Mi? With one single sword move, that old b*stard was hacked into two! Great, that old b*stard is dead. His grandson will soon sink his family, so no one will cast greedy eyes on my baby girl anymore."

"Aren't you ashamed? Damn you! You're a powerful man who ruled five great worlds, yet you can't even protect your own daughter. How could you even be shameless enough to say something like that? But, that kid is truly scary. Even I was shocked."

"I merely failed to protect my daughter, but look at Yu Meng, he nearly failed to protect himself! Hah! Imagine this! If that

'adorable' Miss Lanxi became Yu Meng's wife, oh that must be beautiful!"

A series of guffaw burst by Yu Meng's ears, making his face darken in anger. He clenched his teeth and gave vent to a torrent of abuse, but still failed to stop these unkind people who had secretly allied with him from laughing at him. "Restrain your people. We can't be a part of this sudden conflict." Helplessly, Yu Meng quickly changed the topic.

"Send out more scouts and let them keep an eye on the armies from those large families, to assess their strengths in details, observe the habits and skills of their commanders, and figure out exactly how powerful they are. Then, run comparisons between them and us to see if these high-grade family armies can be as good as ours."

Yu Meng quickly made his suggestion. The voices responded by his ears, agreeing with him.

A large group of 'bumpkins' from colony worlds left the hall with their subordinates while directing their troops to march to the hall. Numberless high-grade nobles from Pan Yu world screamed shrilly, as if their butts were on fire.

They had already known about the death of those top-grade beings. A rescue was no longer possible. Right now, their mission was sealing Ji Hao in the hall. They needed to encircle and trap him, then capture him alive. They wanted to cut Ji Hao into pieces. Otherwise, they would never be able to wash off the great shame brought to their families by him!

The leaders of Ado River Family, Lanao River Family, and the power-holders from the other ten top-grade families were killed by someone as easily as killing a chicken. This was such a great shame; it was like a lump of stinky cow dung falling right on the emblems of their families, emitting a soul-deep awful odor, that only Ji Hao's blood could clean!

Amidst the chaos, a Yu Clan young men arrogantly stopped Yu Meng.

Lanxi darted out from behind this young men, pointed at Yu Meng, and yelled, "Useless coward, go back there with your army and cut off that killer's head, then dedicate it to me as a trophy!"

Yu Meng halted shortly, then looked around and pretended to be surprised. "Dear Miss Lanxi, I beg your pardon! Why would I do that?"

Before Lanxi responded, the Yu Clan young man who stopped Yu Meng for her had already laughed out loud and said, "Oh, Lanxi, is this your fiancée? A stinky bumpkin? I have to say that..."

Before he could finish his speech, Su quickly approached with a troop of Yu Meng's subordinates. Yu Meng expressionlessly stomped his foot against the ground and raised a cloud of dark sand. The sand cloud condensed into a swiftly spinning swirl that covered Yu Meng and his people, along with Lanxi and the young man.

"Kill this pair of b*tches!" Amidst the chaos, no one noticed this small sandstorm magic seal. In the surroundings, countless Yu Clan nobles had been casting all kinds of magic seals to protect themselves or to seal off the space. Magical lights sparkled in everywhere, and in comparison, this dark small sand swirl was not so eye-catching.

Covered by the sand swirl, Yu Meng's face turned as cold and emotionless as the face of a statue. As the highest ruler of one-hundred sand worlds, the dominator of billions of creatures, the 'Divine King' of numberless gods from the worlds he ruled, Yu Meng wasn't a soft-hearted man.

Only when facing the Ado River Family would he show his softness and incapability. But, facing any other living being, he was Yu Meng, the highest, measurelessly powerful Divine King.

'Puff'! Su gripped a staff which was carved with an eagle head, and fiercely penetrated Lanxi's chest while screaming hoarsely, "For the highest 'God of Meng'...Bloody b*tch, your soul is mine now. I will torture it with the strongest venom from the dark desert/ I will make it cry in pain forever!"

Lanxi's body twitched intensely as her soul was drawn into the staff before she could even cast a scream.

The Yu Clan young men who accompanied Lanxi thudded his knees against the ground and kowtowed heavily to Yu Meng, begging for his mercy, "Dear Master Yu Meng, I..."

Tens of staffs carved with wolf heads, eagle heads, dog heads, goat heads, and tiger heads landed violently on him, directly turning his body into a cloud of blood mist.

Su pointed his finger at the blood mist and drew the young man's soul into the eagle-headed staff.

Yu Meng smiled and looked around in satisfaction. "This seems to be a nice day for hunting. By witnessing the death of these high-grade nobles, I even gained a deeper understanding of death. I believe that if we can wipe out all high-grade nobles from Pan Yu world, I will certainly be able to control the power of death!"

Strands of sword power surged out of the hall and swept across the surrounding armies like rapidly flowing great rivers. The thousands of meters long sword power strands interwove and shredded thousands of people with a slight movement.

The non-humankind armies marched to the hall wave after wave. No matter how many Ji Hao killed, more and more non-humankind warriors rushed up to encircle the entire hall.

Yu Meng's eyes sparkled. Whispered a few words to Su and the other subordinates, he and his people disappeared in the darkness.

# Chapter 1749: The Massacre Continues

Except for the ones who were spared or let out by Ji Hao on purpose, the other hundreds of thousands of non-humankind beings in the hall were all slaughtered.

Ji Hao raised his head and looked at the broken roof of the hall. Through the connection between himself and the natural stars, he did a calculation and figured out the time span. With this heaven-killing, earth-slaughtering great formation he created, he spent a quarter of an hour to kill all these non-humankind beings.

"Such a low efficiency...If this were my Shifu's sword formation..." Ji Hao licked his mouth corner and murmured to himself. Perhaps, he would only need a second to finish off all non-humankind being in the hall with Yu Yu's original version of sword formation and his current power.

But, that sword formation was way too horrifying. According to Ji Hao's estimate, he could not freely control that sword formation with his current power, and as a consequence, he wouldn't be able to spare the lives of Yemo Luoye and the other Yu Dynasty people, and let Lanxi, Lanyu and some other high-grade nobles out. He could have killed them along with the others.

Ji Hao wielded his arms and brought all the pre-world spirit supreme treasures which stayed in the hall without being shredded by the Pan Gu sword, into his broad sleeves. Quite a few obstinate and unruly pre-world supreme treasures buzzed loudly, trying to free themselves from Ji Hao's control. But threatened by a 'clank' from the Pan Gu sword, they immediately quieted down like domestic rabbits.

The roof and walls of the hall were torn down by the sword lights. Ji Hao trod on a lotus condensed from swords lights, glowing with an ice-cold light as he flew slowly up into the sky with his hands clasped behind his back. He floated in midair,

surrounded by heavily armored non-humankind warriors.

These non-humankind beings gathered in such a high density that Ji Hao couldn't even see the natural stars in the sky clearly. Earlier, he calculated the time based on the changes of star positions that he sensed. But right now, within his line of sight, the sky was entirely covered by fierce non-humankind warriors. Many of them even had their eyes turned blood-red, fixed on Ji Hao like mad dogs.

"Hi everyone, good evening!" Ji Hao smilingly nodded to those non-humankind warriors.

Tremendous strands of sword power swept across the sky. The four-colored sword lights burst out simultaneously and harvested the lives of very non-humankind warriors they touched. Not a single non-humankind warrior managed to survive neither one sword light nor one strand of sword power. As the sword lights flashed through the sky, thousands of non-humankind warriors would be killed right on the spot within every second.

However, Ji Hao was surrounded by billions of non-humankind warriors, while more were gathering continuously. Even though Ji Hao had been killing quite efficiently, the number of the non-humankind warriors had always been rising.

Gradually, a deep buzzing noise could be heard. Following the noise, a splendidly shining city of great calamity marched towards Ji Hao through the giant crowd of army. Thousands of Yu Clan nobles stood on the city with their faces twisted. They pointed their staffs at Ji Hao and let loose a torrent of abuse.

Ji Hao swept across these nobles' chests with his eyes and found the family emblems worn on their left chests, on their luxurious robes. These emblems were exquisitely embossed with all kinds of patterns, marked with the names of their families with the written language of Yu Clan, and embossed on the middle of each emblem was a rapid, winding, misty, or boundless great river.

Only high-grade Pan Yu world families could be represented by great rivers.

These thousands of nobles were high-grade family members, while the ones Ji Hao killed in the hall were their elderships. Therefore, they all lost their minds when they saw Ji Hao.

"You should thank me in fact. I killed them, so you now have chances to climb up, don't you?" Ji Hao gave an evil smile and said, "You shouldn't blame me, because one of you asked me to come here to kill!"

Ji Hao shrugged and continued blandly, "I can tell you this. The one who asked me to do this was in the hall earlier. Just now, five-hundred and forty-nine-thousand, seven-hundred and eighty-eight people were in the hall. Ninety-seven-thousand, four-hundred and fifty-three of them escaped. The one who asked me to kill the others, the one who promised to pay me for killing those people, is among those escaped ones!"

Ji Hao spread his hands and grinned to the thousands of Yu Clan nobles, whose expressions had been changing very dramatically, while continuing, "According to the Secret Code of Law, uncaught crimes never happen, uh-huh? I like the Secret Code of Law! I like the inheritance law in Pan Yu world even more. It's so interesting, isn't it?"

The thousands of nobles who shared a bitter hatred of their enemy now glanced at each other with weird looks. Ji Hao's words immediately drew their attention to a serious problem. 'Who colluded with Ji Hao? Who brought Ji Hao into the hall to kill? What did that person want? Which family was he or she from? Was that person from my family? Will he or she affect my power and right of inheritance?' They secretly wondered.

Ji Hao smiled, and his smile grew brighter and brighter.

That was exactly what he wanted. Using machinations was a tradition in Yu Clan culture. They habitually doubted everything.

Also habitually, they were responsible only for their own interests. Therefore, with some simple words, Ji Hao destroyed their trust towards each other and pushed them into the endless panic and suspicion.

This was what Ji Hao wanted. He created this atmosphere on purpose.

Laughing out loud, Ji Hao raised the Pan Gu sword. A 'clank' of the sword echoed through the sky while a tens of thousands of meters long beam of sword light erupted from the sword.

All swords lights and sword power strands of sword intent in the heaven-killing, earth-slaughtering great formation gathered towards the Pan Gu sword, and next, the Pan Gu sword began shaking. Ji Hao felt that at this very moment, Pan Gu sword suddenly 'came alive'!

Sky-opening, earth-splitting, everything-grow, everything-perish, all living being reincarnate...Ji Hao combined the five moves and activated the sword's power with his strength, then poured the saint's power into the sword. The enormous sword light turned tangible while Ji Hao wielded the sword and hacked down to the city of great calamity.

The one-hundred and eight giant statues and three-thousands and six-hundred divine towers burst into dazzling lights simultaneously, creating a ten-miles-thick magic shield around the city. The crystalline magic shield glowed eye-piercingly with splendid lights.

But, the Pan Gu sword descended and shattered the magic shield thoroughly. The sword light descended, crushing half of all Yu Clan nobles who stood on the city wall. The three-hundred-miles-wide city of great calamity was cut into two, and the elite troops in the city suffered heavy casualties.

"Kill!" Ji Hao pointed at the numberless non-humankind warriors in front of him.

Outside Liang Zhu City, in a dense woods, a teleporting formation suddenly opened. Feng Xing, Yi Di, and large groups of carefully selected Eastern Wasteland archers surged out. One second after they marched out of the teleporting formation, they each emptied ten-thousand arrows, then flashed back into the formation at the highest speed.

Millions of arrows flew into Liang Zhu City like a pouring rain. Every arrow exploded into a large, colorful cloud of mist, which carried viruses that spread out and covered an area hundreds of meters in radius.

# Chapter 1750: Worsening Situation

Ji Hao activated the teleporting formation in the woods before he came into Liang Zhu City.

Ever since the twelve families in power of Yu Dynasty found out that Blood Crown intended to dip his finger in Pan Gu world, and were forced to ally with the humankind to defend against Blood Crown, Liang Zhu City had been in a turmoil of war. Nobles panicked, and everything turned chaotic.

The patrols around the city were weakened, as the twelve families in power began losing control of the territories of Yu Dynasty. Everything about Yu Dynasty fell into a decline.

During this period of time, Ji Hao secretly built a great number of small-scale teleporting formations in Yu Dynasty's territories. Normally, each formation could teleport at most fifty people every time. Ender emergency situations, a formation could send three to five hundred people every time, tops.

Under the leadership of Feng Xing and Yi Di, these hundreds of carefully selected Divine-level archers delivered a disastrous attack to the non-humankind army in the city with an arrow rain.

Within a second, each of these archers shot ten-thousand arrows. The millions of arrows directly killed hundreds of thousands of non-humankind warriors, leaving giant holes on the bodies of countless non-humankind warriors. Next, the secretly-made spell symbol arrowheads went off, mixed with the blood of the non-humankind warriors. They spread out rapidly and enveloped the entire Liang Zhu City.

Uncountable non-humankind warriors were affected by the viruses, and what was worse, this virus was triggered by the blood of the injured warriors. When making these arrowheads, Yu Mu merged all kinds of cruel toxins, poisons, and dark magic in them, especially the most mysterious and brutal magic among all created

by human beings, the 'blood curse'.

By using the blood of the warriors who were killed by these arrows as a trigger, merging the hatred and fear that they had before they died into the 'blood curse' spell, an indescribable energy would be generated to mix together with the virus and give it a greater power. It would make it stronger, and allow it to attack in a more flexible way.

Under the effect of the virus, bleeding blisters emerged from many non-humankind warriors' skin. The colorful bleeding blisters soon expanded to the size of fist, then ruptured suddenly and sent the virus blood spattering everywhere. The virus blood splashed on the faces of bodies of the other warriors, then the virus immediately drilled into their bodies and began spreading.

Within tens of breaths, thirty percent of all non-humankind warriors in the city were affected by the virus. They coughed loudly and scratched the bleeding blisters on their skins, which brought them an unbearable itch and pain. They tremblingly fell to the ground and instinctively attempted to find a warm place to hide.

They ran about on streets and in alleys without destinations, bringing the virus to every corner of the city.

Desperate non-humankind warriors rushed all over the city and soon lost their minds. They coughed loudly and vomited heavily. They were like countless rotten rats, as the virus spread from their bodies and infected the others in the surroundings.

Yu Meng and his allies had already escaped from the city. By now, they had been watching the horrific scene in the city.

Including Yu Dun and Yu Mi, almost all Pan Yu world top-grade nobles in Liang Zhu City were wiped out by Ji Hao. At the moment, the younger members of the tens of top-grade Yu Clan families in Liang Zhu City had been dealing with the situation in their own ways. Liang Zhu city was now like an enormous devil

dragon with tens of thousands of heads, and each head making its own decision.

A giant number of non-humankind warriors were infected by the virus, and had been spreading it in all directions. But, after a whole quarter of an hour, not one clear and executable order was given.

Everyone had been watching the virus spread, watching more and more non-humankind warriors cry and struggle in the city like walking corpses. While walking, some of these warriors softly felt to the ground, then their body tissues melted into pus and blood. At last, under the control of an unknown evil power, their bodies suddenly exploded and sent the virus blood to hundreds of meters away.

"What a nightmare!" After cutting the city of great calamity and killing thousands of large family power-holders, Ji Hao quietly stood in the midair, appreciating the scene created by the spreading virus in the city.

He covered the entire city with his spirit power. If any non-humankind leader in any corner of the city gave any order to deal with the virus, he or she would immediately suffer strands of sword power from Ji Hao and die. Till now, not a single effective order was given to control the virus, and Ji Hao had been making great efforts to maintain this situation.

Liang Zhu City was in a mess. Even the troops which encircled Ji Hao were disarrayed, as these warriors wondered if they should continue attacking Ji Hao or do something else. When the virus mist began approaching them from all directions, many of them put down their weapons and began fumbling for all kinds of antitoxic medicines.

"All-purpose antitoxic pills don't exist in this world...Without the antidote, your infection can be slowed down a little bit by all the wrong pills you've swallowed, that too in the best case." Looking at these panicking non-humankind warriors, Ji Hao 'kindly' said to

them, "If I were you, I would leave the city to rest in a clean and ventilated place instead of staying with these poisoned people."

Ji Hao misguided them. What Yu Mu created was a highly lethal virus, and was released with the power of the Disease God Streamer. But, he told these warriors that those dead ones were 'poisoned'.

Regular magic poisons included all kinds of toxic minerals, herbs, and insects. If anyone tried to deal with this virus created specially by Yu Mu through the regular methods for detoxifying magic poisons...these warriors would suffer. Before they developed a cure, seventy to eighty percent of all non-humankind warriors on the scene would die.

With his sky-killing earth slaughtering great formation, Ji Hao needed more than one month to kill all these people. But, Yu Mu could manage it within a much shorter span of time with the virus he created. As people said, 'the spreading virus would never die'.

The portal above Liang Zhu City quaked intensively as tens of enormous hands reached into Pan Gu world from the other side, giving off a suffocating pressure. These hands gripped the edge of the portal to expand it.

Following deep roars, numberless dark-skinned centaurs with long spears and giant shields fell out of the portal. Treading on dense, dark clouds, these strange creatures, which were over nine meters in height, slowly descended from the sky while howling widely.

They fell straight into the infected non-humankind army. Thousands of non-humankind warriors had just fallen on the ground. Their bodies exploded, splashing the virus blood all over these centaurs.

"What the hell?" A twelve-meters-tall muscular centaur who looked like a metal statue growled in a deep voice. He wiped the black blood off his face with a hand, then put his fingers under his

nose and sniffed carefully. Next, he was seized with terror.

"Enemy attack! Poison attack! Damn it! This is a trap! Some people drew us down here! This is a trap!" He burst into roars.

Wielding his giant axe, this powerful centaur chopped tens of Jia Clan warriors around him into pieces.

"Kill! This is a bloody trap!"

# Chapter 1751: Centaurs, Assault

Ten thousand horses were galloping ahead...

Wrong, those were millions of black centaurs carrying human-waist-thick long spears and wielding door-sized axes while roaring and charging in wave-shaped formations.

Ji Hao saw them foaming at the mouth, eyes quickly turning blood-red. These giant creatures seemed to be not so smart. They were attacked by the virus the moment they arrived in Pan Gu world, but they immediately blamed the poor non-humankind army for it.

They were gigantic, heavy, wearing strong metal armors as they charged brutally and straightforwardly.

The formidable centaur army broke into the arrays of the non-humankind army, violently lunged their long spears, and swung their huge axes. The weapons and armors clanged thunderously against each other while the body-tearing sounds echoed through clouds.

"Kill them!" The non-humankind commanders were infuriated.

Because of Ji Hao's sword formation, the non-humankind army had lost its high-grade commanders. Therefore, the troops could only fight separately at the moment. These non-humankind warriors did not want to feed Ji Hao's horrific sword formation, which seemed to be able to devour everything, with their bodies.

However, they were already gathered here, and if they cringed in front of Ji Hao, it would be hard for them to explain this to the high-grade Yu Clan leaders later. Rather than challenging Ji Hao, they decided to go bully these 'bumpkins' who were from an unknown conquered world.

Troops of Jia Clan warriors composed great battle formations and burst into raging roars as they launched counterattacks to the

centaurs army. They sped up wildly and leaped towards those centaurs, then fiercely swung their heavy weapons down.

Yu Hao, Yu Meng, Yu Huo's clone, Master Spirit-slaughter...the people with different purposes suddenly widened their eyes in surprise.

Ji Clan warriors could be called as perfect warriors. They were tall and muscular, born with strong fighting will and skill. Once they matured, they would naturally attain a Senior-Magus-level physical strength. They were the fighters of Pan Yu world; the powerful armies formed from them had conquered countless worlds.

However, these black centaurs who suddenly came from an unknown world had a much greater physical strength, and were even stronger than Jia Clan warriors. Clearly, these centaurs weren't smart, neither did they have an advanced nervous system. This meant that they could sink in a bestial frenzy on battleground easier than Jia Clan warriors, and they would suffer very little pain.

This was a group of half-humanoid, half beast battling creatures. When they roared thunderously and bumped into the Jia Clan warriors, some Jia Clan warriors staggered. The long spears and giant axes swished down. After one exchange of moves, tens of thousands of Jia Clan warriors were killed in a face-to-face battle, which was their most preferred type of battle.

Their strong fighting will became useless, while their great fighting skills delivered little effects. Millions of black centaurs surged up like a tide. In a battle like this, no fighting will or fighting skills were needed; what was needed was the purest, most original violence. Lunging spears and wielding blades, the stronger ones won while the weaker ones died!

The average height of these black centaurs was around nine-meters, and the relatively strong ones among them were even

twelve to eighteen meters tall. They were incredibly strong. Their physical strength was at a higher level than Jia Clan warriors.

They eyes sparkled with a blood-red light while twisted blood-red spell symbols had been glistening on their skins. These spell symbols released a faint blood-red mist; it seemed that these spell symbols were the reason that brought these centaurs into a frenzy. They had no fear, and they felt no pain; they were driven by the most original bestial instincts to rush forward and kill all living beings within their lines of sight.

The bone-cracking noise could be heard without an end, as a giant number of Jia Clan warriors had their bones broken by the violent and brutal attacks from the centaurs. The heavy and giant weapons had been wielded fiercely, sending Jia Clan warriors flying into the sky from time to time.

Seeing this, the eyes of countless Yu Clan nobles turned glowing-red. They had no anger nor sadness in their hearts, but only greed. These black centaurs were natural fighters, so strong. Among all species that had been discovered by Yu Clan people, they could serve as the best slave warriors!

'Which world are these black centaurs from? Who is their ruler? No matter what the cost, I have to get a large batch of black centaurs from that lucky guy. I will move them to my territory, let them grow and develop, and let them expand their families. Then, they can form an enormous army to fight for me.' Every Yu Clan noble on the scene had the exact same thought right now.

These black centaurs seemed to have low intelligence, but the Yu Clan nobles didn't need them to be smart as war machines. They needed them to be able to kill and dare to kill. That would make them the best slave warriors.

Black centaurs killed a great number of Jia Clan warriors. Because of their high killing efficiency, they were already covered in the virus blood from the infected Jia Clan warriors. A large

number of centaurs were infected too. Some of them began twitching as they fell to the ground. More of them had scary bleeding blisters emerging from under their skins, and blood spurting out of their bodies.

The more the virus affected them, the more infuriated these centaurs became. They neighed shrilly and launched indiscriminate attacks on the non-humankind warriors in the surrounding.

Suddenly, a great number of white centaurs rushed out of the portal. These white centaurs were in slimmer shapes, seeming to be much thinner than those black centaurs, and with smoother lines of bodies.

Each white centaur was holding a longbow and carrying a large quiver. Once they dashed out of the portal and heard the roars of those black centaurs, their eyes immediately turned red as well. They pulled open the longbows and shot waves of meters long, spear-like arrows to all directions.

The arrows fell from the sky like a storm while causing shrill swishing noises. Countless Jia Clan warriors by hit by these arrows. The heavy metal arrows penetrated their bodies and nailed them to the ground.

What was even more frightful was that these arrows were poisonous. The strange strong poison spread rapidly inside the bodies of the wounded Jia Clan warriors, mixed with Yu Mu's virus, and caused a series of chain reaction. The bodies of these Jia Clan warriors swelled like balloons. Then, tens of thousands of Jia Clan warriors exploded within a blink of an eye and splashed the colorful, poisonous, virus blood all over the sky.

Finally, from the crowd of panicked Yu Clan nobles, the voice of Yu Huo's clone could be heard, "Everyone, follow my order and kill every last one of these idiots!"

# Chapter 1752: The Disturbed Situation Spreads

The voice of Yu Huo's clone echoed through the entire Liang Zhu City, but failed to deliver any effect. Countless Pan Yu world nobles scornfully glanced at him, but none of them was willing to follow his order.

"Who is this guy?"

"The lucky one who found Pan Gu world. The successor of a lowly family, which doesn't even have a family emblem?"

"I remember his name. It's Yemo...Yemo what? But, his elder sister Yemo Luoye is a true beauty. I heard that he also has a younger sister called Yemo Shanye, and she is kidnapped by the barbarians in this world, right?"

"If it were his elder sister who gave the order, for the sake of beauty, I may be willing to follow that order...But him..."

In the surroundings, the nobles whispered with each other. Yu Dun, Yu Mi, and the other high-grade true power-holders were killed by Ji Hao, and the high-grade nobles in Liang Zhu City were nearly wiped out. By now, no one was leading this great non-humankind army. Who would follow an order from Yu Huo's clone who was inside Yemo Tian's body?

Some non-humankind troops continued fighting against the centaur army. They had to keep fighting. The centaurs were like mad wild dogs who never stopped attacking, and these troops were swirled in the battle without being able to pull away.

Some troops surrounded Ji Hao, keeping themselves a long distance away from him while shouting and yelling. They found that those centaurs weren't easy to defeat, and Ji Hao had slowed down in killing. Therefore, some Yu Clan nobles who were used to bullying the weak and fearing the strong ordered their warriors to

come back to Ji Hao's battleground to pretend to fight.

Some cunning Yu Clan nobles immediately gave their orders after witnessing the death of the high-grade leaders of their families. They ordered all troops under their direct command to retreat and return to the camp as quickly as possible. As all high-grade family leaders in Pan Gu world had died, now was a great opportunity to buy popularity and recruit subordinates. They needed to seize the opportunity to strive for greater powers and higher positions.

With different purposes, some non-humankind troops stayed in the city to fight, some stood aside to watch, and some hurriedly retreated, leaving the city. People bumped into each other, along with the poor ones who were infected by the virus. Soon, the entire city became like a boiling pot of gruel, filled with people who did not know what they were doing or what they should be doing.

More centaurs came through the portal. The black centaurs rushed at the front while the white centaurs shot waves of arrows to crazily kill any non-humankind being they saw. Before long, smaller sized centaurs with glowing-golden skins marched out of the portal, holding oddly shaped wands.

The number of the black and white centaurs was greater than the number of the golden centaurs by ten-thousand-folds, but these golden centaurs were as smart as human beings, and had mastered a mysterious, incredibly powerful magic. As they cast the spell and wielded their wands, the thick layer of blood accumulated on the ground began squirming like living creatures, and soon condensed into blood-red blades and swords, swishing all over the sky.

These blood-red swords and blades were highly poisonous. Quite a number of non-humankind warriors were put to the ground by slight wounds that these blood-red blades and swords caused. Glistening, vividly red blood flew out of these wounds without an end. Within a couple of breaths, these non-humankind warriors

were drained of blood.

The giant hands which gripped the edge of the portal and tried to squeeze into Pan Gu world were gone, leaving a steady flow of centaurs rushing in. The Yu Clan nobles behind the portal never showed their faces.

More and more centaurs fell from the portal. Looking at the portal, Ji Hao abruptly laughed.

It seemed that some people irresponsibly sent these violent and rampaging centaurs to Pan Gu world on purpose. They didn't show up to control these centaurs — Were they trying to consume the armies led by the high-grade nobles from Pan Yu world?

Ji Hao restrained the power of the sword formation. Countless sword power strands and sword light beams hovered slowly around him while he locked his spirit power on Yu Meng. "Master Yu Meng, isn't this the best chance?" He sent a slight voice into Yu Meng's ears, "All nobles who can control the situation were killed by me. Aren't you going to seize the opportunity and do what you want? What are you waiting for?"

Yu Meng's mouth corners twitched. As he glanced around at the disarrayed non-humankind army, a striking intent of killing suddenly flashed across his eyes. He slightly opened his mouths. Through the secret silent voice magic, he immediately gave his suggestions to his allies.

Ji Hao nodded slowly while reading Yu Meng's lips. He then looked around at the city. Those brave, strong, and fearless centaurs had already marched to the main streets of Liang Zhu City. They roared while tearing into the elite non-humankind troops.

The Jia Clan troops were elites indeed, but as people said, 'the fierce ones may be afraid of the fearless ones, the fearless ones may be afraid of the desperate ones, the desperate ones may be afraid of the muddleheaded ones, and the muddleheaded ones may be afraid

of the crazy ones...' These Jia Clan warriors were the fierce ones, while these centaurs, who had their bloodthirsty nature aroused, were all crazy. They would rather expose all their weaknesses and allow the weapons of tens of Jia Clan warriors to land on their bodies, in order to give a poor Jia Clan warrior a full strength, life-ending strike.

They had no fear. They would rather trade the enemies' lives with their own. These crazy centaurs were trading lives!

Quite a few Jia Clan troops were crushed by these crazy centaurs. Within a quarter of an hour, seventy percent warriors in these troops died, and the rest had lost their morale. Quite some elite warriors desperately fled all over the city while screaming.

Liang Zhu City fell into chaos. The rumbles of collapsing buildings could be heard from every corner of the city while raging fires puffed up. No one knew who started the fires.

Less than ten minutes after the conversation happened between Ji Hao and Yu Meng, in the boundless military camp area outside Liang Zhu City, the camps colony world troops were set on fire. Dense clouds of smoke rose into the sky while numberless weird-looking colony worlds warriors marched out of the camps with raging roars and launched fierce offensives to the surrounding non-humankind troops.

"Neigh! Our people are killed! Revenge! Revenge!"

Waves of sand rose into the air. Through his spirit power, Ji Hao saw the army from Pan Sha world rushing out formidably. Led by tens of thousands of wolf-headed warriors, billions of dark-skinned, dog-headed warriors carried heavy long swords as they marched into the camp of a Yu Clan world troop with giant steps and raised a sandstorm.

The Yu Clan world troops were caught unprepared. They never even dreamed that these 'bumpkins' would actually dare to attack them!

The military camp area outside the city was immediately thrown into chaos. Everything was covered by the fire and blood.

# Chapter 1753: Scramble

What a mess! What a great mess!

A quarter of an hour after Yu Meng and the other colony world rulers instigated their warriors to join the war, the entire Liang Zhu City was flattened. Almost all 'civilians' were slaughtered, and by now, no one but heavily armored, red-eyed, non-humankind warriors were left fighting each other.

The warriors from tens of thousands of worlds, with all kinds of weird appearances, had joined the war. The tall ones, short ones, slim ones, fat ones, square ones, flat ones; the ones with heads, the ones without heads, and the ones with multiple heads; the ones with limbs, the ones with tentacles, and the ones with their bodies covered in limbs or tentacles...

Ji Hao popped out his eyes in shock while watching all kinds of 'monsters' march out of the camps and rush into the battlegrounds. They all had their reasons to join the war, such as some non-humankind beings killed their people, burned their camps, or spat at them...

Ji Hao even saw a nine-meters-wide, meatball-like warrior, whose body was thickly covered in tentacles, point at a handsome Yu Clan young man and claim that the Yu Clan young noble had raped his daughter. Next, this giant meatball suddenly opened his large mouth and bit this poor Yu Clan noble into two.

The guards of the Yu Clan young men ragingly rushed up, then hundreds of thousands of different sized meatballs marched up and reasonably joined the war. Ji Hao helplessly looked at the sky and sighed. He didn't understand this. Was that Yu Clan young man blind? Why on earth would he rape the daughter of that meatball?

The situation was completely uncontrollable. Thousands of towering mountains around the city were torn down instantly, while the millions of miles long flat area surrounding the city was

now full of bumps and hollows. Different colored blood and other liquids were flowing on the ground; corpses piled up, and strands of strange stink were rising straight to the sky.

No one was paying any attention to Yu Mu's virus anymore, because all people in the city had lost their minds. They didn't care if they or their comrades or their enemies were infected by the virus. They would all die in this crazy war, infected or not. No one cared about their manner of death any longer.

By the end, all the warriors in the city became like headless flies, that they had forgotten about the causes of this chaotic war. Every one of them just joined it hysterically and continued the meaningless, crazy slaughter.

Ji Hao smiled, and so did Yu Meng and quite some colony world rulers who were from lower-grade small families. Their smiles were faint and mysterious in the same way — In this chaotic war, a giant number of large family nobles from Pan Yu world were crushed. Despite their noble bloodlines, their heads were chopped off and their corpses were thrown on the ground like garbage; they were just like the lowest slave warriors.

The death of every member of a high-grade noble family could deliver a harm to his family. By killing a member of a high-grade large family, one could make the family shed a small amount of blood.

Not only did the top-grade families in Pan Yu world control the highest power and the richest resources, they also possessed the noblest bloodlines in the world. Most of the top-grade powerful beings in Pan Yu world were from these families.

Every young member of these family had a chance to become a 'staff', a 'seal', or even a 'crown'. They might even break the limits of 'crowns' and reach that unimaginable level of 'saints'.

The bloodline of every top-grade Pan Yu world family originated from a 'saint'. The future of every member of these families was

beyond measure. Today, the death of every young top-grade family member was equal to the death of an infinite possibilities!

Therefore, Ji Hao laughed happily, while Yu Meng and his allies smiled restrainedly and mystically.

Amidst the chaos, Pan Gu world quaked suddenly.

The twelve enormous portals which led to the twelve water worlds, that Pan Gu world had been greedily absorbing water powers from, which existed in the sky all this while that people had already gotten used to them and ignored, suddenly disappeared.

Gong Gong borrowed the powers of the twelve water worlds and raised the flood that made the whole world face a great disaster. The twelve water worlds were absorbed by Pan Gu world. They connected with Pan Gu world through the twelve giant portals, then became Pan Gu world's prey, being drained and devoured by Pan Gu world. Everyone in Pan Gu world was able to see the twelve enormous white swirls in the sky.

But in this very moment, the twelve swirls were gone.

The twelve water worlds were drained, and Pan Gu was like a huge guy who was replenished with food and drink, burping with satisfaction.

Ninety-nine percent of Pan Gu world's spirit focused on the twelve water worlds before, when devouring them. Therefore, during this period of time, the spirit of Pan Gu world was weak and hazy. However, the moment the twelve swirls were gone, Ji Hao suddenly sensed an unclear but mountain-heavy spiritual force descending from the sky.

As a divine emperor who ruled the world on behalf of nature, Ji Hao clearly sensed Pan Gu world's spirit.

Tens of billions of souls drifted above the battleground. These souls, which belonged to the fallen warriors from tens of

thousands of worlds, had aroused Pan Gu world's great interest. It was not only because these souls could be shredded into pure souls grains, more importantly, some of these souls were powerful, and these powerful souls were marked by the great Dao of nature of their own worlds. Many of the great Dao marks on these souls never existed in Pan Gu world, as they were created by the special type of Dao belonging only to their own worlds.

'Collect these souls, shred them, and send their powers of Dao into the sky for the great Dao of Pan Gu world to absorb', this was an order given to Ji Hao by Pan Gu world.

The spirit of a world could only instinctively make its requests. As a divine emperor, Ji Hao could fulfill its request, and could also refuse to do so. However, how could Ji Hao ever refuse a request from Pan Gu world?

An enormous mill emerged from behind Ji Hao's head, the dark side representing destruction and the bright side representing creation. The mill spun slowly behind Ji Hao. The drifting souls above the entire battleground paused suddenly, then all flew to the mill.

The souls of some powerful warriors burst into raging growls. Their physical bodies had died, but their souls were still strong. They were still capable of occupying others' bodies to live again, or even directly regrow their bodies.

With fury, these especially powerful souls immediately cast the evilest curses on Ji Hao, who attempted to devour them with the mill of Dao.

Apart from these souls, Yu Huo's clone and Master Spirit-slaughter, who had both been harvesting souls from the battleground, turned their eyes towards Ji Hao with hatred and anger as well.

# Chapter 1754: Sky Devils Dancing in the Sky

Ji Hao began harvesting the tens of billions of souls from the battleground, including a giant number of powerful souls which were able to occupy the bodies of other living creatures, or even regrow their bodies to relive.

The souls of powerful beings were precious, especially to Yu Huo. Powerful souls were the source of his power. He became a 'saint' in Pan Yu world only because he was a master of soul power. The more souls he controlled, the more powerful souls he analyzed, the more powerful he would become.

To Master Spirit-slaughter and his kind, souls were food. The powerful souls were much more nourishing and tastier than the weak ones.

The power of Ji Hao's mill of Dao was mysterious and measureless, that it collected souls at an astonishingly high efficiency. The Pan Gu world natural powers were connected with the mill of Dao. The tremendous natural powers generated an invisible giant swirl around Ji Hao's body to drag all the souls to Ji Hao's mill of Dao from the battleground.

Ji Hao harvested the souls much faster than Yu Huo and Master Spirit-slaughter could do. Watching the best hundreds of souls on the battleground being devoured by the weird mill behind Ji Hao, both Yu Huo and Master Spirit-slaughter burst into raging growls.

As they exchanged a glance, Yu Huo's clone raised his arms and fell into a crowd of Yu Clan nobles while shouting hoarsely, shivering, and pretending to be scared. That was exactly what Yemo Tian would do.

Master Spirit-slaughter gave a bright roar, then pointed at Ji Hao and hollered seriously, "Your Majesty, please stay back. Let me kill this bloody...evil thing, who dares to humiliate the souls of our noble Yu Clan masters!"

As the highest master of sky devils in Pan Gu world, Master Spirit-slaughter called Ji Hao an 'evil thing', which sounded truly hilarious. However, his behavior wasn't hilarious at all. On the contrary, he acted quite fiercely and brutally.

Among the group of Yu Dynasty people, tens of thousands were controlled by sky devils. Their souls were devoured, and their bodies were controlled. Following Master Spirit-slaughter's movement, they showed weird smiles while nicely scented gusts of wind rose from around their bodies, and splendid glows emerged in the air. Waves and waves of hazy glow spread softly in all directions.

Soon, in the disarrayed non-humankind army, the warriors in about ten troops from Pan Yu world had their eyes unfocused. Almost at the same time, they turned around and looked at Ji Hao, then burst into roars. While ignoring those centaurs who had been launching attacks, they arrayed perfectly and marched to Ji Hao expressionlessly.

Ji Hao raised his Pan Gu sword, prepared to start a massacre. But suddenly, the warriors from the ten Pan Yu world troops raised their weapons simultaneously and poked into their own chests without any hesitation. Their eyes sparkled with a dim five-colored light, and bodies trembled intensely. Their blood gushed out through the grooves on their weapons.

Within one second, the bodies of the elite warriors from ten one-hundred-thousand-men troops from Pan Yu world had turned into ashes and dissipated along the winds. Their spirit blood and souls merged together into a giant, sticky, brightly red ball of blood, floating in the air.

Master Spirit-slaughter carried a huge golden staff and walked to the giant blood ball with large steps, casting a spell with a low voice. The thousands of meters wide blood ball shrank immediately into a thumb-sized, purple-black blood bead.

The blood bead squirmed and released countless threads of blood which wove into a strange, evil spell symbol in Master Spirit-slaughter's hand. Master Spirit-slaughter looked at Ji Hao and grinned viciously while flipping the spell symbol to Ji Hao.

Buzz!

The spell symbol exploded. An incredibly strong soul power wave and the shrill howls let out by a million Pan Yu world elite warriors before they died condensed into an invisible, traceless longsword that lunged fiercely to Ji Hao's embryo of Dao.

Ji Hao closed his eyes. He couldn't see the long sword of soul with his eyes, but after closing his eyes, he clearly 'saw' a blood-red sword swishing to his embryo of Dao. On the twisted long sword which looked like a poisonous snake, a million tiny faces had been struggling and squirming, releasing thrilling screams.

As a sky devil, Master Spirit-Slaughter had indeed pushed the art of soul power to a new extreme.

The souls of a million elite warriors were melted and merged together by Master Spirit-Slaughter in a single second, and the powers of all these souls were triggered by him instantly, generating this dreadful sword of soul that lunged to Ji Hao.

Countless thoughts had been emerging from Ji Hao's mind. As a high-grade cultivator, Ji Hao could have billions of thoughts flash across his mind within one second. Master Spirit-Slaughter was like a tiny thought popped up in his mind, that as it occurred, Ji Hao didn't notice it, but by the time the thought matured, the sword had already reached his embryo of Dao.

Ji Hao snorted heavily. The Pan Gu bell appeared before the embryo of Dao, and the blood-red long sword of soul clanked loudly against it.

A deafening clank echoed through Ji Hao's spiritual space. Master Spirit-Slaughter had merged the soul power from a million

elite non-humankind warriors into the sword, and the soul power of a million was triggered by him all at once, caused an outburst of a disastrous power.

The Pan Gu bell remained unmoved, but the sword of soul, which shattered against the bell, stirred up a blood-red hurricane in Ji Hao's spiritual space.

Blood-red whirlwinds roared up in Ji Hao's spiritual space. Every gust of wind contained the most hysterical screams from countless non-humankind warriors who died miserably.

Every whirlwind carried the memories of the dead non-humankind warriors, and was filled with endless negative, evil, and brutal thoughts. If Ji Hao were an ordinary human being, his soul would have been torn apart by these negative thoughts, or sunken in an endless nightmare forever.

Even with his great cultivation and the protection from the Pan Gu bell, Ji Hao still felt dizzy. As the power flows halted inside his body, the great sword formation stopped operating as well. The formation seemed to collapse.

"Impressive!" Ji Hao looked at Master Spirit-slaughter seriously and exclaimed.

"I have more!" Master Spirit-slaughter smiled evilly, then poked his golden staff on the ground. Following a crane song, a seven-colored light suddenly emerged in the sky, while countless golden transparent flowers drifted down.

Beautiful girls were dancing and singing all over the sky. In the eyes of at least ten percent of all Pan Yu and colony worlds warriors who had been fighting against each other on the battleground, a five-colored dim light glowed up.

# Chapter 1755: Being Forced to Leave

The sky devil power was heavy as mountains, pressing on the heart of everyone on the scene.

Master Spirit-Slaughter gave a cold smile as he released a colorful stream of light from his head. The light reached tens of thousands of meters high in the sky, eventually forming an enormous glowing cloud, floating in the sky with all kinds of indescribably beautiful scenes glistening in it. A fetching melody echoed, intoxicating the hearts of everyone who heard it.

Ji Hao's spiritual space was filled with the blood-red whirlwinds which were generated from shredded souls. With shock, he looked at Master Spirit-Slaughter and all the warriors on the battlefield, whose eyes were sparkling with the five-colored light.

The sky devil power preoccupied the battleground. Master Spirit-Slaughter was like a colorful sun, floating high up in the sky while emitting a dazzling, eye-piercing, colorful light. Countless warriors stiffly looked at him. Their eyes glowed with the colorful light while their souls were quickly corroded by his power, falling under his control. Within a short span of time, these warriors became Master Spirit-Slaughter's puppets, uncontrollably bursting into deep growls.

To Master Spirit-Slaughter, this battleground was perfect. Souls drifted everywhere, and the strong emotions bursting from these souls before their owners died could be sensed from every corner of this battleground. Shreds of negative emotions filled this space, almost turning tangible.

Master Spirit-Slaughter turned himself into a giant melting pot. Countless souls drifted into his body, burned by the strong emotions. The sharp emotions shreds gave vent to a terrifying power inside his body.

"B*stard! What do you want?" A Yu Clan noble from an unknown

colony world pointed at Master Spirit-Slaughter and growled hoarsely in anger. The warriors under his command were a group of muscular men with beautiful golden wings. They were quite close to Master Spirit-Slaughter. Therefore, seventy percent of those winged warriors were controlled by Master Spirit-Slaughter by now.

This Yu Clan noble was shocked and infuriated at the same time. He pointed at Master Spirit-Slaughter and shouted at him, yet he could not hide the fear in his eyes.

Over ten-million warriors followed him to Pan Gu world. This was the maximum military force that his small colony world could provide. But, before he gained enough from Pan Gu world, he had already lost a big percentage of his warriors. How could he not be infuriated? How could he not be scared by Master Spirit-Slaughter's disastrous power?

"Look at my eyes!" As more and more negative emotions surged into Master Spirit-Slaughter's body, his power soared. His spirit power covered the entire city, controlling every single movement and the slightest emotional change of everyone on the scene.

Master Spirit-Slaughter detected the anger and fear of this Yu Clan noble. Because of the fear, his heart was shaken. Master Spirit-Slaughter seized this opportunity and drilled into his heart, immediately expanding inside him.

In no time, this raging Yu Clan noble was turned into a puppet of Master Spirit-Slaughter, just like his warriors.

Facing Master Spirit-Slaughter, the strongest one among all the sky devils, one could not be afraid, sad, angry, or worried...Only a never-changing, iceberg-like heart of Dao or a top-grade treasure like the Pan Gu bell could protect one from his power.

Once any emotion was evoked, Master Spirit-Slaughter would immediately, quietly invade into one's heart> He would become the worst nightmare to control one's entire heart and affect the

soul. Eventually, one would be hunted down.

More and more Yu Clan nobles who were affected by emotions had the five-colored light shining in their eyes. Master Spirit-Slaughter made the same choice as Ji Hao did, as most of the non-humankind beings he controlled were from Pan Gu world, while a small part were the poor ones from colony worlds.

Suddenly, numberless non-humankind warriors controlled by Master Spirit-Slaughter turned around and fixed their eyes on Ji Hao from all directions.

The bloodcurdling scene staged again as all these non-humankind warriors raised their weapons high and pierced into their own chests. Their bodies dried and withered immediately, exploding into clouds of sand and dust, with their spirit blood and souls lingering in the air.

"The wrath of all creatures!" Master Spirit-Slaughter hissed with laughter. He wielded both arms and twisted the space with a tremendous power. Under the effect of his power, the countless souls which were filled with fear and extremely negative emotions melted like rubber in an oven, then merged together with the spirit blood.

A giant blood ball floated in the air, releasing shrill cries and screams. This time, even the ones staying on the edge area of this battleground clearly heard the cries and screams from the blood ball.

The blood ball shrank quickly and condensed into a twisted evil spell symbol in Master Spirit-Slaughter's hands.

From hundreds of miles away, Master Spirit-Slaughter looked smilingly at Ji Hao.

Ji Hao opened his erect eye. Nine suns burned in that eye, releasing a sharp beam of golden light. The golden light shone hundreds of miles away, incinerating every non-humankind

warrior it touched in a moment.

"You're not a Yu Clan being." Ji Hao looked at Master Spirit-Slaughter and said with a deep yet strong voice while enduring the uncomfortable feeling from his spiritual space.

"I am the most loyal servant of the noblest Yu Clan!" Master Spirit-Slaughter smiled at Ji Hao. "In order to kill the most dangerous enemy for the noblest Yu Clan, inevitably, we may make some excessive efforts sometime."

With shock and fear, all Yu Clan nobles who heard him glanced at each other. Master Spirit-Slaughter had such a great power, that tens of millions of warriors died so easily in his hands. Who was the master of this terrifying 'servant'? These Yu Clan nobles were so scared of Master Spirit-Slaughter, but at the same time, they were so greedy to have him.

All Yu Clan nobles on the scene believed that they should have such a powerful 'servant'!

With an evil smile, Master Spirit-Slaughter flipped the blood-red spell symbol towards Ji Hao. The spell symbols transformed into a million-miles-long, blood-red, enormous sword, which flew towards Ji Hao. Ji Hao activated his spirit power and shielded his embryo of Dao with the Pan Gu bell. The giant blood-red sword bumped heavily on the bell and generated a sonorous bell ring. The sword was merely condensed from soul power. Therefore, it smashed against the bell.

Once again, Ji Hao's spiritual space was immediately filled up by shreds of blood-red soul, and his brain was overwhelmed by all kinds of negative emotions and desires. Waves of high-pitched voices echoed around his embryo of Dao, tearing his soul like millions of sharp claws.

Ji Hao felt that his head was suddenly very heavy, with all kinds of uncontrollable thoughts booming in his brain. At the moment, he couldn't produce any clear and reliable thought. Consequently,

he was confused; he didn't even know what to say or do, as if his entire brain had turned into a potful of gruel.

Master Spirit-Slaughter failed to hurt Ji Hao, but managed to disable him temporarily.

Helplessly, Ji Hao gave a long shout. The golden bridge was activated, bringing him away through the space. Countless powerful Yu Clan beings were on the scene, but no one managed to clearly see how he left.

# Chapter 1756: Heart Fight

In the devastated peaceful world in the West, the ground was covered in corpses.

The blood of countless well-cultivated, powerful disciples had condensed into blood-red beads, rolling in strong gales as they tinkled silverly against the mountains of gold, jade, and pearls.

The sky was dark, yet the earth was brightly illuminated. The dark sky and the bright earth formed a sharp contrast. Between the earth and the sky, an enormous seven-colored lotus was blooming in the wind. Tens of transparent, glistening, and colorful leaves trembled around the tremendous lotus.

Every lotus leaf carried a glowing mountain; a pagoda stood on top of each mountain, and in each pagoda, a large number of disciples of Priest Mu and Priest Hua sat with crossed legs, casting a simple spell with deep voices. Scorching and pure strands of faith power had been rising from these disciples' heads, flowing into the colorful lotus like molten gold.

The entire peaceful world had now been floating upon the colorful seedpod of the lotus. Except the glistening crystal mountains and lakes, nothing but two linden trees stood on the flat earth of the vast peaceful world, far apart, facing each other.

One linden tree was withering rapidly while another was releasing a thriving life-force with luxuriant foliage. The branches of the thriving tree swayed without being blown by any wind; occasionally, linden fruits bumped against each other and immediately created a resounding melody of Dao.

The ten Pan Yu saints sat between the two linden trees with their legs crossed, facing outward in a perfect circle. Pure and strong strands of saint power had been surging inside their bodies like rapidly flowing great rivers, composing a perfect cycle with a measureless sense of Dao.

They combined their powers and created a strong light shield which covered their bodies. Each time the melody of Dao generated from linden fruits attacked, the light shield would ripple and the ten saints would shake slightly.

Priest Mu and Priest Hua had built a powerful defensive formation with the power of the peaceful world. Both of them were clones, but having merged with tens of thousands of other clones, they were now as powerful as half-step saints. With the help of all kinds of magic seals and formations buried in the peaceful world, the power they could release in this place was definitely as great as the power of an average saint. They had been fighting side by side for countless years, that they had a shared mind by now, as if they could merge into one. Their results of Dao were complementary to each other. Therefore, they could together raise up their powers by ten folds. The right time, the right place, the right people...

Ten Pan Yu saints against two Pan Gu world priests, Yu Huo and his friends seemed to be at an advantage. But the right time, right place, and right people, none of these three success factors had anything to do with them.

The time wasn't right. The great Dao of Pan Gu world had been strongly suppressing them, for which reason, they could merely release ten to twenty percent of their powers at the moment.

The place wasn't right either. This battleground was the base of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, managed by them for countless years. All kinds of mysterious formations of great Dao were built in this place, containing measureless powers. Inside this peaceful world, Priest Hua and Priest Mu were able to easily defend themselves against a large number of enemies.

As for the right people, Priest Mu and Priest Hua shared one mind and fought closely together, with absolutely no suspicion or doubt about each other. Therefore, in combination, their powers could be raised up by ten times. Unlike them, the ten saints from

Pan Yu world had combined their powers and seemed to be defending against the attacks from Priest Hua and Priest Mu joint-handedly, but in fact, they spent more energies guarding against each other than against Priest Hua and Priest Mu.

If they lost to Priest Hua and Priest Mu, they could leave immediately, then come back after they recovered. However, facing their own kind, who were 'fighting side by side', each one of the ten Pan Yu saints clearly understood that if he or she carelessly fell into another Pan Yu saint's trap, he would definitely die, both in terms of the body and the soul.

One might say that saints were immortal, but they weren't. They were Pan Yu saints, and the true will of Pan Yu world was 'destruction'. Perhaps, the saints from some other worlds were truly immortal, but hundreds of saints would fall in Pan Yu world each year.

The withering linden tree never stopped withering. The more it withered, the weaker the ten Pan Gu saints would become, and a slight amount of their spirit blood and power would vanish.

The thriving linden tree was still growing and fruiting. Along with every new branch that grew on this tree, Priest Mu's power would raise up a bit, and so would his cultivation.

Not only did the withering linden tree take away the Pan Yu saints' spirit blood and power, it had also been stealing their understandings of the great Dao. Their understandings of great Dao quietly merged into Priest Mu's Dao of quietus, making his Dao more and more mysterious and measureless.

Yi Hua and his friends were saints from Pan Yu world. In their long spans of life, they had invaded numberless worlds, and had been suppressed by the great Dao of other worlds for countless times.

They quietly sat between the dark sky and the bright earth while breathing. Following every breath, they regenerated the spirit

blood and power which were taken away by the withering tree, also regaining their understandings of Dao.

Thin strands of spirit power reached out from their bodies and silently pierced into the space of Pan Gu world, sensing the great Dao of Pan Gu world.

Starting from the most basic Dao of nature, such as the water flowing downhill and the leaves falling to the ground, they studied the great Dao pf Pan Gu world, step by step.

Their powers changed slowly towards the great Dao of Pan Gu world, bit by bit. Each time their powers changed a bit, the suppressions they suffered would ease a little. Once they turned their powers halfway into the powers of Pan Gu world, the suppression laid on their bodies would reduce to an extreme degree, and they would be capable of exerting seventy to eighty percent of their powers.

As long as they could exert seventy to eighty percent of their powers, they believed that they would be able to destroy these two clones of Priest Mu and Priest Hua, and tear down the entire peaceful world.

They were in no rush. They were truly in no rush. As experienced world conquerors, they had many ways to neutralize the natural suppression. They firmly believed that they would eventually triumph, as long as they kept learning and absorbing the great Dao of Pan Gu world.

"My friends, so many of your boys are dead." Priest Mu's voice could be heard abruptly. Judging by his voice, he was talking with a glimmer of smile. "Divine Emperor Ji Hao, who is ruling and guarding Pan Gu world, is a tough one."

"My friend, don't you worry for us. Billions of those useless boys died, but so what?" Yu Huo responded with a bright smile, "Pan Yu world is rich...We can afford to lose them!"

Priest Mu and Yu Huo both gave a chuckle.

A branch of the thriving linden tree suddenly shattered.

A tremor went through Yu Huo's body, then streams of blood gushed out of his nostrils.

# Chapter 1757: Surging Undercurrents

Ji Hao fled back to the heaven.

His spiritual space was filled with blood-red whirlwinds, which were generated from countless sharp shreds of souls. These soul shreds contained Master Spirit-slaughter's weird power and lingered in his spiritual space, not being dispelled easily.

Ji Hao slowly ground and purified these soul shreds, extracting soul grains from them. He released a part of the soul grains and sent them into the reincarnation of Pan Gu world, while absorbing the rest along with the understandings of all strange types of great Dao from countless worlds, which belonged to the owners of these souls shreds.

Before his spiritual space was cleaned out, he couldn't even move freely. He locked himself in Divine Sun Palace and ordered his warriors to guard the place strictly, and not to recklessly start any conflict with the non-humankind.

While Ji Hao stayed in the palace, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang began deploying their forces. Numberless elite dragons and phoenixes swarmed out, joining the army of the heaven. As Divine emperors, Ao Bai and Qing Qiang appointed quite a number of dragons and phoenixes to divine positions. Lots of dragons and phoenixes became divine gods, especially dragons. The position of river god of every single river on Pan Gu Motherland was occupied by a dragon.

After being appointed to divine positions, these powerful dragons and phoenixes attained the natural fortune from the heaven. The divine natural fortune not only largely improved their strengths, but also gifted them some considerable special abilities. These proud dragons and phoenixes became insufferably arrogant. They trained their warriors and practiced their battle formations outside Yao Mountain City all day long, raising formidable power waves.

They beat the drums and blew the horns, making rumbling noises to shake the heaven and earth.

For many times, if Ao Bai and Qing Qiang didn't forcibly stop them, these arrogant dragons and phoenixes would have gathered their troops and marched into Liang Zhu City already. In their eyes, the phoenix-kind and dragon-kind were invincible together.

As time went by, Pan Yu world nobles still hadn't recovered from what happened in Liang Zhu City that day. They were busy at counting losses, blaming each other, passing the buck, striving for powers and benefits, and fighting each other for the high positions left by those dead true power-holders.

All kinds of internal power struggles made the non-humankind army lazy and disorganized. The warriors from this formidable-scale non-humankind army gathered around Liang Zhu City, killing time with booze and games, as if they had forgotten about what they came to Pan Gu world for.

The humankind had taken some unsettling actions as well. Quite a number of clan leaders and princes, who were Si Wen Ming's friends and supporters, determinedly brought their subordinates and families to Yao Mountain City, stationing in the area controlled by Yao Mountain City.

Some princes from the families and clans which were located far away from Yao Mountain City could not make it to Yao Mountain City within a short period of time. Therefore, they left their families and clans and opened up new territories, building new cities, developing new farmlands and mines, and seeming to live separately with their families and clans.

The leaders of some clans and families made no reaction to this, allowing these princes to do whatever they wanted. But, some clan and family leaders were infuriated. They ordered these princes to return to their families and clans, but as they worried that these princes may join hands and generate a strong force, they dared not

to take any action.

In a purely crystalline, luxurious palace in Pu Ban City, Emperor Xun was happily drinking and appreciating a dance performed by a large group of beautiful girls who had butterfly wings along with some of his trusted ministers, his upper body bared.

Around ten Yu Clan nobles sat around him. A grey-haired Yu Clan old man raised his wine cup and grinningly nodded to Emperor Xun while saying, "Emperor Xun, these little girls aren't bad, are they? Hah, in the few worlds controlled by my family, strong creatures with great fighting capacities barely existed, but these beautiful colorful little creatures are so charming...Thirty percent of all high-grade female slaves are provided by my family."

Emperor Xun's eyes had already turned red with drunkenness. Hearing the Yu Clan old man, he chuckled and turned around, pointing at the Yu Clan old man as he laughed, "These little creatures, I like them...The more the better, the more the better. Send me one-hundred-thousand of these next time, so I can award them to my loyal ministers and brave generals."

The Yu Clan old man smiled as he exchanged a glance with his few sons and grandsons, 'Loyal ministers and brave generals'? Did Emperor Xun have even one loyal minister or one brave general under his command? All he had was a bunch of greedy cowards. If they didn't want to sell female slaves to the humankind, why would these Yu Clan people would ever fawn on Emperor Xun like this?

Giving a dry laugh, this Yu Clan old man told Emperor Xun about the news he heard, "I heard that recently, quite some arrogant people disrespected you. They have actually left..."

Before he finished, Emperor Xun threw out the wine cup in his hand. The wine cup nearly brushed across the Yu Clan old man's head.

Emperor Xun leaped up from his seat. Wearing a colorful skirt

which was woven from pheasant feathers, he marched to the Yu Clan old man with giant steps, pointed at him and hollered, "Yu Yao, what are you trying to say? Eh? Are you saying that those people with abilities left their families and clans, and never follow my orders because I am incapable? I am telling you this, in a few days, all those traitors will die!"

Yu Yao hurriedly grinned and responded, "Emperor Xun, you misunderstood...I was trying to say that, since they disrespected you, they should be destroyed. But, it would be a waste if you simply killed them, wouldn't it? Why don't you give me a special permission, then let me handle those traitors?"

Narrowing his eyes, Yu Yao continued, "Thirty percent of all my gains will be shared with you. How about this?"

Emperor Xun knitted his brows as he looked at Yu Yao with a sullen face and sneered, "You want to sell my people for profits, but I can only get thirty percent? Do you think that I'm...?"

Before his voice faded, Emperor Xun suddenly heard a deep voice from inside his head, "Accept his offer...Let him do what he wants."

Immediately, strands of cyan-colored light flashed across Emperor Xun's eyes, but deep inside his pupils, dark mists rose and dimmed the cyan lights within a blink of an eye. Breathing deeply, Emperor Xun straightened three fingers and said, "Since I don't have to do anything, I'll take the thirty percent. You should settle an advance payment with me, then you can feel free to do the rest...I'll sign you the papers now."

In front of Yu Yao's expectant gaze, Emperor Shun let his people take out a dragon leather scroll, then wrote a 'punishment warrant' with his crooked handwriting, stamped his emperor seal on it, and threw it to Yu Yao.

Underground, in the basement of the crystal palace, in a tastefully furnished secret room, ten priests in long robes sat on

the ground with legs crossed, faces showing faint smiles.

"Our Shifu are right. This emperor Xun is much easier to talk to than Emperor Shun."

"As long as we have him under control, the humankind will be under our control, and the natural fortune of the humankind..."

The group of priests all chuckled.

While chuckling, they glanced at the west with worry.

# Chapter 1758: More Unexpected Changes

Pan Yu world, in a strangely barren dark rock mountain area...

Countless broken palaces scattered between dark mountains. Among the dilapidated walls, one could find enormous pillars, exquisite statues, and broad squares, with beautiful embossments. Every piece was silently telling the glorious stories of this place.

However, everything was gone. All palaces and halls had collapsed. In the ruins, snakes and insects crawled and grasses grew out from the brickwork joints, to face the coldness, barrenness, and loneliness of this place.

In the center of this vast rock mountain area, in a bowl-shaped arena, numberless Yu Clan nobles, who were wearing long black robes with family emblems on their chests, coldly and solemnly stood on the high grandstands.

Over a thousand different sized black stone pillars stood on the hundred-miles-wide flat area in the middle of the arena. A mottled metal family emblem was hanging on every stone pillar, and the pattern embossed on each emblem was a magnificent river.

A large armchair was placed on each stone pillar, facing the center of the arena. At the moment, Yu Clan nobles in luxurious clothes sat on these chairs, wearing crowns and holding staffs, releasing suffocation energy waves from their bodies. Each one of them was shouting and yelling while banging the pillar tops thunderous with their staffs.

A buzzing noise could be heard from every corner of this arena, mixed with the shouts and yells of over a thousand powerful beings and the bangs caused by staffs hitting against the pillar tops.

Strong sound waves quaked the surrounding dark rock mountains slightly. In the air, dense dark clouds had been rolling.

Giant lightning bolts dazzled out of the clouds from time to time and struck violently against the ground.

Ji Hao delivered a massacre in Liang Zhu City. He killed tens of 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' in Pan Gu world, and a giant number of important members of high-grade noble families. The news had been delivered back to Pan Yu world, immediately shaking a series of top-grade families.

Who would fill the vacancies of the 'crowns', 'seals', 'staffs', and family leaders? Who should be in charge of the Pan Gu world-conquering mission? The interest disputes in here were as complicated as ten-thousand spider nets. Over a thousand top-grade families, which held the highest power of Pan Yu world, gathered in here, wrangling for the enormous and extremely complicated interest-distribution issue.

The wrangle seemed to never end. These top-grade family people even forgot to send new leaders to Pan Gu world, because all of them had been trying so hard for the tremendous profits from Pan Gu world, which were 'right in front of them'.

Yu Hua and the other nine Pan Yu saints were trapped in the peaceful world. Without these ten saints to make the final decision, this wrangle which had been happening between more than a thousand top-grade families could never come to a clear result within ten years.

Sitting upon the stone pillars, the representatives from all top-grade families had been shouting as loudly as they could. They growled, hollered, cursed in anger, and swore with hatred...Ji Hao mercilessly killed nearly half of the one-hundred and eight 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' in the 'Holy Realm', which was the highest organ of power of Pan Yu world. By now, over a thousand top-grade families were striving for the vacancies Ji Hao created, and this, was a great show.

The Yu Clan nobles standing on the grandstands with solemn

expressions had also been colluding, connecting with each other in their own secret ways. They made all kinds of promises to each other, found allies, set traps for their competitors, and played all kinds of schemes.

These nobles seemed to be unmoved =, but in fact, because of their whispered words, the blades and swords had sparkled in the beautiful cities, the magnificent halls, and all other corners of Pan Yu world. Because of what they said, heads were chopped off and corpses were quietly turned into nothingness.

In Liang Zhu City, Ji Hao did nothing but brutally slaughter a batch of top-grade nobles, but what he did had raised a tsunami in Pan Yu world. The nobles who died in the inner power struggle between these top-grade families were more than the ones Ji Hao killed by a hundredfold.

High up in the air, behind the thick dark clouds, a few strong yet barely perceivable spirit powers had been watching the arena in the black rock mountain area.

The owners of these spirit powers weren't weaker than Yu Huo and the other saints who had intruded into Pan Gu world. But apparently, they were awfully afraid of the barren black rock mountain area, that they dared not to reach their spirit powers to those black rocks, but could only watch the arena from far away.

A magical power blocked these spirit powers. The owners of these spirit powers clearly knew that some people were gathering in that arena, but they couldn't hear what they said, nor figure out what they had been scrambling for.

The only thing they knew — A large batch of top-grade nobles from Holy Realm suddenly fell. The spirit soul marks left in the Holy Palace in the Holy Realm by those fallen 'crowns', 'seals' and 'staffs' suddenly collapsed, as their souls had all vanished without leaving a trace.

Based on Pan Yu world's powerfulness, even the death of the

lowest-grade 'staff' could be a shocking news. But this time, even quite a few 'crowns' had fallen, and this immediately caught the attention of some powerful beings who had been in deep sleep for countless years.

With a cursory research, they found out that the fallen ones were all from the families descended from Yu Huo, Yu Ji, and the other eight saints. Afterward, they searched through the entire Pan Yu world as fast as they could, even including the most secret forbidden areas and deathly zones, but failed to find any trace left by the ten saints.

For conquering a world, ten powerful saints joined their powers, and so many high-grade nobles died...These powerful, mysterious beings from Pan Yu world were immediately attracted.

As the thousand top-grade families descended from Yu Huo and the other nine saints scrambled for powers and profits, these powerful beings who had just woken up from deep sleep began combining their powers as well. They mobilized all forces belonging to the families under their direct lead, woke up countless secret scouts, and began collecting all useful information.

"A bunch of smart little kids...They sneakily gathered in where 'Yu' fell to hide from us with the forbidden power...I will award these little kids."

In the air, someone was complaining through an imperceptible spirit power,

"We already have some messages delivered from that world. Twelve extremely lowly small families, which don't even have family emblems, seemed to have discovered a marvelous great world...Yu Huo and the others went there."

The owner of this spirit power was excited, "This world is valuable. It made Yu Huo and the others join hands."

"But obviously, they failed...Look at those kids. Yu Huo and the other saints didn't show up to settle their disputes, did they? Does this mean that they are in trouble as well?" Said another spirit power.

"No matter what, a world that made Yu Huo and the others join hands is worth our effort. I suggest we should send some capable scouts to the world first."

"I agree."

"Agree."

"Yes, that's what we'll do."

# Chapter 1759: The Punitive War

Liang Zhu City, a temporarily-built square filled with people...

Same as what was happening in the arena back in Pan Yu world, on this square which was still stained by blood, even having some body parts scattered on it, countless non-humankind nobles had been trying their best to earn actual benefits.

Ji Hao, Yu Meng, and Master Spirit-slaughter had wiped out all core top-grade leaders from Pan Yu world. Numberless people had eyes fixed on the vacancies left by these people, and countless people had been trying to make the most out of this opportunity.

Amidst the thick crowd on the square, Yu Huo's clone stood on a roughly built stage as he wielded his arms and screamed hoarsely, "I am Yemo Tian, the true successor of Yemo Family. Yemo Family is the leading family which discovered this world...According to the law of inheritance of Pan Yu world, I have an absolute right of inheritance to this world!"

Slapping his chest with both hands, he yelled, "So, my friends from colony worlds, please support me, support me..."

A giant stone flew out sideways, smashed on the head of Yu Huo's clone, directly hitting him down the stage and making his face be covered in blood. Hundreds of meters away, a gorgeously dressed Yu Clan young man pointed at Yu Huo's clone and shouted, "Ignore this lowly one...The right of inheritance? Do you even deserve to mention this word as a lowly thing from a lowly family?"

"Ado River Family!" This Yu Clan young man growled with a dry voice, " Ado River Family, the noblest bloodline, the noblest family in Pan Yu world...With the name of Ado River Family, I will raise an army to conquer this world. Anyone who is willing to join my army will gain glory and wealth...and the friendships from my family!"

A large number of non-humankind nobles from colony worlds cast their sparkling eyes on this Ado River Family young man.

As the rulers of colony worlds, they weren't interested in glory and wealth. Pan Gu world was rich indeed, but without a doubt, the profits from Pan Gu world would mostly fall into the pockets of top-grade family people, while they would only gain very little.

But, the friendship from Ado River Family...

If Ado River Family promised to marry their direct descendants to their families and to support their families, they would consider making this deal! As the rulers of colony worlds, they had indeed been living great lives, but wouldn't a strong backer benefit their families even more?

In a distance away, a few young men from a branch of Lanao River Family had already startled a battle against the other few young men.

A couple of muscular Yu Clan men stood aside and remained silent with heads held high. Standing around them were tens of giant black centaurs. Without question, these few Yu Clan men were the owners of these centaurs. In the chaotic war that happened days ago, these crazy centaurs had left everyone on the scene an especially deep impression.

These centaurs were extremely valuable. They were perfect fighters, fearless, strong, and brave, even stronger than Jia Clan warriors. Warriors like these were highly precious resources, that any large family from Yu Clan world would want them.

In order to draw these centaurs to their sides, the young men from a few large families started a wrestle against each other, without showing any elegance and gracefulness of Yu Clan nobles. They crazily fought, revealed each other's buried secrets, and cursed each other...

Suddenly, a blade light flashed across the crowd. A young man,

who was fighting against the other few, let out a shrill howl. A heavy flying blade sank into his rib area and nearly cut his body into two. Blood spurted out of his wound, making the countless non-humankind nobles in the surroundings burst into screams and stir up the crowd.

No one knew who launched the attack. As blade lights and sword lights dazzled, tens of non-humankind nobles fell on the ground while screaming. Some other people even cast large-scale magic and created a raging fire and fierce thunderbolts that covered half of the square. The situation went further and further out of control.

Yu Huo's clone, who was put to the ground by a stone, slowly stood up. Looking at the square which was now in a great mess, he laughed with a hissing voice, "Just like this, just like this... Fight, be disordered, the more disordered the better...Souls are so tasty, you idiots... Just die and become my source of power."

Yu Huo's clone curved a mouth corner and gave an especially vicious smile while continuing, "Yu Ji, Yu Fen, Yu Luan...You bloody things... Do you want to make profits off me? Will you cry in sadness when all these colony warriors under your command die?"

Master Spirit-Slaughter stood aside, grinning brightly. He and Yu Huo wanted to do the exact same thing.

As a Yu Clan noble, Yu Huo was instinctively taking his revenge from the ones who attempted to take away his things. Unlike him, Master Spirit-Slaughter didn't have a standpoint or morality. He wanted nothing but slaughter. He wanted the situation to become more chaotic; he wanted more people to die, and more, stronger, negative emotions to be released. He even wanted to destroy the entire Liang Zhu City right now and finish off all non-humankind beings in the city; that would be the best.

Mingling in the crowd, Yu Huo's clone and Master Spirit-

Slaughter grinned evilly. Pushed by some people, intentionally or not, the situation turned more and more uncontrollable. In this very moment, a non-humankind slave walked through the disordered crowd and came to Yu Huo while foaming at the mouth. He kneeled heavily on the ground and reported to Yu Huo with a deep voice, "My highest master, Master Yu Yao sent back a message...That greedy and stupid human emperor has accepted his offer and signed the warrant. Now, we can reasonably launch offensives on all human beings that we want to kill."

Yu Huo and Master Spirit-Slaughter both raised their eyebrows and grinned delightfully.

"I'll lead a troop myself to help Yu Yao punish those human beings, and to fulfill the promise we made to our ally." Yu Huo looked at Master Spirit-Slaughter and said, "You stay here and hold the situation...I don't want these idiots to calm down, I don't want any of these idiots to hold the true power. I want them to keep messing around like this. Can you do that?"

Master Spirit-Slaughter smilingly nodded to Yu Huo and responded, "Of course, believe the power of my kind, please. Creating fear and panic, that is the greatest ability of our kind...But surely, the casualty could be heavy."

Yu Huo's eyes sparkled with a dim misty light as he chuckled, "Why would I care? As long as some of them remain alive... later on...more idiots will bring themselves to us. Don't scare them away."

Master Spirit-Slaughter nodded, remained smiling. Yu Huo hurriedly left the square with a group of people.

In the next morning, led by Yu Huo and the twelve families in power from Yu Dynasty, a tremendous army marched to the territory of human beings. They were going to 'punish the traitors for Emperor Xun' — They told this to the world.

# Chapter 1760: Xiong Shan

A large black steel axe swept across a giant tree which required ten people to put their arms around. The thick tree trunk was immediately broken.

With a sullen look, Xiong Shan put the axe behind his back, lifted the tree with both arms, and carried it on his shoulder. Then, he walked to the new territory of his clan which was under construction. This 'iron bone tree' was incredibly heavy, as its density was much higher than that of iron. Xiong Shan carried the hundreds of meters tall tree and walked quickly, crushing the rocks he trampled on.

Xiong Family descended from the Mi Family, also from Gong Sun Family. Xiong Family people were descendants of Emperor Xuanyuan. Xiong Shan was born in an average branch clan of Xiong Family, but according to the tradition, his clan used up all the resources to raise him as the only prince of the clan.

Despite his 'prince' title and Emperor Xuanyuan's bloodline, Xiong Shan clearly understood that as a 'prince' of Xiong Family, he could never be compared with those 'princes' from Gong Sun Family. At the very least, those young princes stepped into the world of Divine Magus at the mere age of ten, while he broke into the level of Divine Magus when he was almost thirty. How could he ever compare with them?

As 'Prince Xiong Shan', he was just like a brand of his family, to defend the dignity of the leader and elders of his clan when facing the elders from Mi Family or even Gong Sun Family.

Xiong Shan was clearly aware of this fact, and hadn't been talking his 'prince' title so seriously. He had been working hard and fighting hard. In Chi Ban Mountain line of defense, he fought more than ten great battles against the non-humankind. Back there, he met a lot of talented young human beings who had also

been working hard and fighting hard, such as Lie Mountain Kang, Huaxu Lie, and Si Wen Ming.

Yes, Xiong Shan was a diehard supporter of Si Wen Ming; he could even be called as one of Si Wen Ming's most trusted subordinates. In battles against the non-humankind, the hundred-thousand-men Black Bear Army under Xiong Shan's leadership would always stay as Si Wen Ming's army. The Black Bear Army could be counted as a part of the army under Si Wen Ming's direct command.

"Stubborn elders!" Xiong Shan complained with a muffled voice while dragging the iron bone tree to the entrance of the new territory of his clan.

Tens of carpenters walked over with large steps and took over the tree from Xiong Shan's hands. After processing, this tree would become a part of the new gate of his clan. However, Xiong Shan didn't think that was right. This tree, which was cut off by him with a single axe move, was clearly not a tough material. Could a gate made of this crappy wood protect his beloved families?

Even though his clan couldn't afford to build a gate with divine materials collected from natural stars, like the gate of the 'Giant Bear Valley' where the base of Xiong Family was located, the new gate needed to contain at least a hundred types of essence metals, then be strengthened by all kinds of powerful spells, so it would be able to defend his people from wild beasts and those bloody non-humankind beings.

However...

Xiong Shan stood in the position of the new gate, gazing at the new stations of his clan in a valley which had strands of smoke curling up. His brows were knitted.

Because of Emperor Xun, serious disagreements happened between all clans in Xiong Family. Some Xiong Family clans were willing to follow Gong Sun Family, to support Gong Sun Xun to the

end of the day, while some Xiong Family people refused to follow an incapable emperor. Same as Xiong Shan, these people were surely Si Wen Ming's supporters.

Because of the endless disagreements, Xiong Family had split up. Xiong Shan and his father took away over a million elite family members and left the base of Xiong Family. Traveling for tens of thousands of miles, they came to this valley to build their new homeland.

"Abba, I need to say this. This place is not safe!" Xiong Shan abruptly pulled out his giant axe and burst into growls. "We should go to Yao Mountain City...Emperor Ji Hao has sent messengers to tell us that we can go to Yao Mountain City! We will be there in a month tops! We shouldn't stay here!"

Among these one million people, only about a hundred thousand were true elite warriors. Even though they also had over a hundred thousand 'iron-skin black bears' as their battle beasts, it was still impossible for them to fight against the strong non-humankind troops.

They needed to go to Yao Mountain City, to be together with all Brother Wen Ming's supporters, and to combine everyone's power, so the enemies could be defeated...

However, the few stubborn elders from his family had been saying that they shouldn't stay under the protection from other people, and brave Xiong Family man should build their own foundations, and things like that. Hearing them, Xiong Shan truly wanted to cut open their heads with his axe to find out exactly how their brains worked.

Did those elders really think that Xiong Shan didn't know? They discovered a large crystal mine in this valley, with quite a few precious types of metal minerals, which could be used to forge high-grade magic treasures. That was the reason why they insisted on staying here.

For the meaningless profits, these elders exposed their people to danger. Xiong Shan was already speechless in anger.

This valley was located right on the main path between You Xiong City and Pu Ban City, and the people who would come to this area were all core members of Gong Sun family. Why would Xiong Shan's clan stay here? To wait for an offensive launched by Gong Sun Family people?

Xiong Shan growled with rage. His father walked out frowningly from a cottage as he stared at Xiong Shan without saying a word. His eyes were filled with anger too. Based on Xiong Shan's childhood experiences, he immediately figured out what his father wanted to say — 'Don't cause me troubles. Go stay aside!'

Xiong Shan walked to his father with large steps. Also silently, he reached out both hands and attempted to convince his father with his strength.

All of a sudden, a shrill sound of horn could be heard. Xiong Shan looked back with shock and saw dense clouds rising from Pu Ban City. Following sonorous shouts, large groups of Jia Clan warriors were flying towards him. These Jia Clan warriors trod on metal plates, which were faintly golden and dazzling with sizzling electric currents.

Behind the thousands of Jia Clan warriors was a formidable army. Heavily armored human warriors mounted on mountain-sized bears were singing a battle song. Among their troops, hundreds of totem flags fluttered in the wind. Painted on each flag was a roaring winged bear trampling over mountains.

Judging by the flying bear battle flags and the totem flags of Xiong Family, this army was an elite force from Gong Sun Family!

In other words, these elite warriors with flying bear battle flags were under Emperor Xun's direct command!

Alarming horns echoed around the station of Xiong Shan's clan.

From a distance away, a flying bear rose into the sky and approached swiftly. A scrawny old man on the bear's back yelled at Xiong Shan, "Under the order of the human emperor, traitors will be punished…You, without a doubt, are definitely traitors."

"Attack! Kill every last man…And leave all woman!" The old man shouted.

# Chapter 1761: Underestimate the Enemy

Heaven, in the divine palace which was built with divine sun crystals, Ji Hao sat on a high stage. A golden beam of light descended from the sky, covering him entirely. The purest sun fire and the strongest essence sun power was being absorbed by Ji Hao's body, and his body had become like a pure ray of light, a pure fire.

The mill of Dao floated behind him, spinning slowly. The vast natural reward power had turned the entire mill pure golden. Shreds of screaming and wailing blood-red souls had been dragged out of Ji Hao's spiritual space by the mill of Dao. The mill would clear away the hatred, death power, and all other negative types of energies inside these soul shreds, then turn them into the purest original soul grains.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, the Pan Gu bell floated above his embryo of Dao. Every nine breaths, the bell would buzz. The deep and strong bell ring contained an original, pure might, filling Ji Hao's spiritual space and shattering the blood-red soul pieces in the whirlwinds, which had almost merged into one. Strands of twisted blood-red mist were gone along with the bell rings, while a giant number of glowing spell symbols were left on Ji Hao's embryo of Dao. These spell symbols were generated from the understandings of the great Dao which belonged to the owners of these soul shreds, who were from countless worlds.

Compared to the past, Ji Hao's embryo of Dao had turned taller, stronger and clearer, and the power it released became deeper and greater. The feelings of Dao had been flowing across his heart as his cultivation was improving, and his foundation of Dao was growing stronger and stronger.

Master Spirit-slaughter trapped Ji Hao temporarily with a mystical power. But by doing this, he had done Ji Hao a big favor. He slaughtered millions of warriors and forged their souls into a

giant sword, then sent the sword into Ji Hao's spiritual space, along with all the understandings of the great Dao of numberless worlds that those warriors possessed.

Ji Hao felt their Dao. He absorbed their Dao and made connections with his own Dao. With the help of the Dao from other worlds, Ji Hao had attained a deeper and deeper understanding of the great Dao of Pan Gu world. Gradually, his Dao had gone beyond the limit of Pan Gu world, and made a tiny step outward.

"Dao, too wonderful for words!" Ji Hao breathed slowly. Strands of his spirit power condensed into hair-thin threads and pierced into the space, triggering the natural powers. While traveling through the world with his spirit power, he slowly fell into a magical 'sleep state'.

His thoughts paused like ice, leaving a tiny part of his soul and spirit awake, flowing across and sensing the world.

Outside the divine palace where Ji Hao stayed to get rid of those annoying blood-red soul shreds inside him, Man Man was wielding her giant hammers while shouting thunderously to direct large troops of Zhu Rong warriors and Gold Crow warriors under Ji Hao's command for a combined great battle formation. Thousands of troops had been moving quickly, composing an enormous great formation that had been releasing a fierce aura of killing and raising a raging fire.

The childishness had started fading from Man Man's face. With a serious look, she gazed at the warriors who had been practicing hard for the new formation, eyes glowed with a light of determination.

"Ah, Ji Hao has been working really hard alone. I can't be like back in Southern Wasteland, eating and playing all day...I need to help Ji Hao." Man Man kept her eyes widely open while murmuring. Unwittingly, the people around Ji Hao had changed.

At least, Man Man now understood that she had 'responsibilities'. Despite the fact that she didn't know what 'responsibility' exactly meant yet, she had already taken the responsibilities upon herself.

In another hall in the heaven, Shaosi, Zhu Rong, Ao Bai, Qing Qiang, and Donggong sat on five magnificent thrones. A series of tinkles could be heard from a few large cauldrons while strands of purple mist rose. The purple mists condensed into divine letters that flew up from them and landed softly on the tables before the five of them.

This was the 'office' of the five divine emperors. Since Ji Hao locked himself in the sun palace, Shaosi was doing his work for him.

Abruptly, Ao Bai burst into laughter, "Those non-humankind monsters... I thought they would learn to behave themselves after the massacre Ji Hao caused. But surprisingly, they don't seem to accept the failure willingly, but have sneakily begun doing things again."

Slapping a divine letter loudly against the golden table before him, Ao Bai sneered, "How can such a scum exist among Gong Sun Family people? Emperor Xun is working with the non-humankind...Hehe, punish the traitors? He's nothing but the human emperor. Facing the power of the heaven, what is he?"

Shaosi looked at Ao Bai with shock. Even though they were on the same side, Ao Bi's words were...

Indeed, the heaven ruled the world on behalf of Pan Gu world itself, and the five emperors could be seen as the embodiments of the world's spirit. Nevertheless, a divine emperor shouldn't talk about the human emperor, the leader of all human beings, who were the owners of the natural fortune of Pan Gu world, like that. If the rest of the world heard him, another wild storm would be started.

"Emperor Ao Bai?" Said Shaosi coldly, "What exactly is

happening?"

Ao Bai grinned and stood up, then responded carelessly, "Some small things that can bring us free natural rewards. You shall not worry."

This divine letter was sent by Xiong Shan. He contacted the heaven through a secret magic, then sent this letter to ask for help. Ever since Ji Hao became a divine emperor, Si Wen Ming's diehard supporters had all learned the secret magic to contact the heaven the first time around. Was there a communication method in this world that could be faster and more convenient that delivering the words through the heaven?

Ao Bai locked his fingers together, then pointed at the cauldron from which this letter came. A strand of purple mist was sent into the cauldron, as Ao Bai smilingly said, "Xiong Shan, hmm... Xiong Family is a branch of Mi Family, which is a branch of Gong Sun Family. Xiong Family is also descended from Emperor Xuanyuan. How come Xuanyuan family kids are getting weaker and weaker over generations? For this small situation, he's scared enough to shout at the heaven for help."

Ao Bai chuckled and continued flatly, "Since he has already asked for help, we can't just ignore him. He's on our side, after all. I told him to hang on for an hour, then the reinforcement from the heaven will arrive."

Without giving Shaosi, Zhu Rong, Qing Qiang, and Donggong a chance to join the conversation, Ao Bai shouted out loud towards the outside, "Ao Hao, Ao Hao, where the hell have you been? Get over here! Go, take a troop through the heaven and earth great formation to save Xiong Shan's clan...Chop those non-humankind monsters and those human scums who are on their side. I want you to bring back a million enemies' heads!"

Xiong Shan asked the heaven for help, but Ao Bai didn't take that seriously.

The dragon-kind had their own information channels. Therefore, Ao Bai knew about the inner conflicts happening in large human clans and families these days. He knew that quite a large number of Si Wen Ming's supporters had left their clans and families with their people to build their own homes.

In Xiong Shan's letter, he clearly pointed out that his clan had a population less than a million.

A million human beings was something that Ao Bai couldn't care less a bout. A couple of strong pure-blood dragons were able to easily suppress a human clan with a population of over ten million. Xiong Shan's clan was way too weak.

Ao Bai refused to believe that the so-called 'formidable enemy' of such a weak human clan was actually a big deal. He sent Ao Hao with an elite dragon troop, because he thought it didn't require a great army to save Xiong Shan's clan.

# Chapter 1762: The Clan's Disaster

Xiong Shan looked at the three-legged cauldron in front of them with a dark face.

"An hour?" Stomping his foot against the ground, Xiong Shan said through gritted teeth, "If only we have an hour...Oi, are you happy now?"

Glancing at the group of elders who stood aside silently, Xiong Shan gave an angry growl, then carried his dark steel axe and rushed to the entrance of the new station of his clan. The few elders glanced at each other quite embarrassedly. "We were thinking for the clan, and this place is indeed great!" One of them murmured.

In Xiong Shan's clan, everyone who could fight had already picked up a weapon and stood nervously on the newly built city wall.

In the new station of the clan, which was still under construction, one could hear the children crying and women comforting them with trembling low voices from the crude cottages. Everyone understood that this clan wasn't capable of defending against the enormous army out there.

Xiong Mudun was Xiong Shan's father. At the moment, he was standing before the unfinished new gate with the strongest men from his clan, yelling hoarsely at the scrawny old man from Gong Sun Family, whose name was Gong Sun Chai. "We, Xiong Family people, are Emperor Xuanyuan's descendants as well! How can you point your weapon at your own families?"

Gong Sun Chai chuckled as flying bear cavalries lined up orderly behind him. The giant flying bears were breathing deeply and raising clouds of dust from the ground.

More and more flying bear cavalries had been showing up from

the other three families, approaching Xiong Shan's clan. Once the clan was encircled by Gong Sun Family warriors, Gong Sun Chai would give his order to attack.

Gong Sun Chai drawled mockingly, "Families? Nah. You don't share the same family name with us, so how can you be our families? I won't waste my time talking to you today. Every man in your clan will die anyway. The weak ones, sick ones and old ones will all die, and only young and beautiful girls can live. Hah, they're gonna live a good life."

The expressions of Xiong Mudun and Xiong Shan changed immediately. Killing all the men and kidnapping the girls? What was Emperor Xun doing? He was the emperor of human beings, but right now, he was acting even more brutally than non-humankind monsters. What on earth did he want?

"We want to see Emperor Xun!" The elders from Xiong Shan's clan rushed out and growled, "We want to see Emperor Xun! We don't believe that Emperor Xun will give orders like this! We need to..."

Gong Sun Chai lazily waved his hand. Following his moves, tens of flying bear cavalrymen each pulled out a three-edged spear and threw at the group of elders. As a cold light flashed across the air, the group of elders burst into howls. The spears penetrated their bodies and brought them hundreds of meters away, then nailed them on a small rock hill.

"See Emperor Xun? Do you deserve that?" Deep sounds of horns could be heard from a distance away. Under Gong Sun Chai's order, the entire clan was encircled by flying bear cavalrymen. Gong Sun Chai slightly upturned his mouth corners as he glanced at Xiong Mudun and Xiong Shan, then turned back and gave his order with a cold voice, "Attack...Kill all men, kill the old people and the sick ones, but don't heart the young girls. Be careful, those are all money. Don't accidentally injure them!"

A faint misty dark light flashed across the eyes of the tens of thousands of flying bear cavalrymen behind Gong Sun Chai. They let out deep roars and drove the giant flying bears up to the sky, marching to Xiong Shan's clan like a tremendous dark cloud.

Xiong Mudun roared out loud and leaped straight into the sky. He wielded a heavy bronze club, smashed the head of a cavalryman, and threw him down from the bear's back. But, before he could launch the second strike, ten cavalrymen lunged their spears together. Xiong Mudun didn't manage to defend himself, and the spears went through his chest. Spell symbols sparkled on the spearheads, blowing his body into a cloud of blood mist.

"Abba!" Xiong Shan screamed as he wielded his axe and cut a few cavalrymen around him.

Countless long spears swished to him from all directions, squeezing streams of blood out of his body. Xiong Shan wielded his large axe widely and created a dark whirlwind, but still couldn't defend himself against the best cavalrymen from Gong Sun Family.

Xiong Mudun's blood rolled in the sky. As the leader of a clan, he was a Divine Magus, and was able to regrow his body from a single drop of blood. He wasn't as powerful as the Divine Magi from Mi Family or Gong Sun Family, but in five breaths at most, he could regrow his body.

Gong Sun Chai gave an evil smile. He took out a dark bone wand and quickly pointed at the cloud of blood mist.

A hazy, glowing green wolf was released from the wand that pounced onto the blood mist. A shrill howl could be heard from the blood mist as Xiong Mudun's soul was instantly killed by the dark curse that Gong Sun Chai cast. The blood mist condensed into blood drop, falling from the sky. But, before the blood landed on the ground, Gong Sun Chai took out a black bone bowl and waved it in the air. Xiong Mudun's blood merged into a long stream and flew into the black bowl.

"Abba!" Xiong Shan again gave a raging roar. He cut up three long spears coming at his chest, then raised his head to look at the sky.

Where were the reinforcements? Just now, the heaven replied that the reinforcement would arrive soon. But, where were they? An hour? Was that a joke? How could Xiong Shan's clan ever hold off Gong Shun Chai's great army for an hour?

Thousands of metal plates flew over. From the metal plates, heavily armored Jia Clan warriors jumped down with twisted smiles. They raised their heavy weapons and joined the battle. Mixed with the Jia Clan warriors, flying bear cavalry troops broke the crude wall built by Xiong Shan's people and easily marched into their station.

Xiong Family was merely a branch of Gong Sun Family, while Xiong Shan's clan was just a branch of Xiong Family. How could these people possibly rival the elite cavalrymen from Gong Sun Family? With one strike, Xiong Shan's clan was broken.

Shrill shrieks could be heard from the station, with ear-piercing noises of weapons hacking into flesh bodies. The screams of young girls stabbed into Xiong Shan's heart like the sharpest swords and brought him an unbearable pain. He turned back and saw some girls run out of their houses, crying and screaming. But, a couple of Jia Clan warriors mercilessly punched them to the ground and tied them up.

At this moment, when he turned his head back, tens of long spears penetrated his body.

Xiong Shan roared like a dying beast. Beams of yellow light burst from his body. Along with a bell ring, a heavy, dark-yellow, large bell rose from his body and gave vent to a tremendous magnetic force that made the hundreds of cavalrymen around him vomit blood, and be sent flying up to the sky.

Xiong Shan stared at Gong Shun Chai with hatred, raised the axe high, and rushed at him desperately.

# Chapter 1763: Warning Signals of Approaching Enemy Forces Are Seen on All Sides

In the heaven, Ao Hao, who was just appointed as the Sidu Dragon King, coughed loudly. After giving a flick to his long fluttering robe which was embroidered with flying dragons, he proudly waved his hands to the eight-hundred dragon warriors behind him, then gave vent to a resonant shout.

"Let's go!"

High up in the air, tens of natural stars dazzled suddenly. Water-tank-sized, splendid starlight poured down from the sky and landed on an enormous platform in the heaven. Streams of mist spiraled up and coiled around each other, as the affiliated teleporting formation in the heaven and earth great formation was activated. Ao Hao and his dragon warriors were immediately surrounded by a thick layer of starlight.

The space quaked slightly. In the next moment, Ao Hao directly showed up above Xiong Shan's clan, with eight-hundred pure-blood dragons, three-thousand mix-blood flood dragons, and a hundred thousand elite water-kind warriors. Beams of starlight spread out as Ao Hao roared towards the sky. Watery clouds rolled over from all directions, steadying Ao Hao and his warriors in the sky.

"That Xiong Shan kid..." Ao Hao put on an act, intending to show his divine god might. But, abruptly seeing what happened down on the ground, he couldn't help but widen his eyes and get choked on his own words.

The slaughter had already happened to Xiong Shan's clan. Tens of thousands of young girls were tied up, being sent onto a flying fort.

About a hundred-thousand flying bear cavalrymen encircled a large battleground and had been laughing, shouting, and wielding their weapons to cheer for the hundreds who had formed a battle formation while launching offensives in the battleground. Xiong Shan was their sole target.

The dark-yellow bell floated upon Xiong Shan's head. Strands of magnetic force had been raising the dust and sands from the ground to build a strong earth wall to defend Xiong Shan. The cavalrymen charged and broke the earth wall over and over again, leaving deeper and deeper wounds on his body.

Xiong Shan was covered in blood. His spirit blood had been consumed by eighty to ninety percent. He was almost drained. He staggered, about to fall to the ground at any moment. He had lost too much spirit blood that even his wounds healed more and more slowly.

Even his inherited magic treasure, the 'earth magnetic bell', now had tens of cracks on it because of the multiple heavy strikes. Suffering a few more strikes, this powerful treasure would certainly be shattered.

For a couple of times, those flying bear cavalrymen had the chance to kill Xiong Shan for good. But, they were obviously making fun of him. They injured him badly, then let him recover, then injured him again.

Gong Sun Chai stood aside and laughed quite loudly, "Ayaya, what a strong boy! Still standing? Impressive! Hah, chop his legs this time. Haha, see if he can struggle up again."

Hundreds of cavalrymen turned around, laughing as they moved in a perfect triangular charging formation. After a shrill whistle, their mounts marched rumblingly to Xiong Shan in an unhurried, ordered pace.

Ao Hao paused for a second, then burst into raging growls. "Xiong Shan kid, don't be afraid. Your Master Ao Ritian is here!"

He shouted.

"You, listen, this kid is under my protection now. If any of you dare to hurt him again, I'll peel your skin and pull out your tendons today!"

Gong Sun Chai immediately raised his head. Seeing Ao Hao, who was with a human body and a dragon head, his pupils instantly shrank to the size of needlepoint. "Dragons? This has nothing to do with you. This is between human beings. Are you dragons going against the order from our human emperor?"

Ao Hao said no word but sneezed loudly. Followed his sneeze, a pouring rain fell from the sky. The fist-sized raindrop froze in the air, then rapid whirlwinds were stirred up, rolling these ice crystals down to the flying bear cavalrymen like arrows.

A clattering noise could be heard without an end as the sharp hailstones fell from the sky. These hailstones seemed to be the size of fists, but under the effect of Ao Hao's divine god power, each hailstone was as heavy as a mountain. The hailstones landed on cavalrymen' bodies and caused loud muffled thuds, bringing them a great pain as they disabled them from even raising their heads.

Gong Sun Chai suffered the most. Because of Ao Hao's 'special care', thousands of hailstones smashed on his body, leaving him no time to react. Gong Sun Chai fell down from the back of his mount with all of his bones broken. He was almost turned into a pile of meat paste.

Fortunately, his mount, a flying bear, defended him on its own initiative. The bear spread its strong featherless wings, shielded Gong Sun Chai, and saved his life.

"Charge! Charge! Charge!" Gong Sun Chai hurriedly swallowed a few pills and relieved himself slightly from the pain, roughly fixing his broken bones. Then, he screamed out loud with a dry voice, "Dragons dare to interfere in our business? They dare to ignore Emperor Xun's orders...Are they rising in rebellion? Charge! Lay

waste to them! Emperor Xun will take all responsibilities."

No one paid more attention to Xiong Shan. Under the hailstones, as the best warriors and the strongest troops of Gong Sun Family, the cavalrymen raised their shields to protect themselves while driving their flying bears up into the sky and swiftly forming a dense battle formation.

Following the sonorous sounds of horns, more flying bear cavalrymen flew up into the sky, wave after wave. From every direction, they encircled Ao Hao and his warriors.

Deep buzzing noises could be heard as hundreds of millions of metal plates rose into the air. Heavily armored Jia Clan warriors trod on the metal plates and approached Ao Hao and his people with evil, twisted grins.

A distance away in the sky, dense clouds dispersed. Three flying forts tore apart the clouds along with tumbling thunders. A giant number of ferocious-looking, eagle-headed, lion-bodied, winged creatures flew out of the forts and slowly approached Ao Hao and his warriors.

Within ten minutes, Ao Hao and his warriors were surrounded by an allied army of the non-humankind and the humankind. Ao Hao was completely outnumbered, as the enemy's army was way greater than his, by about a hundred folds.

Ao Hao's face was darkened a little. Human beings and dragons were all Pan Gu's descendants, but at this moment, the biggest weakness of the dragon kind was exposed — Compared to the humankind, the number of dragon warriors was too, too little. A hundred times greater number of warriors was enough to close the gap of individual fighting capacity between the humankind and the dragon-kind.

"Damn, this time...Master Ao may suffer some loss." Ao Hao gripped his weapon and murmured quite nervously.

In the heaven, divine letters had been ceaselessly flying up from the few large cauldrons, landing on divine emperors' tables. Almost at the same time, the clans of thousands of Si Wen Ming's diehard supporters encountered the attacks from the enemy's armies, which were in way greater scales than themselves. They all asked the heaven for help through the secret magic.

Carelessly and with little concern, Ao Bai divided the elite dragon force under his command into small troops and sent to the clans which had asked for help.

# Chapter 1764: Dragon-slaying Magic

Divine letters were flying and orders were given; dragon generals roared excitedly, and over-energetic dragon warriors wielded their weapons, laughing out loud while darting around in heaven. The heaven and earth formation had been buzzing slightly, sending troops of dragon warriors to every corner of Pan Gu Motherland with the powers of natural stars, which existed all over the world.

"I am the fairest leader." Ao Bai proudly puffed his belly out and smiled at Shaosi, Zhu Rong, Donggong, and Qing Qiang, "I know that the ones who asked for help are all friends of Si Wen Ming and Ji Hao. So, once they asked, I sent out reinforcements...No time was wasted at all. The reinforcements I sent to them are at an exact same scale. That is natural reward, and I shall be rewarded by the world!"

Ao Bai gave a large grin, exposing his shiny white teeth. As Bixi, one of the dragon ancestor's nine sons, he possessed a devastating strength that no other dragon could ever surpass. Perhaps, because he was already gifted with a tremendous strength, he wasn't so smart, just like all his descendants.

Shaosi and Zhu Rong, who were both battle-experienced, looked at Ao Bai with twitching faces. They wanted to remind him that it was certainly inappropriate to divide the reinforcements he sent out so evenly. But, Ao Bai gave a bright laughter and said unquestionably, "Today, I will show you the power of our dragon-kind...Hahaha... Are human beings the owners of Pan Gu world? The owners of natural fortune? Hah, if we have to fight a war, you still need to count on our dragon-kind!"

Waving his hand strongly, Ao Bai sneered, "The enemies may be large in number, but we, brave dragons, only need to move one finger to destroy them, to cut off their heads, to make their blood flow like rivers, to cover the earth with their corpses...Ahyaya, who dares to fight me?"

Waves of power spread out of Ao Bai's body, quaking the entire hall. Shaosi and Zhu Rong exchanged a glance and helplessly stopped talking. But silently, they both began giving urgent orders. Under their orders, the Gold Crow warriors and Zhu Rong warriors immediately started gathering in the heaven. The water-kind force led by Shermie, as well as the water army under Wuzhi Qi and Yuan Li' commands, were all ready for fighting a war as well.

Above Xiong Shan's clan, Ao Hao looked at the enemies, which had been approaching from all directions like dark clouds, with a dark face. The enemy's army was greater than his by a hundred folds, and this fact brought him a headache.

Suddenly, a few eagle-headed creatures widely opened their beaks and released bolts of thunder towards Ao Hao. The water-tank-sized thunderbolts struck on his body and stirred up sparks against the scales on his face. Small electric currents sizzled on his face, even curling up his beard.

The pride and arrogance buried deep in the bones of all dragons now erupted from Ao Hao. Ao Hao raised a pair of long, four-edged swords, and roared, "Dragon boys, follow me...Hah, a bunch of human kids and some weird non-humankind monsters...Wipe them out!"

Ever since the dragon-kind, the phoenix-kind, and the humankind appeared in Pan Gu world as Pan Gu's descendants, human beings, who had no sharp claws or teeth, no strong scales, no ability to fly, couldn't live in water, and could barely do a thing, had been looking down upon by the other two kinds from the prehistorical era to the present. All dragons firmly believed that a strong dragon warrior was able to easily take out ten-thousand human warriors.

The enemy's army was larger in number by a hundred folds. Was that a big deal?

Ao Hao opened his jaws and let out a frosty stream of water. Countless dark ice pieces spun swiftly in the water. The human-head-sized ice pieces clanked deafeningly against each other while the water stream swooshed across the sky, swirling up tens of thousands of eagle-headed creatures and over a thousand flying bear cavalrymen.

The water was bone-piercingly cold. The dark ice descended from every direction and crushed every eagle-headed creature in the water, breaking the bones of the flying bear cavalrymen from Gong Sun Family.

Ao Hao burst into wild roars. His body expanded to thirty-meters-tall while he wielded the pair of hundred-meters-long, four-edged swords. Smashing them everywhere like a pair of pillars, he brought up fierce gales and bolts of lightning. At this moment, Ao Hao gave a full display to the mighty strength possessed by the dragon-kind. Wherever his swords reached, not a single flying bear cavalryman managed to take one strike from him.

Among all flying bear cavalrymen under Gong Sun Chai's command, tens were famous heroes from Gong Sun Family, peak Divine Magi. They growled resonantly and marched to Ao Hao, lunging their long spears along with beams of cold light.

Ao Hao showed no sign of dodging. He bumped straight into the cavalrymen's weapons, yet the sharp long spears merely sent up a few sparks of fire against his scales, failing to penetrate his skin. He swung his swords sideway and made the tens of peak Divine Magi vomit blood, breaking their bones and sending them flying away.

This was just a random strike launched by Ao Hao, but was extremely destructive. The tens of Divine Magi were sent flying backward, and five of them even exploded. Their bodies blasted into a cloud of blood mist, and their severely-cultivated magic treasures were shattered.

"Dragon-kind...is invincible!" With one quick strike, Ao Hao crushed the encirclement of tens of Gong Sun Family generals. Behind him, the eight-hundred pure-blood dragons roared thunderously and expanded their bodies to twenty to twenty-five meters tall. Wielding all kinds of heavy weapons, they marched into the formation of the flying bear cavalry.

These mighty dragons were enraged. They straightened their scales, sharp as blades. The eight-hundred pure-blood dragons charged for once and severely injured over ten-thousand cavalrymen. The rest of cavalrymen moved into battle formations and launched ferocious offensives against these powerful dragon warriors. Hundred-thousand flying bear cavalrymen against eight-hundred dragon warriors resulted in no winners. More cavalrymen came to help, and large groups of Jia Clan warriors joined the war. Numberless eagle-headed warriors had been approaching, while more and more non-humankind warriors encircled Ao Hao's army. Some non-humankind warriors had already begun wrestling Ao Hao's hundred-thousand water-kind warriors.

Xiong Shan stood on the ground while gasping. "Kill, kill, kill, kill all the traitors of the humankind who joined those non-humankind monsters...Kill, kill, kill, kill all the non-humankind monsters who have been hurting human beings...Kill, kill, kill!" Seeing Ao Hao shuttle between the enemies, he wielded his large axe and growled hoarsely.

A black finger suddenly appeared behind Xiong Shan, along with a shrill swishing noise. The sharp fingertip penetrated Xiong Shan's head, sending him flying hundreds of meters away.

Xiong Shan was injured severely. He fell to the ground, unable to stop twitching. Wu Bi slowly walked out of the air, surrounded by coiling dark mists. Narrowing his eyes, he looked at the dragon warriors who were fighting in the sky. He had completely become a devil.

"Dragons...impressive! We, Chu Wu Clan... No, we are Original

Devils now. Our ancestors created this 'dragon-slaying magic' with so many efforts, and finally, we have a chance to use it today...Dragon-slaying magic, a top-grade, supreme secret magic in this world. The dragon-kind is strong, so we dared not to expose it for so many years. But today, we shall let you dragon boys know that you are not invincible in this world!"

Wu Bi grinned viciously as clouds of dark mist spread out of his body.

# Chapter 1765: Dumbfounded

Dragons were the most gifted warriors in Pan Gu world.

They inherited Saint Pan Gu's unbreakable physical body, and had indestructible scales, claws, and teeth. Their horns could even penetrate the sky, and their breaths could overturn the oceans and shake the natural stars.

Ever since the dragon-kind appeared in this world, dragons never dreaded anything. Back in the ancient time, dragons showed no respect to the heaven or the earth. They trampled upon the world, and did whatever they wanted. The heaven couldn't restrain them, neither could the saints. They were arrogant, violent, and domineering; facing them, all the other creatures in Pan Gu world would tremble.

All of this could happen because they were strong enough, especially the dragon ancestor and his nine sons. They were supernaturally strong, that not a single living being in this world could restrain them.

Just like this moment. Ao Hao and his eight-hundred pure-blood dragon warriors had been fighting rampantly in the sky, roaring thunderously. With one slight touch, they could send flying bear cavalrymen flying away, and kill Jia Clan warriors. Eagle-headed creatures had been falling from the sky, their bodies totally devastated.

Following Ao Hao's wild laughter, the eight-hundred pure-blood dragon warriors raised fierce gusts of wind with their heavy long spears. Flying bears were torn apart, cavalrymen were thrown away, strong shields were penetrated, and thick armors were shredded as easily as shredding papers.

"Fight!" Ao Hao wielded his pair of giant four-edged swords. Every strike he made quaked the space and stirred up terrifying whirlwinds. His eyes were glowing-red as he roared excitedly,

"Fight, kill, blood, bodies...Human kids, you are still too weak, too weak, too weak...Compared with your dragon ancestors, you're like shell-breaking chickens!"

Ao Hao laughed, and his thunderous laughter quaked the earth.

He was qualified to be proud. The cultivation system of human Magi was created by Emperor Fuxi by referring to the cultivation methods of the strongest creatures in the world, based on the circulatory system of the blood flows inside the incomparably strong bodies of dragons, with his great wisdom.

This cultivation system had been perfected by generations of human leaders and emperors. But until now, the Magi Palace hadn't managed to figure out the structure of all small meridians inside human bodies, while the dragons were born with fully activated meridians and strong bodies.

In terms of physical body, a peak-level Divine Magus couldn't possibly defeat any dragon that was over a thousand years old. Not to mention the fact that dragons' scales provided them with an incomparable defensive power, which was greater than the defensive power possessed by any Divine Magus by a hundred folds. Ao Hao bumped back and forth in midair, making groups of elite Gong Sun Family warriors vomit blood. Of course, he was qualified to laugh at the entire humankind!

"You Xiong City boys, fight!" From the dense formation of flying bear cavalrymen, some Gong Sun Family commanders burst into raging roars. Countless long spears were straightened and lunged towards Ao Hao and his dragon warriors from all directions, causing deafening swishing noises.

The clanks echoed through the clouds. Fire sparks shone on Ao Hao and his warriors' bodies as their strong scales defended them against the spears. The hardest strike launched by the flying bear warriors merely managed to penetrate the scales of the youngest dragon warrior and leave a slight slash on his body.

"Hahahah... In ancient times, the ancestors of your human beings were as obedient to our ancestors as their grandsons...Now, you have developed, but you Master Ao Hao still has to teach you a lesson... Human beings can never trample upon dragons!" Ao Hao swung his sword and sent tens of cavalrymen flying away, then yelled, "Dragons are always your masters!"

Ao Hao spouted loudly and wildly, but he had been restraining his power.

When facing the non-humankind troops led by Jia Clan warriors, he would definitely try to kill them. Not many non-humankind warriors survived after being sent flying away by him. But when facing the cavalrymen from Gong Sun Family, he would show his mercy, even though he had been shouting pretty loudly. He would injure them severely, but wouldn't truly kill them. These cavalrymen were mostly Magus Kings, that those severe injuries wouldn't truly harm their life-force.

Wherever Ao Hao reached, bodies had been flying all over the sky. The flying bear cavalrymen were vomiting blood with broken bones, while the Jia Clan warriors were crushed, even blasted into blood mists.

The dense blood mist spread in the air, even turning the sky faintly blood-red.

On the ground, Wu Bi laughed with creepy hissing voice, "Ao Bao, ancient dragon? Hehe, indeed, your dragon-kind is strong. But, we human beings are also Pan Gu's descendants. We aren't born with muscular bodies, don't have sharp claws, teeth, and strong scales, but we have brains that you dragons will never have!"

Abruptly, Wu Bi slapped himself heavily and said, "Hah, I was too angry to remember that we are no longer human beings. We are the noblest Original Devil! Haha, we are wiser than human beings!"

Thick dark mists surged out of the bodies of Wu Bi and the group of Chu Wu Clan people behind him. Sad dragon roars could be heard from the mists. The dark mists squirmed and condensed into a series of twisted, weird, centipede-shaped spell symbols in the air, then swiftly flew into the battleground.

The long, twisting spell symbols airily landed on the weapons of the flying bear cavalrymen and Jia Clan warriors. Following deep dragon cries, the edges of these weapons were wrapped in a faint layer of dark mist, and glowed with an evil dim light.

The Jia Clan warriors who had been holding these weapons felt that their blood boiled uncontrollably. Driven by a strange power, a corrosive, weird energy was generated from inside his body.

Emitting a faint stink, this weird energy flew to the weapons, then these warriors wielded the weapons and hacked on Ao Hao and his warriors.

The puffing noises could be heard without an end. As easily as cutting watermelons, the thick scales of Ao Hao and his warriors were easily cut broken. The dimly glowing weapons sank deeply into their bodies, cut open their muscles, and left deep wounds on their bones.

Tens of dragon warriors even had their arms cut off by some cavalrymen and Jia Clan warriors. Blood spurted out of their wounds, but the blood was slightly dark, and had a faint stench.

"What? What?" Ao Hao was the enemies' main target. In an instant, he suffered over a hundred strikes. His thirty-meter-tall body was now covered in wounds, with blood squirting out.

Ao Hao was dumbfounded. In panic mode, he looked at his warriors, who were also severely injured, and paused.

# Chapter 1766: The Sad Melody of Dragons

On the high stage built from golden sun crystal, Ji Hao's entire body was burning with essence sun fire. His body had become like a pure source of light, a pure fire. Abruptly, he raised his head and let out a long breath.

A golden fire swept across the entire palace. The space was moving, and everything was burning. This palace could withstand the divine sun fire, but just then, it quaked slightly, nearly melting due to Ji Hao's breath.

An extremely thin beam of sunlight descended from the sky and flew into Ji Hao's erect eye. Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. Through the sunlight which shone upon the entire Pan Gu Mother Land, he saw Ao Hao and the other dragons sinking in a trouble.

Not only Ao Hao and his brothers who were fighting in Xiong Shan's clan. Above the other clans who were under attack, large groups of dragons were injured seriously by the allied force of Emperor Xun and the non-humankind. Because of the mysterious dragon-slaying magic, even the most ordinary iron blades were gifted with a horrifying power, to even harm dragons. The dragon warriors sent out by Ao Bai were wounded severely. Blood had been gushing out of their bodies.

"Damn you...kids." The similar roars had been bursting from Ao Hao and the other dragon commanders. Sonorous dragon roars echoed through the sky, while strong dragon powers spread in the air, wave after wave. The injured dragon warriors quickly shifted back to their original dragon shapes.

Above Xiong Shan's clan, Ao Hao was howling. His body expanded rapidly. Within a blink of an eye, he became a hundred-miles-long dragon. He opened his mouth and let out a heavy breath. A giant, frosty stream of air condensed into differently sized dark ice crystals, swishing out of his mouth and wiping out a

giant group of enemies before his face.

This time, Ao Hao didn't show any care. Over ten-thousand cavalrymen and their mounts were crushed by the ice crystals. Even the smallest ice crystal was as large as a water tank. Their bodies were broken and blood was frozen, fist-sized blood crystals falling from the sky. The warriors frozen by Ao Hao lost all their life-force in a moment, without being able to recover.

Ao Hao raised his giant claws. Lightning bolts had been sizzling on his miles wide claws, while dense dark clouds rolled over and wrapped his body up. The rumbling thunder could be heard from the dark clouds without an end, quaking the sky and the earth.

"Kill them all!" With bloodshot eyes, Ao Hao roared to all his dragon warriors.

The same order was given in thousands of battlefields. Following these orders, all dragon warriors clenched their teeth and expanded their bodies while enduring the piercing pain. Their scales grew thicker and thicker, larger and larger. Soon, numberless ten-miles-long giant dragons showed up in the sky.

Ao Hao swung his enormous claws down. A mile-wide sphere of thunderbolt exploded in the sky, instantly sweeping across the sky for a thousand miles in radius. In the dark clouds, thunderbolts dazzled and wove into a thick spider web that covered the entire sky.

Countless eagle-headed creatures, who were from another world and now fought for Emperor Xun, screamed with hoarse voices in pain. Under the disastrous dragon power, tens of millions of them were incinerated, falling from the sky like burning coals.

A gale rolled up the dark clouds. The hysterical dragon roars resounded through the whole world. Enormous dragons were flying across the sky, leaving afterimages like the most terrifying monsters living in the deep sea. The dragons were infuriated by the dragon-slaying magic. They put down all worries and burdens

and started the craziest slaughter.

"Kill all these long worms!" Gong Sun Family commanders had lost their minds as well. The dragons started a slaughter without reflecting on the consequences. As a result, the most elite flying bear cavalries from Gong Sun Family and suffered great losses. The Gong Sun Family commanders were driven mad as well. They also gave the orders of killing, regardless of everything else.

Numberless flying bear cavalrymen straightened their weapons, which had turned transparent and were glowing dimly, emitting a dark, evil power. Waves and waves of cavalrymen marched to the enormous dragon warriors like tidewater.

The dragon warriors were roaring wildly. They breathed strongly, wielded their claws, and whipped the space with their muscular tails, stirring up waves of giant ripples from the space. Every single strike they made crushed numberless Jia Clan warriors and human warriors, shook the sky and the earth, and caused the thunderous noises that echoed over hundreds of miles.

The blood of human warriors, Jia Clan human warriors, and strange creatures from other worlds poured down from the sky like blood-red waterfalls. Along with the blood, countless body parts fell like garbage.

Dragons were tremendous. Yet, no matter how hard they tried, they couldn't stop human warriors from approaching them. The weapons enchanted by the dragon-slaying magic tore apart their thick scales and pierced into their bodies, taking away giant pieces of their skins and muscles with every strike and leaving huge wounds on their bodies.

Large streams of dragon blood fell from the sky like boiling lava, mixing with the blood of the other creatures while pouring on the ground. Dragon blood contained a vast energy, and its density was higher than the density of iron by a thousand folds. The dragon blood smashed on the ground like waterfalls, quaked the earth

intensely, and flattened countless mountains.

Wu Bi and his people had been laughing madly and triumphantly amidst the dazzling lightning bolts. Original Devil altars were built up, swiftly converting the blood falling from the sky into a dark and strong original devil power, which was sent into the bodies of Chu Wu Clan people who waited aside.

This was a scheme, a slaughter, a cruel and brutal offering ceremony.

The blood and flesh of countless living beings had been offered to Original Devil. Original Devil converted the fresh blood, which contained an inexhaustible life-force, into the purest devil power, then sent it into Chu Wu Clan people' bodies to remold their souls and bodies, turning them from people into 'devils'.

The army Emperor Xun sent out was composed from the most elite flying bear cavalrymen from Gong Sun Family, and the most elite troops from the other large families and clans who followed his lead.

The dragons had now been crazily slaughtering these best human warriors. The death of these warriors took away the life-force of the humankind; by killing one of these warriors, the dragons could weaken the humankind a little.

Even worse, since Original Devil had generated a primordial spirit clone, the devils sealed in the hearts of all dead human warriors had merged with his primordial clone. Original Devil had been growing stronger and stronger, and all pieces of him had been coming together.

Shrill dragon roars echoed through the entire world. The heads of tens of dragons were cut off. The hill-sized dragon heads fell from the sky while the tremendous dragon bodies smashed on the ground and caused rumbling noises, twitching intensely.

This was just a start, not the end.

Within an hour, thirty-thousand pure-blood dragons had fallen in thousands of battlefields. Sad dragon roars resounded across the clouds. This was the heaviest loss that the dragon-kind had ever suffered since the beginning of Pan Gu time.

# Chapter 1767: The Cauldron Appears in the City

"Damn it, damn it, damn it!"

In the Central Hall in Heaven, Ao Bai received the casualty report the first time around. He was startled by the number, that he even sat straight on the ground. Afterward, he leaped back up and gave vent to a torrent of shouts in rage and panic.

Within one hour, tens of thousands of pure-blood dragons had fallen, and this number had been increasing. Ever since Saint Pan Gu created this world, since the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind and the humankind appeared in this world as his descendants, this was the heaviest casualty that the dragon-kind had ever suffered.

Dragons inherited Saint Pan Gu's unbreakable body, and the humankind inherited Saint Pan Gu's fertility. For this reason, the humankind had been developing thrivingly, but reproduction had always been an extremely difficult thing to the dragon-kind. A healthy young human couple could have a baby in one year, but a dragon couple may need to wait for a thousand years to have a baby if they weren't lucky. Normally, a healthy young dragon couple could bear a baby in a hundred years.

Consequently, the dragon-kind had a small population. The total number of dragons was less than one in a thousand as large as the total number of human beings. Within a mere hour, tens of thousands of pure-blood dragons died. This unbearable loss made Ao Bai's brain blank. Besides shouting and cursing, he couldn't do anything.

Qing Qiang looked at Ao Bai with pity. The phoenix-kind also descended from Saint Pan Gu, and had a poor fertility. Losing tens of thousands of pure-blood members, Qing Qiang clearly knew how badly this news would shake the society the dragon-kind when it was delivered.

The dragon elders would peel Ao Bai for this severe loss, despite the fact that he was Bixi, a true ancestor who lived since the prehistorical time, and one of the dragon ancestor's nine sons, as well as the fact that the dragon-kind had paid a sky-high price to regenerate his body.

Whether he was a divine emperor, an ancestor or not...Proud dragons never cared. This time, Ao Bai would suffer!

"Send reinforcements now!" Donggong's Haotian mirror floated in the hall, showing them what had actually been happening in every battlefield. Because of this magical mirror, Ao Bai found out that the Original-Devil-kind people had cast the dragon-slaying magic. Wu Bi noticed nothing.

With a bone-deep hatred, Ao Bai stared at Wu Bi and the other Original-Devil-kind people through the mirror, then yelled at Shaosi, Zhu Rong, Qing Qiang and Donggong with a dry voice, "Send reinforcements now and kill all Chu Wu Clan people...I owe you one...Qing, what do you say?"

Qing Qiang knitted her brows. She was hesitating, daring not to give the order.

Since the ancient time, Chi Wu Clan people had been weird and crazy. Among all human beings, they were the weirdest, the most twisted ones. For studying all kinds of evil magics, they even attempted to assassinate human emperors...Now, they had cast a dragon-slaying magic. Did they have a phoenix-slaying magic as well? Who would know?

Qing Qiang had been pretty close with Ao Bai since the prehistorical time, and presently, they were both divine emperors, who should be natural allies, with their powers combined. However, Qing Qiang clearly understood that she couldn't afford to lose tens of thousands of pure-blood phoenixes!

Donggong directly spread his hands, saying no word.

He had less than one-thousand men under his command. Those male cultivators had been following his lead since the beginning of the world. They were all well-cultivated and powerful, with mysterious, great abilities. But, they were merely hundreds. What could they possibly do?

The battles were being fought in thousands of battlefields. Donggong's hundreds of men couldn't fill all battlefields, not even if they were torn into pieces!

Donggong gave a bitter smile. He raised his head and looked at the ceiling, silently wondering if he should make a deal with that old man. He was a divine emperor now. Spirit Wa planned this indeed. However, that old man did mention it earlier to inspire Spirit Wa. Only because of that old man did Spirit Wa, Ximu and himself come up with this plan. That old man pushed him onto a divine throne, but he still needed fighters!

To be honest, as a divine emperor, Donggong still had to fetch the water, start the fire, and boil the tea himself when he wanted a cup of tea. Should a divine emperor be like this?

Shaosi and Zhu Rong both frowned. Zhu Rong glanced at Ao Bai. He didn't want to offend the dragon-kind. Therefore, he chose to remain silent. Shaosi stood u and began talking with a soft voice and a calm tone, "Emperor Ao Bai, thousands of battles are being fought in different places now, and the enemies are vast in number. How should we deploy our forces?"

Spreading her hands, Shaosi continued straightforwardly, "At the moment, their warriors are three times as many as ours...Let your people retreat to Yao Mountain City. We can only try wear them out with the power of Yao Mountain City. For face to face battles, we are outnumbered for now."

Including Emperor Xun's warriors and the non-humankind forces gathered by Yu Yao from tens of worlds, the enemies who had encircled the dragon troops at the moment were indeed three

times as many as the total warriors stationed in the heaven. This number was based on what people saw from Dong Gong's Haotian mirror.

Even if Shaosi and Zhu Rong did everything they could to help the dragon-kind, scattering their warriors to all battlefields, the situation would only be worsened. Their warriors would be split up and sieged by the enemies.

Shaosi was right, even though she sounded passive. The best way to save as many people from this situation as possible was to let the dragon warriors retreat to Yao Mountain City with all the attacked clans as quickly as possible, then send out the heaven troops to reinforce them.

"But..." Ao Bai panicked. He didn't know what to say or what to do.

In the golden, burning palace, Ji Hao slowly opened his eyes and took a deep breath. A hazy golden figure split up from his body with difficulty, left the heaven, and disappeared into the starry void instantly through the sunlight above his head. Flashing through the space for a couple of times, the golden figure came to the sun world.

Masterly pushing aside the raging fire burning in the sun world, this golden figure walked to the underground hall where Si Wen Ming had locked himself in to concentrate on his cultivation for bringing the nine cauldrons under his control. The golden figure pushed the door open, walked in, and began talking, "Uncle, emergency... Can you do something?"

Si Wen Ming now looked like an ordinary human being. He slowly opened his eyes, looked at Ji Hao, and responded with a deep voice, "I have one cauldron, a breath away from success...Help me with some natural reward power, and I can do it in a moment!"

"Good!" Ji Hao gave a bright shout. His golden clone quickly

walked behind Si When Ming, locked its fingers together, and slapped heavily on Si Wen Ming's head.

Strands of purple mist and golden light surged out of Ji Hao's clone. The natural reward power he earned earlier in Liang Zhu City by slaughtering numberless non-humankind nobles was sent into Si Wen Ming's body. The energy which had been releasing from Si Wen Ming's body was immediately boosted. Abruptly, a three-legged round-shaped cauldron by his left side burst into a dazzling light.

"Let's go!" In about ten minutes, Si Wen Ming waved his hand and gave a deep growl.

The three-legged cauldron buzzed rumblingly and darted out of the sun world at lightning speed, leaving a frosty light beam behind. While flying out, the cauldron grew larger and larger. It flashed through the space and left a series of afterimages behind. Within a moment, it appeared in the sky above Pan Gu Motherland.

Following a thunderous buzz, a hazy cyan-colored light flashed across the sky. Next, a million-miles-tall, incredibly heavy cauldron landed in Pu Ban City, releasing a prehistorical power. The especially heavy power immediately swept across the space ten-billion-miles in radius around Pu Ban City.

Popping noises could be heard without an end, as the bodies of all eagle-headed warriors under Yu Yao's command within this area exploded simultaneously.

# Chapter 1768: The Supernatural Phenomenon Created by the Cauldron

The three-legged cauldron was a million miles tall. No ordinary human being could ever imagine that height, or climb to the top of this cauldron in a lifetime.

The cauldron was more towering than any mountain in Pu Ban City; the power it released was old, mighty, and noble, as if the holiest human emperor walked up from his time and returned to the human world, looking at all human beings in Pu Ban City with the gentlest, mildest eyes.

This tremendous cauldron stood in Pu Ban City, but strangely, it did not block the sunlight.

The sunlight poured down from the sky as usual, warm and gentle, nourishing all living beings and generating new lives. The golden sunlight flowed on the surface of the quaint cauldron like water, rimming this gigantic and magical cauldron with a beautiful, golden edge.

The cauldron stood firmly in Pu Ban City. The ones right under the cauldron, the ones surrounding the cauldron's legs, or the ones by the edge of the city who were thousands of miles away from the cauldron, all saw this cauldron, no matter which direction they were facing. Some stood with their backs to the cauldron, but still, they saw the cauldron immediately.

The cauldron stood in Pu Ban City, also in the heart of every human being.

This was an unimaginably enormous cauldron, yet all people, even the weakest ones, clearly saw all of its details in one glance. From the top to the legs, from the inside to the outside, this cauldron was thickly covered in inscriptions.

These inscriptions didn't exist when the cauldron descended

from the sky. But the moment it landed in Pu Ban City, a cyan-colored light sparkled and chiseled countless characters on the cauldron. These characters looked like the dragons, the phoenixes, the swimming fishes, unsophisticated and lively. Over ninety percent of Pu Ban people were illiterate, not to mention these old sacred characters which were used only by the top-grade powerful beings in this world.

Nevertheless, the moment these characters appeared, everyone 'saw' them and directly figured out their meanings.

'Saint Pan Gu created the world. The saint's body became dragons, soul became phoenixes, bloodline generated human beings...'

'Without strong scales, sharp teeth and claws, fragile human beings struggled in the prehistorical world for survival. In the daytime, they were hunted by fierce beasts and birds, and in the night time, they were attacked by poisonous snakes and bugs. Human ancestors begged powerful creatures for protection and lived a hard life...'

'The wise and powerful human ancestors learned from nature, from all living being in the world, and broke open a way through brambles and thorns, enlightening and uniting human beings. Weak human clans gathered together like streams merging into creeks, creeks into rivers, rivers into ocean...'

The surface of the enormous cauldron glistened. While more characters slowly emerging from the cauldron one after another, magical and magnificent images were showing up as well, telling the stories of Pan Gu world.

A colossal axe split the world. The clear mist rose and the cloudy mist descended, as the natural powers were separated. Numberless Chaos monsters attacked, but all died under the giant axe. The blood of the Chaos monsters dripped into the boiling natural powers. A powerful being with a human body and a snake tail

descended from the sky and created all living beings in this world. Instantly, the chaotic primitive Pan Gu world became colorful, surpassingly beautiful, full of life-force.

Seeing these images, countless human beings exclaimed. Spirit Wa always lived beyond the noisy world, that human beings hardly heard of her. But at this moment, she was formally known by millions and millions of human beings.

Finally, these ordinary human beings found out that back when Saint Pan Gu created the world, it was Spirit Wa who protected the entire world with her magical power of creation.

Saint Pan Gu fell, and the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind, and humankind appeared. The dragons rambled in the sky and the oceans, phoenixes lived upon divine trees, and human beings struggled on the primitive land. Countless small human clans survived under the protection of powerful creatures, worshipping these creatures as totems and serving them generation after generation.

...

Through the changing images and scenes, the cauldron showed the entire history of the humankind, from the human ancestors struggling to live, from the wise and powerful ones who strove to enlighten and strengthen human beings, to the humankind growing stronger and stronger, until the establishment of the alliance of human clans.

All human beings who saw these images burst into acclamation. The ones showed up in the images were unfamiliar, but these Pu Ban people immediately recognized them and shouted their names out with the great pride and delight.

Emperor Fuxi, as the first human emperor, enlightened human beings and created the Magus cultivation system, opening a source of the human power.

Emperor Suiren created fire, which drove away the dangerous beasts and bugs, scared off the fierce birds, and opened up the human territories.

Emperor Shennong tasted all herbs himself, detoxified poisons and conquered diseases, and led human beings to a healthy life.

Emperor Xuanyuan was fierce and decisive. He fought the non-humankind, cut the monsters, and allowed human beings to raise their heads high.

Wise and dedicated human emperors were numberless. Their stories were told by old people. When their faces were shown on the cauldron, countless human beings loudly shouted out their names with laughter, even though these human beings had been busy at farming in the fields, fighting in the forests against wild beasts, mining, or firing porcelains...They said it out loud even though these people had forgotten about the old stories in their ordinary lives, as they rose with the sun for the daily meals and went to sleep when it got dark.

The humankind was so amazing!

Back in the prehistorical era, among all living beings in this world, human beings were the weakest, that even a bug could easily kill a human being. Nevertheless, the ones who used to trample upon the world had died, the ones who used to run amok in the world had disappeared; the evil ones had fallen long ago, and the rampant ones had been forgotten.

But, the humankind had been developing thrivingly. Human beings remained standing in the world, without bowing to the divine gods or the ghosts or the spirits, without being destroyed by the non-humankind or any monster...Through all kinds of difficulties, the humankind continued surviving in this world, with pride and dignity, like the strongest old vine in the forest.

Human beings weren't as arrogant as dragons or as proud as phoenixes, or as glowing as the natural stars. Human beings lived a

simple life in this world, on Pan Gu Motherland, strongly, steadily, always pressing forward with indomitable will.

"Humankind!"

Some people stood up, raised their heads and arms, and roared out loud. For some reason, their faces were covered in tears.

"Human ancestors!"

Some young men pulled out their weapons and wielded strongly towards the sky.

"Yah, yah..."

The children didn't know what to say, but they felt their hearts and bodies were burning, sensing an indescribable power urging them to shout towards the sky, towards the enormous cauldron.

A deep buzzing noise could be heard from the cauldron. The sun and all the natural stars shone upon the cauldron, while the earth meridians rolled and moved windingly over, connecting with the cauldron.

On the surface of the cauldron, the images of the sun, the moon, the natural stars, and the mountains and rivers had been flashing. A mighty power flooded out of the cauldron, spreading towards all directions as it rolled the souls of all dead eagle-headed creatures into the cauldron. The souls were screaming.

The hazy figure of an eagle-headed creature turned clearer and clearer on the cauldron. It was flying swiftly on the surface of the cauldron with panic, but could not break out.

Surrounding Pu Ban City, numberless eagle-headed creatures glanced at the cauldron from great distances away, then all died. Their souls flew into the cauldron, being sealed forever.

# Chapter 1769: The Cauldron Suppresses

In Pu Ban City, in an extremely luxurious palace, Emperor Xun was holding a three feet long golden spear, pointing at the giant cauldron while letting loose a torrent of shouts. He was wearing a colorful pheasant feather skirt, with his upper body bared.

"What the hell is this? Do we need you to tell us about those old human beings?" Blood veins bulged from Emperor Xun's forehead as he wielded his arm and growled angrily, "I am the human emperor. I am the human emperor! I do whatever I want! I do whatever I..."

The cauldron quietly stood in Pu Ban City. The inscriptions and images on the cauldron aroused the enthusiasm of ordinary human beings, boiled their blood, and made them shout loudly for the great achievements of their ancestors.

But to Emperor Xun, the characters and images shown by the cauldron were like a series of slaps landing violently on his face and soul, making his face blush, and heart and spirit shake. Therefore, Emperor Xun leaped around in his palace like a monkey with its butt on fire, breaking countless exquisite decorations.

The cauldron stood quietly in the city like a never-changing divine god, showing no reaction to Emperor Xun's wrath.

Another deep buzz was let out of the cauldron, which sounded like a raging roar from the world, and also like thousands of thunder bursting together. Countless eagle-headed creatures who were flying in the air around Pu Ban City were crushed, falling from the sky. As their souls flew to the cauldron uncontrollably, the eagle-headed figure on the cauldron turned clearer and clearer.

At first, only the eagle-headed creatures within the area ten-million-miles in radius around Pu Ban City died suddenly. But, as the more and more of their souls were dragged into the cauldron, and the eagle-headed figure on the cauldron turned clearer and

clearer, its range of influence expanded further and further.

In a short span of time, all eagle-headed creatures in the area ten-billion-miles in radius around the city raised their heads and cast a slow glance at the cauldron. Because of this mere glance, they blasted into clouds of blood mist. Their sticky blood dropped to the ground, being absorbed by the soil on Pan Gu Motherland and turning into the nourishment of the grasses which would sprout in the coming spring.

Their souls cried shrilly and struggled while flying to the cauldron.

Buzz!

After the cauldron absorbed the souls of uncountable eagle-headed creatures, the eagle-headed figure on its surface finally turned lifelike, just like a real living one.

Following the rumbling noise coming from the cauldron, the eagle-headed figure on the cauldron surface rushed desperately between the hazy mountains and rivers. Gradually, strange marks emerged on the eagle-headed figure, and at last, the marks formed countless tiny spell symbols of suppression, imprinted deeply in it.

Following an earth-quaking boom, the hearts of all Pan Gu world creatures were shaken.

In a moment, the eagle-headed creatures within the area ten-billion-radius round Pu Ban City all died, without leaving even a feather. In the sky, all eagle-headed creatures which had been flying above Pan Gu Motherland wailed simultaneously, as they were suddenly weakened by ninety percent. No matter how powerful they were, as long as they stayed on Pan Gu Motherland, they only had ten-percent of their powers remaining.

It was like countless invisible ropes had suddenly penetrated their acupoints and gone through their meridians and blood veins, forcibly tying their physical strength and magic power together.

Because of these invisible ropes, they could now exert only ten percent of their powers.

Above the thousands of clans that were under attack, the luckily surviving eagle-headed creatures under Yu Yao's command realized that their powers had been suppressed by ninety percent. If they let Pan Gu Motherland and go up to the starry void, they would find out that because of the stronger natural suppression given off by the star power gathered by the cauldron, only about three percent of their powers could remain usable.

Si Wen Ming threw out this giant cauldron and let it stand in Pu Ban City. By taking this simple action, he already managed to waste the strongest and bravest non-humankind force under Yu Yao's command. As ninety percent of their powers had been suppressed, these fearless and brave eagle-headed warriors, who were vast in number, immediately turned useless. By now, any human warriors could easily kill hundreds of them.

Not to mention the fact that once they stepped into the ten-billion-miles area around Pu Ban City, they would uncontrollably look at the giant cauldron. And, the moment they did so, they would die and their souls would be absorbed by the cauldron. The more of their souls the cauldron absorbed, the further would this range of 'instant death' influence expand.

"Damn it!" Yu Yao stood on a flying fort while cursing, "Where the hell is this bloody cauldron from? Damn it! Damn it! My lion eagle beasts! I spent so many years in training them...Wasted, they're all wasted!"

But then, Yu Yao laughed out loud with a high-pitched voice and continued, "Sadly, apart from lion eagle beasts, I have countless types of rare creatures under my command, and numberless barbaric warriors, Jia Clan warriors, and other powerful ones. What am I afraid of? What should I be afraid of? What can this weird cauldron possibly do to me?"

Following Yu Yao's shrill laughter, giant groups of centipede-like, three-meters long creatures warmed out of the flying forts. Each of these creatures had twelve pairs of transparent wings. The number of these centipede-like creatures was many times larger than the number of lion eagle beasts. When flying, their wings caused a strong air friction and caused thunderous buzzing noises, which immediately echoed throughout the entire Pu Ban City and surrounding areas.

The giant cauldron buzzed again and released a vast power towards all directions. Tens of billions of centipede-like creatures exploded, and their souls were dragged to the cauldron.

A glowing cloud spun on the cauldron, devouring the souls of all dead centipede-like creatures. Soon, a dim and hazy centipede-like figure emerged on the cauldron.

What had happened to the lion eagle beasts now happened to these centipede-like creatures again. Within the area with a radius of ten-billion miles around Pu Ban City, not a single centipede-like creature could be found, because any that stepped into this area would immediately be killed by the cauldron.

Above the entire Pan Gu Motherland, the powers of these centipede-like creatures had been largely suppressed. As same as the lion eagle beasts, they could now exert less than ten percent of their powers. As the cauldron absorbed more and more of their souls, a stronger and stronger suppression was falling upon them.

Gradually, some relatively weaker centipede-like creatures couldn't even breath under the invisible yet tremendous pressure. Their wings broke, and they could no longer fly.

"This..." Yu Yao stared at the cauldron, unable to believe his eyes. Pausing for a moment, he burst into a scream, "Try suppress Jia Clan warriors if you dare!"

Before his voice faded, the cauldron buzzed once again. Following the buzzing noise, all Jia Clan warriors in the city vomited blood.

At least ten-million Jia Clan warrior were directly torn apart by this resounding buzz, and fell from the sky.

# Chapter 1770: Incomparably Powerful

Yu Yao immediately shut his mouth. Above the thousands of clans that were under attack, all Yu Clan nobles and Jia Clan commanders shut their mouths.

They were like quails who were stricken dumb with amazement, looking around with confusion with eyes popped out and not knowing what to do. The weapons and armors of the dead Jia Clan warriors fell from the sky and clanked against the ground. The clanking noises could be heard without an end.

The dense blood mist spread in the air. The souls of over ten-million crushed Ji Clan warriors drifted out of the devastated bodies, looking around dumbly. As a strong gale blew across, these souls flew uncontrollably to the cauldron, and were swallowed within a couple of breaths.

Another hazy figure emerged on the surface of the cauldron. That was a muscular Jia Clan man, naked while leaping and rushing through the forest on its surface like a gorilla. At first, he still had a glow of wisdom sparkling on its face, but in a few breaths, the glow was gone, and nothing but the brutish nature remained on his rough face.

His four large eyes were opened, dazzling fiercely. Somehow, the Jia Clan man on the cauldron discovered the figure of lion eagle beast. He opened his mouth and laughed silently while picking up a wooden club from the ground, as he began chasing the lion eagle beast excitedly.

The beast was startled. It spread its wings and flew up, desperately fleeing on the cauldron's surface.

The Jia Clan man grinned as he chased wildly after the beast. He wielded the club to hit the beast over and over again, messed the beast's feathers.

The beast suddenly raised its head and gave a silent, long scream.

Surrounding Pu Ban City, the eyes of all lion eagle beasts who had been carefully staying away from the ten-billion-miles wide area around Pu Ban City suddenly turned glowing-red. They stiffly turned their heads and fiercely fixed their eyes on the nearby Jia Clan warriors, who were so confused.

In the next moment, numberless lion eagle beasts burst into shrill screams. They ferociously pounced on the nearby Jia Clan warriors and hysterically launched life-risking offensives. In this very moment, the spirit blood of these lion eagle beasts burned in a strange way, and their highly suppressed power suddenly boosted up to twenty, even thirty to fifty percent, from the previously remaining ten percent.

Their powers exploded to thirty percent, fifty percent, and then even hundred percent. Uncountable Jia Clan warriors were caught unprepared and suffered heavy strikes. The lion eagle beasts tore open these Jia Clan warriors' chests with sharp claws and broke their heads with strong beaks. A giant number of Jia Clan warriors were killed by lion eagle beasts right on the spot. Their bodies were cut into pieces, and souls were absorbed by the cauldron.

Yu Yao and the other Yu Clan nobles were going crazy. This horrific giant cauldron could not only directly kill all lion eagle beasts in ten-billion miles, it could also affect or control the lion eagle beasts in farther areas through the lion eagle beast figure on its surface.

The cauldron could not directly kill all lion eagle beasts outside the ten-billion miles area, yet it was able to drive the beasts crazy through an unknown power. It burned the beasts' spirit blood, boosted up their powers by a hundred folds, and made them risk their own lives to kill Jia Clan warriors.

If there were one word to describe the cauldron's power, it would be 'horrible'.

On the thousands of battlefields, dragon warriors and flying bear cavalryman stopped fighting as they stared at the Jia Clan warriors and lion eagle beasts, who had been fighting against each other intensely.

When the giant cauldron killed and suppressed numberless lion eagle beasts and over ten-million Jia Clan warriors, these dragon warriors and flying bear cavalrymen didn't take it seriously. Too many powerful supreme treasures in this world could do the same thing. Even some evil dark magic could kill a whole clan within a moment through the bloodline connections. That wasn't too hard to understand.

However, the lion eagle beasts and Jia Clan warriors were on the same side, but the beasts began attacking the nearby Jia Clan warriors suddenly. This seemed to be caused by the battle which happened between the Jia Clan warrior figure and lion eagle beast figure on the surface of the cauldron...

By now, the dragon warriors and flying bear cavalrymen felt an indescribable coldness rising straight to their brains from their tailbones. Even the strongest dragon warriors and cavalryman on the scene quivered in shock. Holding in awe and veneration, they looked at the giant cauldron standing in Pu Ban City. What exactly was this cauldron? Why did it have such a mighty power?

Buzz!

Over ten million more Jia Clan warriors were killed by the crazy lion eagle beasts. Their souls were absorbed by the cauldron, and the Jia Clan warrior figure on it turned clearer and clearer. Gradually, the Jia Clan warrior figure became as clear and lively as the lion eagle beast figure. Once again, countless strange spell symbols emerged from the cauldron and quietly imprinted in the Jia Clan warrior figure.

"All brave Jia Clan warriors, retreat, retreat!"

Yao Ao sensed that there was something wrong. With a hoarse

voice, he ordered all his Jia Clan warriors to leave the battlegrounds, no matter which family they were from.

He had roughly figured it out that this giant, scary, monstrous cauldron was able to devour souls. Through absorbing the souls of one species, it could gain a better and better control of this species. When it devoured a certain number of souls, it would cast some kind of bloodline curse to suppress and crack all individuals of this species in a horrible way!

Who on earth made this disastrous treasure?

Its power was so mighty, and it gave such a prehistorical feeling, yet its power was also so weird, evil, and terrifying.

This war started on thousands of differently scaled battlefields and covered a far greater area than the ten-billion miles radius around Pu Ban City. Yu Yao had already tried his best to give the order of retreat, but only tens of Jia Clan troops managed to pull out timely.

The giant cauldron buzzed again.

This time, the cauldron's influence on Jia Clan warriors had raised up by more than a hundred folds. The first buzz merely killed the weakest Jia Clan warriors, but this time, all Magus-King-level Jia Clan warriors were crushed.

The Divine-level Jia Clan warriors vomited blood. In panic, they realized that their powers had been suppressed by thirty percent. Maybe because of their natural gift, the suppression they suffered was far weaker than what was laid on the lion eagle beasts. However, being suddenly weakened by thirty percent was already bloodcurdling!

What was even worse, tens of millions of Jia Clan warriors were killed this time, and their souls had been flying to the cauldron. After absorbing all these souls, how much greater would the cauldron's influence over the Jia Clan warriors become?

"Retreat, retreat! Don't get close to this damned big cauldron!" Yu Yao almost cried out loud.

# Chapter 1771: The Cauldron Creates Marvellous Weapons

An extremely faint golden light beam descended from the sky. The clone, which Ji Hao created with difficulty by using a slight amount of spirit power that he could spare, landed on the cauldron through the sunlight.

Standing on an ear of the cauldron, Ji Hao scornfully sneered to those desperately fleeing Ji Clan warriors. "You've already come, don't leave in such a rush. You haven't tasted the true power of this giant cauldron yet." He murmured.

"Up!" He gave a deep growl and cast a spell to the cauldron. The million-miles-tall cauldron quaked slightly and shone with a blinding cyan-colored light. A heavy buzz echoed through the hearts of all human beings who were able to see this cauldron. Then, countless human beings whose blood was boiled by the stories of wise and brave human ancestors each gave vent to a sonorous shout.

Hearing this thunderous shout and affected by the cauldron, millions and millions of human beings turned their eyes towards the fleeing Jia Clan warriors.

How could they forget about these Jia Clan warriors? These four-eyed monsters invaded Pan Gu world, slaughtered numberless human beings, and plundered measureless resources. They committed all kinds of crimes and trampled across the whole world. Deep down, every human being had a bone-deep hatred towards these Jia Clan warriors, filled with wrath and grievance.

The cauldron buzzed once again and turned the hatred and the wrath in the hearts of human beings into strands of scorching power, flowing back into the cauldron. Following a series of tinkling noise, dazzling blades, spears, and swords flew out of the cauldron. These fist-sized weapons emitted an eye-piercing light

and formed a giant swirl in the air, spinning swiftly.

"Go!" Ji Hao roared out as he pointed his finger at the millions of weapons above his head.

High up in the sky, countless natural stars shone in broad daylight. The sparkling star powers poured down in streams and landed on the hovering weapons which rose from the cauldron. With the star powers, these weapons flashed across the space and teleported right behind the fleeing Jia Clan warriors.

The thick armors, powerful defensive treasures, and strong bodies all failed to stop these weapons. Following the puffing noises, the chests of countless Jia Clan warriors were penetrated, and blood spurted out of their chests. All wounded Jia Clan warriors turned around and took a glance almost at the same time, seeing Ji Hao's clone who stood on the cauldron.

From such a long distance away, Ji Hao's clone looked so tiny. It was condensed from a thin beam of golden light, hazy and translucent. However, all of these dying Jia Clan warriors clearly saw his face.

"Back!" Ji Hao again gave a resonant roar. Following his voice, the countless weapons instantly tore apart the space and teleported back into the cauldron. Every single one of these weapons had brought back a Jia Clan warrior's soul, struggling, screaming, and begging Ji Hao for mercy. Some of these souls were even willing to serve Ji Hao forever and ever, as long as he spared them.

The cauldron quaked slightly and shredded all the Jia Clan warriors' souls. The Jia Clan warrior figure on its surface turned clearer and clearer, looking like vivid embossment running around on the cauldron and attacking the lion eagle beast from time to time.

From the sky, hundreds of millions of Jia Clan warriors fell. Their bodies remained unharmed, yet their souls had been destroyed. Yu Yao and a group of Yu Clan nobles tremblingly

watched this frightful scene. How could this cauldron be so powerful? How could it?

According to the information provided by the twelve families in power from Yu Dynasty, the human beings in Pan Gu world were weak, weren't they? Weren't they weak and fragile? Couldn't Yu Clan people do whatever they wanted to human beings? Why would they be so hard to defeat? Why would they have such a powerful treasure?

And judging by the power of this cauldron, it wasn't a pre-world spirit treasure, neither was a pre-world supreme treasure. From the first glance at this cauldron, any Yu Clan treasure master would immediately know that its surface was still warm because of the firing. This cauldron was in an ancient style and released a prehistorical power, but, it was clearly a newly forged after-world treasure.

How could it be so powerful? How could it? And where was it from?

"Go, go, go!" Yu Yao's entire body was shivering in fear. He had forgotten about the secret deal he made with Yu Huo's clone, and the secret deal with Emperor Xun regarding slave trade. At the moment, he wanted nothing but to leave, the faster the better, the further the better...He just wanted to stay away, far, far away from this giant cauldron.

The souls of countless Jia Clan warriors had formed a Jia Clan warrior figure on the cauldron's surface. Yu Yao didn't want his own soul to become a part of a Yu Clan man's figure on the cauldron.

"Go? Did I allow you?" Ji Hao's clone sneered coldly. Looking at the group of Yu Clan nobles who were on the run, he pointed his finger at them. Immediately, Pu Ban City and the ten-billion million miles area around it were covered by a thick layer of thunderclouds.

The cauldron quaked slightly, with layers of thundercloud patterns flashing across its surface. Next, enormous, dragon-like thunderbolts emerged from the clouds, along with deafening thunders that shook the whole world. The thunderbolts descended from the clouds and struck on the group of running Yu Clan nobles.

Those large family nobles were all protected by secret treasures. The first wave of thunderbolt made their fine hairs stand straight up, yet failed to cause them actual harms. However, among the Yu Clan nobles who followed Yu Yao to Pan Gu world, many were from small families. Their defensive treasures were only so powerful. Consequently, one bolt of thunder directly crushed their treasures and burned their bodies.

The airy souls of these dead Yu Clan nobles drifted involuntarily to the cauldron while shrieking shrilly.

After absorbing the first Yu Clan soul, a naked Yu Clan man figure emerged on the cauldron's surface. The figure was awfully blurry and light in color, that people could barely see it. However, the cauldron had already earned the might to suppress Yu Clan people.

Yu Yao and some high-level nobles had just turned around and started running. But suddenly, they felt their bodies turn heavy. Their defensive treasures failed to relieve them from this strange feeling. They sensed their blood flows pause briefly inside their bodies, then their powers were weakened a little, and their blood flows were slowed down a little.

The cauldron had just absorbed the first Yu Clan soul, yet Yu Yao and his people already sensed its suppression.

"No, no, no! Dear master, I am willing to trade for my safety with all my possessions!" Yu Yao screamed with a dry voice. He turned around and looked at Ji Hao in fright. He could see the cauldron under Ji Hao's feet swallow more and more Yu Clan souls.

Within a blink, tens of thousands of Yu Clan souls were devoured by the cauldron. The pressure on all nearby Yu Clan beings was instantly boosted up.

Within a couple of breaths, Yu Yao found that he was already weakened by twenty percent. Added with the natural suppression given by Pan Gu world, by now, less than fifty percent of his power remained.

As he was slowed down by over fifty percent, he burst into despairing screams.

"I'll give you all my possessions, everything I have! Please! Don't kill me!"

A beam of sword light flashed across the air. Following it, waves of sword lights erupted from the cauldron like a fountain of light as Ji Hao expressionlessly controlled the cauldron and launched a fatal attack on all Yu Clan nobles within his line of sight.

# Chapter 1772: Offer the Souls to the Cauldron

Clouds and warm mists began rising from the cauldron, as if it had a potful of steaming boiling water in it. Countless fist-sized swords, blades and spears dazzled brightly, while slowly hovering around the cauldron.

Yu Yao paused in the midair, hands covering his erect eye tightly. Earlier on, a flying sword hit him and broke his three defensive treasures and twelve powerful magic talismans in a row, then penetrated his erect eye and shredded his brain.

His thoughts were shredded as well.

He was the conqueror of a rich great world, a ruler of that world's Dao of nature, with a title of Yu. He hadn't gained a full control of that world's great Dao of nature, but he was a genuine world conqueror.

Powerful intelligent creatures didn't exist in that great world. Instead, the creatures in that world were mostly strong beasts like lion eagle beasts. These beasts were brave, combative, and vast in numbers. They could serve as the best slave warriors...With nothing but money, power...and...

Suddenly, Yu Yao lost his eyesight. Unwillingly giving a sigh, Yu Yao fell heavily from the sky. The ruler of a great world fell. His soul screamed with fright as it transformed into a thin beam of light, flowing into the cauldron.

Buzz!

The Yu Clan man figure on the cauldron's surface gradually turned clear. As more and more Yu Clan souls merged into the cauldron, the figure slowly turned as clear as the Jia Clan warrior and the lion eagle beast figures, looking like an embossment.

A heavier suppression was laid on all Yu Clan beings in this

world. A large number of Yu Clan nobles who were far away from the city and had survived the wave of sword light launched by Ji Hao felt their bodies suddenly turn strangely heavy, aching and limp, as if a giant mountain was lying on their bodies. They couldn't even fly anymore, drifting down to the ground uncontrollably. Standing on the ground, they gasped for air and felt so exhausted.

"No, no, this isn't good...Go, go now!" Some high-grade Yu Clan nobles screamed in haste as they hurriedly ran away from the battlefields with their people, drawing back to the north where Liang Zhu City was located.

These Yu Clan nobles had figured it out as well. This monster-like giant cauldron was generating some weird kind of seal through devouring its targets' souls, so it could attain a magical power to kill and suppress a whole species, just like what it had done to the lion eagle beasts, Jia Clan warriors, and the Yu Clan nobles who used to stand high above the whole world.

In the future, as long as this giant cauldron kept standing in the city, all Yu Clan and Jia Clan beings who approached Pu Ban City would be killed immediately by it... Even if they stayed far away from the city, their powers would be suppressed largely by the cauldron, and the closer they got to the city, the greater the suppression would be. Because of this cauldron, the nature-given fighting capacity of Jia Clan and Yu Clan beings could no longer put them in a dominant position against the humankind.

'Fortunately, they only have one bloody giant cauldron like this!' Some Yu Clan nobles thought.

If human beings had two or three cauldrons like this, and if all cauldrons' suppression powers could be combined...Pan Gu Motherland would become a forbidden area to all Yu Clan and Jia Clan people. If that happened, how could they fight on this land? How could they plunder resources from this world? They wouldn't even be able to set a foot on this land.

'Fortunately, they only have one bloody giant cauldron like this'?

Ji Hao stood on an ear of the cauldron and glimpsed at the non-humankind army, which had been fleeing in a flurry. Sadly, he was merely a weak clone of Ji Hao, and the cauldron had just begun to connect with the natural stars and earth meridians, and couldn't yet affect a larger area. Otherwise, all of those non-humankind beings would have to stay here forever, and none could ever leave.

Glancing across Pu Ban City, Ji Hao saw Emperor Xun in his palace, wearing his pheasant feather skirt and wielding a golden spear while yelling at the giant cauldron hysterically. Ji Hao sneered as he scornfully swept across Emperor Xun with a glimpse. His eyes didn't pause for a moment on Emperor Xun.

Fire and smoke rose from some areas in Pu Ban City. When Emperor Xun and Yu Yao's army launched offensives against thousands of clans, quite some spirit creatures in the city seized the opportunity to loot in a burning house. Ferocious water-kind spirit creatures rushed out of the river and lakes, terricolous spirit creatures came out of mountain areas and forests. They burned villages, murdered people, rampantly plundered; they were all thrilled.

"You're all here, good. We'll have to do this sooner or later anyway."

Smiled coldly, Ji Hao locked his fingers together and slapped on the giant cauldron.

The cauldron gave a deep buzz, following which, the natural stars in the sky shone brightly, pouring down streams of misty starlight from the sky. The hazy and soft starlight streams suddenly 'tightened up' and 'buzzed', turning as sharp and tough as blade edges, the moment they touched the ground.

Swish! Countless starlight streams swept across Pu Ban City at lightning speed.

The starlight did no harm to human beings, but shredded every spirit creature they touched into pieces, generating a series of shrill howls. The fishes, turtles, or shrimps from the water, the tigers and poisons snakes from the forests, the enormous stone giants, mysterious ghosts and spirits, all died under this strike. The cauldron buzzed again. This time, a thunderous boom could be heard from underground, as a tremendous earth power erupted and shattered the corpses of all dead spirit creatures.

Countless souls rose into the sky, weak or strong, all involuntarily flying to the cauldron.

In ten minutes, the cauldron's surface sparkled, while the figures of countless kinds of fierce beasts, poisonous bugs, spirit creatures, rare animals, and evil ghosts quietly emerged on it.

Flood dragons, poisonous snakes, wolves, evil ghosts, water monsters...Millions of figures emerged from the cauldron's surface; some were blurry, some were clearer. Sonorous tinkling noises could be heard from the cauldron without an end; following every tinkle, a strand of starlight would descend from the sky and fall into the cauldron.

An indescribable forcefield was created by the cauldron, immediately covering the ten-billion miles wide area.

In forests, mountain areas, and all rivers and lakes, all spirit creatures which had the figures of their species left on the cauldron, including the powerful spirit creatures, the mystic ghosts and spirits, and even the tiniest spirit shrimps, crabs, and pond loaches in the water, sensed a heavy pressure falling directly on their hearts. It was as if a natural disaster would strike at any moment, and a giant hand would suddenly descend from the sky and crush them.

Even the most brainless spirit creature now understood this — They should stay peaceful, because if they ever hurt human beings again, they would definitely be torn into a thousand bits.

The giant cauldron's surface glowed splendidly, with all kinds of spirit creatures running about, chasing each other. The cauldron now looked quite colorful and beautiful.

# Chapter 1773: Go His Own Way

On Pan Gu Motherland, all spirit creatures which had the figures of their species left on the giant cauldron that stood in Pu Ban City felt a heavy, strange pressure weighing on their hearts, even though some of them didn't see the cauldron and didn't know what happened in Pu Ban City. They felt as if they were suffocated and locked by invisible chains and shackles.

They felt like sitting by the vent of a volcano. The volcano looked peaceful, but contained a devastating power that could immediately generate a raging fire to incinerate them if they did anything wrong.

Spirit creatures trembled with fear, while the human beings in Pu Ban City lighted up with pleasure, applauding with boiling blood.

Ever since Emperor Shun abdicated and this ridiculous Emperor Xun ascended to the throne, the entire humankind was shrouded in a miserable and gloomy atmosphere. Ruled by Emperor Xun, the human society was moving in reverse, and the group of Gong Sun Family scums around him were doing whatever they wanted. The hearts of Pu Ban people were covered in dark clouds, and no one could see the future of the humankind.

Because of the dark clouds in their hearts, these people didn't have the motivation to do anything. They became overcautious and indecisive; they were scared and their spirits and life-force declined. Consequently, even the strong and healthy young men in Pu Ban City became like timorous, ninety years old men.

When Emperor Shun was on the throne, people in Pu Ban City lived a thriving life, but under Emperor Xun's rule, the life-force of Pu Ban City dropped sharply. The entire humankind had become gloomy and lifeless in a downfall.

However, a raging fire was started from the cold hearts of these

people when this giant cauldron appeared in Pu Ban City and these people saw it and read the inscriptions on it, watching the world history which was shown on it, from Saint Pan Gu creating the world to human ancestors breaking open a way through brambles and thorns.

Their blood surged in the vessels, while passion boiled in their chests. The darkness which loomed on Pu Ban people' hearts was gone. At the moment, they were laughing and loudly singing the praises of wise human ancestors and emperors.

Before the cauldron appeared, the powerful beings with sharp eyes might have found the entire Pu Ban City covered under dense dark clouds when looking down from the sky. But now, a red light was rising straight from the city, shining upon the whole world, even turning the sky red.

Strands of strong and highly concentrated faith power rose into the sky and transformed into faintly visible light streams, flowing into the cauldron. A rumbling buzzing noise could be heard from the cauldron. While absorbing the faith power from millions and millions of human beings, the cauldron gradually released a magnificent light. Its influence on the non-humankind grew stronger and stronger, and its range of influence grew larger and larger. In the meanwhile, the cauldron was connected with the hearts of all human beings, that every human being who saw it now felt the cauldron standing right in his or her heart, to steady and strengthen the heart and make it unshakable.

The humankind had an inexhaustible creativity with a giant population. As long as all human beings held an unshakable faith, the humankind would be the strongest and most powerful species in Pan Gu world with the greatest potential!

Ji Hao stood on an ear of the cauldron, feeling strands of faith power merging into streams, into great rivers, and ultimately into oceans, then flooding into the cauldron like a tsunami at last. At the moment, his power was connected with the cauldron. The

strong faith power transformed into a scorching hot power stream and overwhelmed his clone. Through this clone, the real Ji Hao, who stayed in the heaven, also felt this incredible, scorching power.

Pure, heavy, simple, and gentle, the faith power from human beings was like mountain ranges that extended for millions of miles, without sharp edges but indestructible.

Sitting in the divine palace with crossed legs, Ji Hao smiled. The scorching, mighty power flew into his spiritual space and suddenly calmed the soul power storm which was left by Master Spirit-Slaughter in his spiritual space, and had troubled him for long. Flushed by this scorching power, the soul pieces in his spiritual space disintegrated rapidly while screaming.

Ji Hao had the Pan Gu bell, a giant amount of saint power, and the mill of great Dao...But, with all these together, he only managed to wear out the blood-red soul power bit by bit. However, the tremendous faith power naturally generated a scorching hot power, and when it flushed through his spiritual space, the tough blood-red soul power was crushed.

Great, marvelous, incredible!

The faith power from numberless weak human beings turned out to be so magical and formidable! Human beings were truly the owners of the natural fortune of Pan Gu world!

Sensing the quickly fading blood-red soul power inside his spiritual space, Ji Hao laughed out loud. The soul pieces disintegrated, making his embryo of Dao stronger and stronger, and gave him a deeper and deeper understanding of the great Dao. Both his cultivation and power had been improving as well!

Standing on an ear of the cauldron, Ji Hao's clone laughed out loud as well. He punched the cauldron's ear and made it buzz sonorously. Waves of strong and hot power swept across the world, echoing the cheers of millions of human beings as it

illuminated the world with a splendid light and wiped out all evils.

Ao Hao and the other dragons who came to reinforce the attacked clans burst into resonant roars. The efficacy of the evil dragon-slaying magic was gone, and their wounds began healing. Hearing the tsunami-like cheers of human beings, they roared in surprise!

They didn't think that these weak and fragile human beings could actually generate such a thunderous sound!

Dragons and human beings were all Pan Gu's descendants, but Ao Hao and his dragon warriors were seriously shocked by the frightful power that suddenly erupted from these human beings.

Emperor Xun was also badly shocked. Dumbly standing in his palace and hearing the cheers from his 'insignificant people', sensing the overwhelming power spreading wave by wave, he felt that his throne was even shaking.

"How dare these bloody lowly things do this? How dare they cheer and laugh like this without my permission? How dare they not cheer for me?" Emperor Xun roared hysterically, "What do they want? Are they rising in rebellion? How dare they? Are they against me? They must be against me!"

Emperor Xun suddenly lunged the golden spear in his hand and killed a maid who was kneeling on the ground, then hollered, "Give out my order. Gather all warriors who are willing to follow my lead and destroy everyone sided against me! No matter which family or clan they are from, whether they are emperors' descendants or not...kill everyone who refuses to obey me! Men, women, children, old people, kill them all!"

In a secret room, about ten priests were sitting with crossed legs. They heard Emperor Xun, but showed no sign of stopping him.

# Chapter 1774: The Muddy Water is Deep

Ji Hao's clone stood on an ear of the giant cauldron, smilingly looking around. He was enjoying the thriving life-force being released from Pu Ban people, as well as the scorching, strong, and pure faith power. Ji Hao felt intoxicated, as if he were drinking a strong liquor.

While sinking in this beautiful feeling, he saw an enormous battle flag rise from Emperor Xun's palace. Painted on the flag was a standing flying bear that trampled on mountains while holding a longsword in the mouth, as blood had been dripping down from the sword tip.

This was the flying bear blood battle flag of Gong Sun Family. Once it was raised, Gong Sun Family warriors would fight to the last drop of their blood.

In the old days, Emperor Xuanyuan gathered millions of human clans and raised a coalition force to fight against the non-humankind. Back then, numberless Gong Sun Family ancestors showered blood under this battle flag, building its eternal glory with their blood and flesh.

After the abdication of Emperor Xuanyuan, this battle flag was never raised again. This blood-stained flag was kept in the Holy Emperor Temple in You Xiong City. Except on the ancestral worshipping ceremonies, no one ever saw this flag, which represented the unyielding human spirit, again.

But just then, Emperor Xun had actually raised this flying bear blood battle flag. Who was he fighting against? Who was he fighting with?

He had already joined the non-humankind. In collusion with Yu Huo's clone, he was hurting the humankind. But, he raised this battle flag, which represented the indomitable, fearless spirit of human beings...Whatever he intended to do, Ji Hao felt ridiculous,

hilarious!

Muffled drums could be heard. Along with the sky-shaking roars of the dragon warriors, the flying bear cavalrymen, who had been fighting intensely against the dragon warriors just then, retreated like an ebbing tide. Through the temporary teleporting formation, these cavalrymen returned to Pu Ban City at their highest speed and gathered around Emperor Xun's palace.

Other than the cavalrymen from Gong Sun Family, the family forces from Mi Family, Xiong Family, and the other branches of Gong Sun Family had also been approaching Pu Ban City from all directions. Apart from these families, which shared the same origination with Gong Sun Family, a large number of other families and clans who chose to follow Emperor Xun had also sent their armies to Pu Ban City following the war drums.

The sun shone upon Pan Gu Motherland. Through the sunlight, Ji Hao saw that numerous troops quickly gathering to the city. Pu Ban people stopped cheering abruptly. Hearing the muffled, aggressive war drums, countless people turned to Emperor Xun's palace with worry.

Emperor Xun raised the flying bear blood battle flag. What was he doing? What did he want? Who was he fighting against?

High up in the air. Ao Hao and the other dragon commanders contacted each other through a secret magic. Next, with confusion and sadness, these dragon warriors, who had lost tens of thousands of brothers carefully escorted the people from Xiong Shan's Clan and the other clans back to Yao Mountain City.

These dragons weren't so smart, but still, they clearly sensed the change of atmosphere in Pu Ban City. Instinctively, they felt that a mad dog had been grinding its teeth, drooling and preparing to give everyone a crazy bite.

Emperor Xun's order was ridiculous. He ordered his people to kill everyone who sided against him, but he didn't even figure out

exactly how many people were against him. But after all, he was supported by Gong Sun Family elders. When a certain number of warriors gathered around his palace, a clear military instruction was given from the palace.

Following at thunderous growl, a fierce aura of killing reached straight to the sky. Along with shrill whistles, Emperor Xun's army turned around, heading to Chong Mountain.

The enormous army was like a wriggling black dragon, baring its teeth and stretching its claws. Other than this army which was under Emperor Xun's direct command, countless troops from the clans and families which chose to follow Emperor Xun had also been heading in the same direction from Pu Ban City.

Standing on an ear of the cauldron, the expression of Ji Hao's clone changed suddenly.

Chong Mountain was the base You Chong Family, Si Wen Ming's hometown. Si Wen Ming's father, Si Xi's first title was Earl Chong. He was You Chong Clan's leader. You Chong Clan was one of the most influential human clans. Billions of people from Si Wen Ming's family gathered around the You Chong clan.

Si Wen Ming stayed in the sun world for forging the nine cauldrons. Therefore, the clan was now managed by a group of elders.

Recently, some clan leaders and princes who chose to support Si Wen Ming had moved to Yao Mountain City with their people, while some other supporters of Si Wen Ming moved their people to Chong Mountain, based on the nearby principle.

By now, a great number of clans which chose to support Si Wen Ming gathered around Chong Mountain. Emperor Xun's army marched to Chong Mountain, and would definitely start a bloody battle, which would be a great consumption of the life-force of the humankind.

"Emperor Xun, how dare you?" Ji Hao growled through gritted teeth. He leaped up and transformed into a golden light beam, flying to Emperor Xun's palace.

Once Ji Hao moved, three faint light streams rose from Emperor Xun's palace, turned in the air and darted to Ji Hao. As the lights flashed across the air, three men showed up before Ji Hao's face and blocked his way.

"Emperor Ji Hao, please stop. You are a divine emperor. I'm afraid that you should not interfere with what's happening between human beings." A young man in a coarse long robe wielded the lotus held in his hand while speaking. Tens of petals fell off and immediately composed a complicated formation in front of Ji Hao.

Ji Hao's clone felt the air turned especially sticky. An enormous power was released from the lotus petal formation, disabling this weak clone from moving. He looked at the three priests in surprise, then sneered with his teeth clenched while asking, "What do Priest Mu and Priest Hua want? The non-humankind armies are arriving, and Pan Gu world is facing a true disaster..."

The young man who blocked Ji Hao's way smiled and gave a reply, "How can we understand what our Shifu wants? What does the true disaster of Pan Gu world have to do with you, emperor Ji Hao? You can simply return to the heaven, shut the door, and enjoy your life every day. You shall have no worry. Emperor, why do you have to be a part of this whole thing?"

Ji Hao looked at the three priests with narrowed eyes. Their bodies were glistening and a strong power of Dao could be sensed from them. Judging by the power waves releasing from their bodies, they were Priest Mu and Priest Hua' disciples indeed. But somehow, Ji Hao felt strange about the expressions on their faces.

"Your peaceful world is under..."

Ji Hao intended to feel out these three priests, but once he began

taking, a middle-aged priest behind the young priest suddenly raised a finger. Along with an extremely shrill swishing noise, this clone's head exploded. This clone was condensed from a strand of essence sun fire, yet he was killed even before he could see how the enemy attacked.

In the divine palace, Ji Hao was still working on clearing the blood-red soul power in his spiritual space. He twitched suddenly as he sensed a piercing pain from his soul.

He opened his eyes and turned to where his clone died.

"The water is muddy and deep this time. If recklessly stepped in, you'll die." The middle-aged priest proudly raised his head, looked at the heaven's direction, and said.

# Chapter 1775: Teach Him a Lesson

The sunlight illuminated the world and also lightened these three priests' bodies. Through the sunlight, Ji Hao clearly 'heard' this middle-aged man, who killed his clone. He's tone was flat, yet the words were aggressive. Ji Hao felt that this middle-aged priest was highly confident, and this extreme confidence was given by his power and strong background.

In Ji Hao's spiritual space, countless blood-red soul shreds had still been releasing an evil power, disabling him from controlling his embryo of Dao freely.

Pondering shortly, Ji Hao let a golden beam of light flash across his forehead. Another clone was released from his eye of Dao, walking to the Central Hall in the heaven with airy steps. Just then, his first clone was killed, but the clone's death hardly hurt Ji Hao. Ji Hao felt no worse than being pricked by a needle.

But, why did the three priests dare to attack a clone of a divine emperor? This was worth pondering. Ji Hao didn't believe that under the current circumstances, Priest Hua and Priest Mu would challenge him again, as they were busy enough defending themselves right now, weren't they? After all, ten Pan Yu saints were still in their peaceful world. How could they have the spare time and energy to make more troubles?

In the Central Hall, Ao Bai was sullenly looking at Dong Gong's Hao Tian mirror.

In the glowing mirror, Ao Hao and the other dragon kings, as well as their warriors had been escorting the human beings back to Yao Mountain City. Because of these human beings, the dragon troops had slowed down, that even the nearest troop needed at least half a year to arrive at Yao Mountain City.

Ao Bai's face turned blue in anger. His hands had turned into a pair of dragon claws. The sharp claws clanked against each other,

sending up fire sparks as he counted the losses. Tens of thousands of pure-blood dragon warriors had died, and this severe loss nearly gave him an unbearable heartache, which almost made him faint.

What about the gains? There were gains. Ao Hao and the other dragon warriors killed a giant number of Jia Clan warriors and lion eagle beasts. The world sensed their contributions and gifted them some natural rewards power. However, the natural rewards power Ao Bai earned this time was far less than what he owed the world for ascending to the throne. Therefore, generally speaking, the losses that the dragon-kind suffered this time were way greater than the gains.

In the Hao Tian mirror, the evil efficacy of the dragon-slaying magic had been neutralized by the mighty power of the giant cauldron, but the dragon-slaying magic still affected these dragon warriors badly. Including Ao Hao, all dragon kings on battlefields were pale, as if they had lost too much spirit blood.

"Dragon-slaying magic...Dragon-slaying magic...Chu Wu Clan people are truly developing this secret dragon-slaying magic!" Ao Bai purposely glanced at Qing Qiang and said with a deep voice, "Is there anything in the world they dare not to do? If they have a dragon-slaying magic, they may also have a..."

Qing Qiang snorted. She knew that Ao Bai was trying to drag the phoenix-kind into the trouble too, but he was right. The dragon-slaying magic was truly nasty. Since Chu Wu Clan people had already secretly developed this dragon-slaying magic, inevitably, they might have had been preparing to do something to the phoenix-kind too with a secret phoenix-slaying magic.

Throwing a glance at Ao Bai, Qing Qiang responded coldly, "Chu Wu Clan people are heinous. They should be punished by the heaven."

"Chu Wu people have willingly become devils. They don't see themselves as human beings anymore. As they have committed

such a serious crime, they should indeed be punished by the heaven. But, what's most important at the moment is we should stop Emperor Xun's army from intruding Chong Mountain." Once Qing Qiang finished her sentence, Ji Hao's clone came into the hall and joined the conversation with a deep voice.

"Emperor Ji Hao, you are absolutely right." Dong Gong approved immediately. "Most of the human beings supported Si Wen Ming. People want him to take over the crown...If Emperor Xun recklessly assaults Chong Mountain, the humankind would suffer a huge loss. Not to mention that, as the owners of the heaven, if we stay aside and ignore this, I'm afraid that the world would be enraged, and we would all be punished."

"Emperor Xun!" Ao Bai's face turned darker and darker.

This time, the dragon-kind lost tens of thousands of pure-blood members, and Emperor Xun was the cause. Did he collude with the non-humankind and raise a coalition force to attack the clans which supported Si Wen Ming? If he didn't act so wildly against the human society, how would this chaotic war happen? How would the dragon-kind suffer such a huge loss?

"Ignorant kid, how dare he?" Ao Bai used to be like a graceful scholar, but at the moment, the fire of anger rose from his heart. Following a series of bone creaking noise, a pair of colorful dragon horns grew out of his forehead, while his body swelled to tens of meters tall. His head was quickly shifting shape into a ferocious dragon head from the head of an elegant young man.

He was Bixi, the most strengthful one among the dragon ancestor's nine sons. He shifted into a half-dragon half-human shape, with his body covered in thick, shield-shaped dark scales. A scorching, brutish power spread from his body as he roared thunderously towards the sky. He pulled out a large long-handled hammer, then stormed out of the hall.

"I'm killing Emperor Xun right now!" Ao Bai gritted his teeth

tight and caused a creaking noise. While marching out of the heaven, he growled, "Boys, follow me to Pu Ban City...Since we're already a part of this war, let's finish this! Let's end those scums' lives, crush every one of those bloody Gong Sun Family kids...If Xuanyuan kid wants an explanation, I will talk to him!"

Raising his head, Ao Bai trod on a dark cloud, hollering while flying out of the heaven, "When have we dragons ever suffered such a loss? Let's kill Emperor Xun first, then destroy Chu Wu Clan...I'm a divine emperor now. I do whatever I want! Whoever dares to go against Master Bixi will die under my hammer!"

In the Central Hall, Ji Hao was speechless, while Zhu Rong chuckled and Qing Qiang rolled her eyes. Dong Gong smiled and said, "Dragons... They have always been so straightforward. Hehe, hehe, simple and frank, quite adorable!"

Ji Hao, Zhu Rong, and Qing Qiang each threw a sideways glance at Dong Gong at the same time. What did he say? 'Frank and adorable'? Like the ones who could bear all the blames?

"I just wanted to remind Emperor Ao Bai that some people around Emperor Xun aren't so simple...But, he just rushed out like that. Eh, it's a good thing though. Emperor Xun is turning this world into a mess. We can't let him." Ji Hao sighed and said slowly.

"When our kids are misbehaving themselves, we should just beat them, like I did to my oldest son, Tonggong, when he was little... He used to be very naughty. Every time, I would hang him under a roof and lash him with a dragon-skin whip...You need to do it for a couple of times, and you need to beat him like you're killing him every time. As long as you don't truly beat him to death, the kid will soon become obedient and capable." Standing aside, Zhu Rong coughed and said with laughter.

"Hehe." "Haha."

Ji Hao, Zhu Rong, Dong Gong, and Qing Qiang all chuckled quite meaningfully.

From the Hao Tian mirror, they saw Ao Bai and all dragon warriors in the heaven swarming out with wrath, heading straight to Pu Ban City.

Thinking back about the moves made by the three priests from Emperor Xun's palace, Ji Hao was a little heavy-hearted. The three priests were powerful. Ao Bai wouldn't fall in disadvantages when facing them, would he?

# Chapter 1776: The Difficulties of Transformation

In the chaotic Liang Zhu City...

Countless Yu Clan nobles had still been fighting each other for powers and benefits. Some Jia Clan warriors sneakily attacked each other, also for powers and benefits, shedding blood like water.

Every night, a great number of new corpses would appear in Liang Zhu City, and some people would just vanish suddenly. Thanks to the Secret Code of Law, no one was paying any attention to these corpses, because 'the uncaught crimes were never committed'. However, as corpses piled up higher and higher in the city, the surviving ones turned fiercer and fiercer when wrestling against each other.

By this point, ordinary Yu Clan nobles had already lost their courage to get close to Liang Zhu City. Only the ones who had both great individual strength and family powers had the guts to walk into the city. The brutal means of competitions had already weeded out the weak and the cowards from this game.

In a small mansion outside the city, groups of Jia Clan warriors were guarding every important corner, looking around coldly and vigilantly. The original owner of this mansion was already lying in a cold and moist hall.

Surrounding the mansion was an enormous military camp. In the camp, numberless humanoid creatures had been walking around. Their bodies were composed from precise metal components, and these heavy bodies of theirs covered the ground in holes.

In the middle of the mansion, inside a small, exquisite castle, a Yu Clan man sat in an alloy armchair. He had a faint metal luster on his skin. Between his eyebrows, his erect eye was twitching

intensely. Streams of dim, colorful light flew out of his erect eye, slowly into his other two eyes.

Cold sweat had been dripping from his forehead. He trembled slightly while a strange energy wave spread from his erect eye. This energy was strong and dark; under its effect, the furniture and decorations in the room were shaking slightly, and a big half of them had already turned into metal from wood.

Tens of Yu Clan nobles carefully stood in the corners of the room, looking at this Yu Clan man's shining eyes. They were surprised and worried at the same time. Their defensive treasures glowed dimly while barely defending their owners against the energy wave spreading from the man's erect eye.

A young man clenched his fists, his eyes fixed on the misty colorful light in the Yu Clan man's erect eye. "Succeed, succeed, you must succeed...Father, as long as you succeed, I..."

Abruptly, this young man gave a muffled snort, then let out a mouthful of blood. The blood was warm and fluid when it spurted out of the young man's mouth, but when landing on the ground, it had already become a colorful piece of alloy. As the alloy piece tinkled against the ground, the Yu Clan man opened his eyes. A dagger-sharp frosty light flashed across his pair of eyes.

"Father!" The young man impatiently took a step forward.

The Yu Clan man knitted his brows and remained silent for long. With a bright light flowing in his erect eye, he suddenly pointed his finger at a shelf on a corner. 'Tinkle'! Following his move, a four-legged square cauldron on the shelf turned pure golden from jade.

"Did you succeed?" The young man hurriedly asked.

"Succeed?" The Yu Clan man touched his erect eye and frowned, then pondered for a while and slowly nodded. "From now on, I can call myself 'Yu Hu'. My power has changed. My blood, my marrow,

every part of my body is now filled with the power of the great Dao of Pan Jin world."

"But...Is it truly because our bloodline is too lowly?" Yu Hu rubbed his brightly shining erect eye and sighed. "The transformation of my soul has failed. Is it because I'm in Pan Gu world? Or, is this truly like what they said, that if we lowly family people want to melt our erect eyes, we have to seek the help of..."

"Pan Yu blood?" The young man carefully looked at Yu Hu and said, "Father, only they have Pan Yu blood!"

Yu Hu stood up and walked to the window. He pushed the wooden window open and looked at the vast military camp outside the mansion, at those humanoid creatures which had complicated metal bodies.

Pan Jin world was a magical world. That world was ruled by the power of metal, and the local creatures in that world were these strong and powerful metal creatures. More attractively, that world was rich in all kinds of metal mineral resources, including some especially rare and precious pre-world materials which could forge pre-world spirit treasures.

Yu Hu's family occupied this highly valuable world. Without a doubt, his family would have a bright future.

Yu Hu was talented. Under his leadership, his family conquered Pan Jin world in merely ten-thousand years. Besides, he successfully touched the original Dao of Pan Jin world and gained some understanding of the original natural law of Pan Jin world.

His power now allowed him to turn everything into metal, and control all metal objects. His body had transformed; he understood the great Dao of Pan Jin world, which should bring him the title of 'Yu'.

However, his erect eye hadn't melted, and the most important soul transformation wasn't completed...

"Great three suns and nine moons, although my soul will become a part of you after I die, why don't I pursue an immortal life? With nothing but..." Raising his hand and touching his erect eye, Yu Hu snorted through gritted teeth and said coldly, "With Pan Yu blood, I can complete my soul transformation...But, but, you know their conditions."

If Yu Hu wanted to get one slight drop of Pan Yu blood from those high-grade large families which controlled it to sublime his soul, he would have to open the entire Pan Jin world to one of these large families. He would need to expose all information of Pan Jin world to this family. Then, Pan Jin world would be like any other colony world, becoming a target of this large family to be plundered and drained.

How much would this large family take from Pan Jin world?

Ninety-nine percent? Ninety-eight percent? Or, in the best case, if the people from this family was slightly less greedy than the others, they might take ninety-five percent of all profits gained from Pan Jin world each year. For one drop of Pan Yu blood, Yu Hu would need to sell the world which was conquered by his entire family with ten-thousand years of efforts!

"Perhaps, I should go ask Yu Meng...His conditions are acceptable." Yu Hu clicked his lips and said, "What do you think? In order to keep our profits from Pan Jin world, we do seem to need some allies."

As if to encourage himself, Yu Meng then murmured, "Before today, I dared not to ally with Yu Meng and his friends, because I was afraid that they might swallow me...But now, I've earned the power to talk equally with them. Why don't I do it?"

A quarter of an hour later, a carriage was driven out of the mansion, towards Yu Meng's camp.

# Chapter 1777: Colony Alliance

Yu Meng had numberless warriors under his command. After all, he was the powerful ruler of a whole hundred worlds.

In the darkness, countless wolf-headed, dog-headed, leopard-headed, and dark-skinned humanoid warriors were silently on patrol, holding all kinds of heavy weapons. In the air, eagle-headed warriors spread their wings and floated in the sky, keeping a watch on everything in the world with their sharp eyes. These winged warriors were Su's families.

Yu Hu got off the carriage and subconsciously rubbed the emblem of his White-crown Bird Family, which was wearing on his left chest. Meanwhile, he cast a quick glance at those muscular warriors in the darkness with admiration while sensing their strong powers.

White-crown bird was a type of small carnivorous bird in Pan Yu world that fed on sparrows and field mice. Compared to Yu Meng's White Flower Skylark Family, White-crown Bird Family was much stronger. But, fates were uncertain.

White-crown Bird Family only found a metal world, which was predominated by the creatures with metal bodies, while White Flower Skylark Family found a group of worlds which was composed of over a hundred differently scaled worlds, and managed to conquer a whole hundred worlds.

"Lucky guy...I wish he and his family can always remain lucky, and he will bring the luck to us..." Yu Hu snorted while saying, "Ado River Family people now have their eyes on him. Yu Meng and his families are about to give up, aren't they? Those blood-sucking families should really die." Rubbing his erect eye, Yu Hu murmured with a low voice, "I just want to complete my soul transformation so I can free myself from the limitation of lifespan."

Taking in a deep breath, Yu Hu walked to the gate of the camp. Two eagle-headed warriors in golden armors walked out from both sides of the gate. A weird spell symbol was inlaid on their chest armors with turquoises.

"White-crown Bird Family? Are you Master Luo Hu? Please come in. Our highest Divine King has been expecting you for long." They said slowly with a strange accent while looking at Yu Hu with deeply sunken eyes.

Yu Hu coughed slightly, then proudly and gracefully looked at the two eagle-headed warriors.

Su walked out of the darkness. Bowing deeply to Yu Hu, he said, "Dear Master Yu Hu, please forgive their stupidity and ignorance...As such a noble being, your heart must be as broad as the sky...Please come in. Our Divine King has been expecting you." A few black feathers moved slightly behind Su's neck.

Yu Hu smiled in satisfaction. Touching his brightly shining erect eye, he grinned proudly, then laughed, "Are you Su? Although your people look all the same, you're different from the others. I remember you, the most capable, strongest envoy under Yu Meng's command...I am so jealous of him for having great helpers like you."

Curving his lip corners slightly downwards, Yu Hu snorted in dissatisfaction and continued, "Not like my Pan Jin world. Those metal creatures have nothing but springs and gears in their brains. I don't understand, how did that world create those weird creatures."

"But, they are very powerful, aren't they? I remember this, a hundred years ago in my Master's arena, a warrior from Pan Jin world defeated fifty same-level werewolves." Su smiled while his eyes sparkled as he responded flatteringly.

Yu Hu chuckled. With pride, he glanced at the wolf-headed warriors in the darkness, then followed Su into Yu Meng's camp. A

few Yu Clan young men walked closely behind him, curiously looking at the exotic buildings in this camp.

In just a few days, a large number of black pyramids appeared in Yu Meng's camp. These pyramids were connected with the earth meridians near Liang Zhu City, and had been absorbing powers from them. A green fire was burning ragingly on top of each pyramid; from time to time, dim green spell symbols would sparkle on these pyramids, and waves of weird power would sweep across the sky.

They walked for a long while, even going through three small teleporting formations. Finally, Yu Hu and his people came to the central area of Yu Meng's camp. This was a one-thousand and five-hundred meters tall stair-stepped pyramid, composed of nine-stories. Countless meters-tall scorpion warriors were standing on the pyramid, looking down at Yu Meng and his people. The body of these scorpion warriors were covered in dark crystal shells.

The upper half of these scorpion warriors was tall and muscular, in humanoid shapes, while the lower half of them was that of a scary-looking scorpion. Their long and sharp tails swaged quickly behind their bodies, and the water-tank-sized stings on their tails emitted a strong smell.

"A whole hundred worlds... So enviable. So many species, strong warriors..." While looking at these scorpion warriors who seemed to be especially strong, Yu Hu sighed sincerely.

"Everything has its own advantages." Yu Meng stood in the long and dark path behind the entrance of the black pyramid, then laughed with a deep voice, "At least, their venom can't do any harm to Pan Jin world warriors. Luo...No, Master Yu Hu, I am thrilled by your arrival. You are such an important part of our plan. Your warriors are so terrifyingly powerful, and we just can't forget about it."

"You!" Yu Hu walked into the pyramid in large steps and fervidly

hugged Yu Meng. They also greeted each other with a cheek kiss.

For Yu Clan people, chummy greeting ways like cheek kissing could only be used under special circumstances. When the two parties of the meeting were about to share great interests, cheek kissing would be necessary. The velocity of blood flows would affect the body temperatures on the cheek areas, and experienced Yu Clan nobles were able to figure out each others' attitudes through cheek kisses.

In this very moment, the facial temperatures of both Yu Meng and Yu Hu remained accurately on a certain degree. They loosened their hands and closely looked each other in the eyes, then grinned in satisfaction together. A cold beam of light flashed across Yu Meng's eyes as he swiftly glimpsed at Yu Hu's erect eye, which was filled with a frosty metal light. Next, he slightly nodded.

"You're in a big trouble, aren't you? So, you need our help, and we need your power." Yu Meng amicably held Yu Hu's hand and brought him into the pyramid.

Su and the other few eagle-headed warriors stopped Yu Hu's people and took them somewhere else.

In a secret hall underground at a great depth which was covered in layers of magic seals, over a hundred Yu Clan nobles stood by a round-shaped meeting place, staying quiet, cold, and serious. Among them, ninety percent had melted their erect eyes, while ten percent were just like Yu Hu, having their erect eyes glowing with dazzling and weird lights.

"Luo...No, Yu Hu, welcome to our Colony Alliance!" A Yu Clan man walked out of the crowd with large steps and hugged Yu Hu tightly. He was clearly a believer of the Red Sun, a master of close combat, violence, and slaughter, as he was much taller and stronger than the others. "You arrived just in time...We're preparing for a truly important meeting."

"Lanye River Family...Yu Bo...You..." Yu Hu looked at him with

surprise, saying.

Yu Meng and Yu Bo laughed out loud together. Their Colony Alliance wasn't as simple as it sounded.

# Chapter 1778: An Envoy From the Humankind

In the pyramid, by the edge of the round meeting place, over a hundred Yu Clan nobles stood quietly.

Countless thumb-sized, transparent, crystalline scorpions crawled up the walls, releasing thin beams of red light from their eyes. The red lights wove into a giant web that sealed off the entire hall.

Yu Hu curiously touched one beam of red light. Along with a sizzling noise, the nail of his right forefinger was shattered, then a strong poison surged into his body through his broken fingernail like a flood. He frowned and turned his entire hand silver. The dark green poison lingered around his hand for a while and slowly faded away.

"Scary..." Yu Hu nodded to the surrounding few Yu Clan nobles, who turned to him also with curiosity, then carefully turned his hand back normal. The smooth white skin on his hand was already dried and withered, and countless thin cracks had appeared on his skin. Strands of lingering poisons spread from the cracks, suffusing the air with a pungent smell.

The pupils of all Yu Clan nobles surrounding Yu Hu shrank, as they were all shocked by the strong poison of these tiny crystalline scorpions. They admired Yu Hu's ability of momentarily metamorphing his body, and also felt relieved because of the power that Yu Meng displayed.

Obviously, in this Colony Alliance, everyone who was qualified to stand in this meeting place was powerful.

"Brothers, glad to see you all here." The dark-skinned Yu Meng put on a golden armor and showed up in the middle of this meeting place, holding a large staff. He slightly bowed to everyone, then

continued mildly, "You may be representing yourselves or some groups...But, since we are all here, we do have shared interests and purposes!"

'Interests'!

Hearing this, the eyes of all present Yu Clan nobles sparkled brightly while strong waves of energy spread from their bodies. These energies were from numerous colony worlds and contained the powers of the great Dao of these worlds. They clashed against each other and stirred up visible space ripples in the air.

Yu Hu trembled slightly as he sensed the tremendous pressure coming from all directions. He was surprised. He made the breakthrough earlier today and touched the original great Dao of Pan Jin world, while some of the Yu Clan nobles around him had stepped into this level for years, and were more powerful than him by even a hundred folds...

All in all, they were incredibly powerful. In front of these experienced 'Yu', Yu Hu was as immature as a newborn baby.

"Greater powers means greater interests!" Yu Hu's heart moved. He smilingly nodded, as he was satisfied by the power which had already been shown by these Colony Alliance representatives.

"We have great powers and vast territories, along with countless brave, loyal and reliable warriors. With all our armies gathered, we can cover the sky of hundreds of worlds, and the earth of thousands of worlds." Yu Meng's voice was bright and strangely magnetic.

"What made us gather in here on the sneak? Interests, nothing but interests!" Said Yu Meng with the deep voice, "We needed to defend our own interests, our reasonable, legal interests. Specifically, we need to take back what belonged to us from the hands of some rotten and greedy people."

In the medium sized setting place, over a hundred Yu Clan nobles

gasped simultaneously.

"We're all Pan Yu's descendants, we have the same bloodline." Said Yu Meng strongly, "But, why can some people sit idle and enjoy the fruits of others' works? Why do we have to let them take the most our harvests, that we spent so many efforts on, and even risked our lives for?"

The other Yu Clan nobles nodded with shining eyes.

"They are holding too great a power, monopolizing too many resources..." While pointing his staff at every single 'Yu' on the scene whose erect eye hadn't been melted yet, Yu Meng continued, "What are they controlling and threatening us with? Eh?"

"When our ancestors or ourselves started the journeys of expedition with no one to depend on, they didn't offer us any help. But, when we finally conquered one, two, three new worlds, and built our thin wealth, why would we helplessly dedicate our profits and wealth to them on our own initiative?"

"Monopolization, they monopolized Pan Yu blood!" Yu Meng growled, "Pan Yu blood allows us, the low-grade family people with so-called 'lowly bloodlines', to melt our erect eyes, sublime our souls, and free ourselves from the limitation of lifespans."

"By holding Pan Yu blood in their hands, they will not worry that we might get out of their control...No one doesn't want an immortal life, but as a price of that, we must ignobly kneel before them and offer most of our families' possessions."

"That is not right!" Said Yu Meng coldly, "That is not right...Truly not right at all. Maybe, they should have a share, but not so much; maybe they should have some power, but not so great."

"We, as the current main force of the entire Yu Clan, should have more!" Said Yu Meng straightforwardly, "My brothers in Colony Alliance, we should protect our interests, and we should have

greater powers and higher positions. At least, we should be equal to those bloody top-grade families, because that would be fair and reasonable!"

All Yu Clan nobles on the scene gave a shout, then applauded to agree with Yu Meng.

"Another example, we should have a share of the precious Pan Yu blood, and this share needs to be large enough." Yu Meng smilingly looked at those 'Yu', who still had their erect eyes while saying, "In general, the authority striation and the division of interests in the entire Yu Clan should be changed."

Yu Meng smiled and continued, "For this purpose, we have already made some preliminary moves...Last time, our foreign ally, Ji Hao... As you all know, he is a divine emperor of Pan Gu world, a 'Yu' of Pan Gu world. He launched a perfect, stunning surprise strike on our enemies. With our help, this action was taken with a howling success!"

"But, this slight success is not enough. Ji Hao's action is just one way to stall some of our enemies...If we want to end this war in a decisive victory in Pan Gu world, we need stronger allies, more violent methods, and more effective actions."

"Let us welcome our most honored guest, the envoy from the humankind...Human Eighteen!"

Yu Meng pointed his fire at a corner of the meeting place. Following his move, the other Yu Clan nobles saw an average-looking young man walking out of a small door in the darkness. He was wearing a long coarse robe, seeming to be capable and vigorous.

# Chapter 1779: Praying and Sanctification

He was average-looking, averagely tall with average skin. His eight teeth exposed from his grin were of average shape and color. Those teeth were not snow-white and shining, but were slightly yellow, like the teeth of ordinary human beings.

Human Eighteen, even this name was...

"This name is dishonest!" Yu Hu waved his hand and murmured.

Yu Hu's voice was quite low and unclear, that even the few Yu Clan nobles around him didn't hear him. However, this average-looking Human Eighteen sharply sensed his voice and the dissatisfaction contained in it.

"Human, ranked eighteen, so my name is Human Eighteen." He smiled warmly as he nodded to Yu Hu while seriously explaining his name, "I am an orphan. When I was little, my parents were killed by a slave-hunting troop from Dishi Family. Among all my adopted brothers, I am ranked eighteen."

Hearing him, the Yu Clan nobles on the scene showed strange expressions. 'A slave hunting troop from Dishi Family', what a fabulous story! This human envoy that Yu Meng introduced to everyone in earnest turned out to be an orphan, because his parents were killed by some slave hunters from Dishi Family.

"Unreliable!" Mumbled a middle-aged Yu Clan man beside Yu Hu.

"Without a doubt, I am full of enmity towards you." Once again, Human Eighteen sharply grasped this Yu Clan man's voice. He turned around and seriously looked at this Yu Clan man while saying calmly, "But, the hatred in my heart will not affect our cooperation. I know what I should do and what I shouldn't."

Even with a mildness, Human Eighteen continued honestly, "After I have finished my job, I will try my best to kill all Dishi Family people to my parents. But before that, in order to fulfill the

mission given by my adoptive father, I will fight side by side with you, and if I have to, I will give up my life to defend you."

Frankly and with simple language, Human Eighteen explained his family background, his life story, and the attitudes of himself and the people behind him to the non-humankind. But, his honesty made the hearts of all present Yu Clan nobles heavy.

He was an elite, without a question. He was able to directly face his family background and his hatred without being blinded by it, which was engraved in his mind. He was dispassionate and composed...

'Hopefully, not too many people like this exist in Pan Gu world.' Some present Yu Clan nobles said in their hearts.

"Where is this kid from?" Fiddling with a purely dark crystal ball, which was emitting strong energy waves, a Yu Clan young man pointed at Human Eighteen and asked while gazing at Yu Meng.

"I don't know who he is working for either." Yu Meng honestly spread his hands and gave a reply, "But, I can clearly tell you this... My brothers, he and the people behind him seem to possess a power that is beyond our imagination...When we invaded Pan Gu world, they found us the first time around. They know about our deal with Ji Hao, and what we did in Liang Zhu City."

With a mysterious smile, Yu Meng coughed slightly.

Taking in a deep breath, Yu Meng looked around at the others and continued seriously, "Everything is top secret. I hope the things that I'm going to say..."

"Will remain secret forever without leaking one word?" All present Yu Clan noble immediately understood the hidden meaning in Yu Meng's unfinished sentence. One by one, they each took an oath that was strong enough to earn Yu Meng's trust.

"I chose to trust them and work with them because..." Glancing at Human Eighteen, Yu Meng said, "...on an ancient altar in the

third desert world conquered by my White Flower Skylark Family, we found some marks left by their people."

Hearing this, the present Yu Clan nobles burst into an exclamation while staring at Human Eighteen, as if he were a walking ghost.

Among all colony families, White Flower Skylark Family was famous. The worlds conquered by this family weren't large, and were mostly poor, but this family had indeed conquered a whole hundred worlds!

A whole hundred worlds! For this reason, White Flower Skylark Family and Yu Meng became highly influential among all colony world nobles. But just then, Yu Meng mentioned that the marks left by Human Eighteen's people were found on an altar in the third world his family conquered...Apparently, Human Eighteen earthed Yu Meng's trust with those marks and made Yu Meng bring him into this meeting place!

"But, according to the information provided by Yemo Family, Pan Gu world people never traveled to other worlds!" Yu Hu screamed, "We are staying in this world, taking beatings and suffering invasions from Yemo Family and the other eight small families!"

Human Eighteen smilingly looked at Yu Hu and responded, "Maybe that's true, but is that important? I came here to sign a covenant with you for our cooperation, and also to solve the biggest hidden worry in your hearts, dear noble masters."

"Biggest hidden worry?" The present Yu Clan nobles laughed. They didn't believe in any word Yu Meng and Human Eighteen said. Instead, they still chose to believe that the humankind in Pan Gu world was just an undeveloped primitive species, and human beings were uncultured, weak, and stupid, waiting to be conquered.

As proud Yu Clan nobles, they refused to believe that Human Eighteen could solve any of their hidden worries.

Besides, what hidden worry did they have? They were powerful world conquerors, colony worlds with the title of 'Yu', and were definitely capable of overturning those greedy top-grade families.

"You may be powerful enough to overturn, even destroy the top-grade families in Pan Yu world." Said Human Eighteen calmly, "But dear masters, please remember one thing... Are you sure that the 'saints', who are also the controllers of the great Dao of your world, will support you?"

The meeting place fell into a deathly silence.

Human Eighteen showed no expression change, but continued with the mild and infectious smile.

"My adoptive father wants me to tell you that we can provide you with the 'secret praying magic' which can allow you to grow powerful enough to rival your saints within a short period of time." Said Human Eighteen smilingly, "Of course, the results will vary from individual to individual. But, if the power can't be great enough, you can fix it with numbers...That won't be an unsolvable issue."

The atmosphere in the meeting place turned especially weird, as all present Yu Clan nobles had their eyes fixed on Human Eighteen. Their throats were dry and their burning gazes seemed to even incinerate Human Eighteen.

# Chapter 1780: Emperor Xun's Confidence

Watching Ao Bai furiously storm out of the heaven, Ji Hao's clone hesitated shortly, then transformed into a beam of light and flew to the Fuso tree which stood in the backyard of his palace.

Floating before the tree, he sent over a strand of spirit power. A few giant branches of the tree swayed slightly, then a 'tiny twig', which was too small to be mentioned to the tree, fell off. The hundred-meter-thick 'twig' was dazzling with a fiery light. It flew to Ji Hao and exploded into a cloud of fire sparks, surrounding Ji Hao's clone.

A raging fire rose into the sky. With the help of this 'twig', Ji Hao's clone grew a physical body. In comparison with the 'weak and fragile' one before, this new clone, which was generated from a strand of Ji Hao's spirit power, was stronger by ten-million folds.

He smiled, cupped his hands, and bowed to Fuso tree, then transformed into a golden light and flew out.

"Perhaps...you should be careful." Not long after Ji Hao left the palace, Fuso tree's deep voice suddenly resounded in his ears. "I saw what happened just now. That priest used a treasure to attack you, I...felt like I have seen it in the old days, haven't I? But, I forgot about it."

Ji Hao was surprised. Subconsciously, he turned back and glanced at Fuso tree. What left an impression on Fuso tree and made it remind Ji Hao especially must be something or someone out of the ordinary. And, Ji Hao somehow felt that Fuso tree...didn't truly forget about that 'treasure'. What or who managed to even scare this powerful tree, which was older than the world?

Hearing Fuso tree, the real Ji Hao who stayed in his palace, dealing with the blood-red soul power in his spiritual space, raised a hand. The Pan Gu bell buzzed deeply and transformed into a

bright beam of light, then flew out of the palace and merged into his clone.

The clone nodded and activated the bell to shield his whole body, then flashed across the air and disappeared without a trace. Following behind Ji Hao, Man Man ignored Shaosi's warning and carried her pair of giant hammers as she rushed out of the gate of the heaven with hundreds of Zhu Rong warriors and a large group of Gold Crow warriors, who had been breathing out fire sparkles.

As one of the dragon ancestor's nine sons, Ao Bai was measurelessly powerful indeed. Not long after Ji Hao's clone left the heaven, Ao Bai had already arrived at Pu Ban City. Treading on dense dark clouds, he floated above the city. As a dragon roar echoed through the sky, Ao Bai pointed his finger downwards. Following his moves, giant waves were raised from the tens of great rivers near Pu Ban City. Thousands of water streams surged straight into the sky, twisting and interweaving, instantly transforming into thousands of water dragons, descending from the sky.

"Gong Sun Xun, how dare you kill so many of our dragon boys?" Ao Bai blamed Emperor Xun for the death of all dragon warriors. He roared thunderously while pressing down both hands. The thousands of enormous water dragons vented rumbling roars, diving down towards Emperor Xun's palace, as if the divine river were falling from the sky.

Ao Bai was Bixi, the most strengthful one among the dragon ancestor's nine sons. He wasn't good at water magic; on the contrary, he was a 'rough' magic user. However, all his magic had one shared feature, overwhelming might.

This 'water dragon strike' was merely an average water magic, but cast by Ao Bai, it became stunning and formidable. From a great distance away, the thousands of water dragons started a strong gale that managed to shake the defensive formation of Emperor Xun's palace. Above the palace, layers of magic shields

glowed, but following the muffled sounds of waves, these magic shields shattered layer by layer into streams of light spots that dissipated in the air.

Emperor Xun's palace was built on a three-hundred-meters-tall white jade stage. As the water dragons approached, the defensive formations based on the stage fell apart, and the white jade stage began cracking. Jade pieces darted everywhere, hitting the palace's walls and sending up dazzling fire sparkles while generating deafening noises.

In his pheasant feather skirt, Emperor Xun stood on a terrace of his palace as he watched Ao Bai descending from the sky while laughing with a weird, hissing voice, having his teeth bared. He showed no sign of fear. On the contrary, he acted quite provocatively.

With pride and carelessness, Emperor Xun fiercely pointed at Ao Bai with his golden spear while saying, "Bixi? I heard that you're one of the dragon ancestor's nine sons. You're a dead old monster. How come you get to become a divine emperor? Hehe, I heard that you look just like an old large turtle. Today, I'll take your turtle shell and make it into a bed!"

Ao Bai halted in surprise. How did Emperor Xun know that he was Bixi, one of the dragon ancestor's nine sons? How did Emperor Xun know that he died long ago, but had regrown a physical body with a secret natural treasure?

But soon, Ao Bai was utterly enraged by what Emperor Xun said. Taking his turtle shell?

Was Bixi a turtle?

Indeed, his real shape looked slightly like a turtle, but his shell was thickly covered in dragon scales, while turtles had none! No, no, this wasn't the point. How dare Emperor Xun call him 'an old large turtle'? How dare Emperor Xun claim to make his shell into a bed?

"You should die!" Ao Bai burst into raging roars. He sent tremendous waves of mountain-heaven power into the thousands of water dragons and made them heavier and heavier, clearer and clearer. The water dragons were about to bump into Emperor Xun's palace.

"You're just a small dragon, but you're so feisty!" Said an unhurried voice from behind Emperor Xun. Following the voice, an old priest with white hair and beard walked out. He slowly swaggered out and stretched his left fingers. Above each fingertip, a tiny hazy mountain could be seen. The five differently colored mountains suddenly released torrents of colorful lights, rising against the water dragons, which were diving down from the sky.

A thunderous boom was caused when the colorful lights bumped into the thousands of water dragons.

A tremor went through Ao Bai's body as he stared at the water dragons, which had already disintegrated into a heavy rain.

The five colorful mountains upon the priests' fingertips may be a set of treasure or a special ability. The colorful lights released from the five mountains were unstoppably powerful, that with one strike, Ao Bai's water dragons were crushed thoroughly.

The water dragon strike cast by Ao Bai wasn't a high-grade, mysterious magic, but with his tremendous strength, the water dragons he created were strong indeed. The thousands of water dragons could flatten a towering mountain in a moment.

Nevertheless, this strike was neutralized by the old priest so easily. Clearly, this old priest should not be underestimated.

"Emperor Xun, is this where your confidence comes from? Is this who you're relying on? With this white-haired kid by your side, you now dare to go against the dragon-kind, don't you?" Ao Bai drove his clouds down and floated above the palace as he stared at Emperor Xun and said, "Even your great ancestor Emperor Xuanyuan dared not to turn hostile against our dragon-kind. But

with this white-haired kid, do you really dare to do the things that even your ancestors didn't have the courage to do?"

Emperor Xun chuckled as he scornfully glanced at Ao Bai.

"Emperor Ao Bai, we shall not offend each other. You may simply return to the heaven to be a divine emperor. As for the things happening in the mortal world, you better not step in. Otherwise, you won't have a chance to regret when your soul dies." The priest gave a faint smile and said.

Hearing the priest, Ao Bai's face immediately darkened with wrath.

# Chapter 1781: The Power of Divine Emperors

By the time Ji Hao's clone, that was strengthened by the power of Fuso tree, chased Ao Bai to Pu Ban City, Ao Bai had already burst into raging roars and pounced on the old priest.

As one of the dragon ancestor's nine sons, he wasn't good at magic. Instead, he preferred close combat to tear his enemies apart with pure strength. As for the magic to generate storms, thunders, or gales, Ao Bai couldn't do better than even averagely gifted pure-blood ancient dragons. Earlier, the thousands of water dragons he created were destroyed by the old priest quite easily.

Rather than casting more magic to bring humiliation on himself, he decided to directly launch a physical offensive and kill his enemy face to face!

A dragon roar quaked the heaven and earth. White air blasts burst from Ao Bai's mouth, transforming into waves of white colored, explosive airstreams, which struck towards Emperor Xun and the old priest. Emperor Xun gripped the golden spear and hurriedly stepped back, not seeming to fight against Ao Bai at all. From behind him, about ten priests rushed up and shielded him.

The old priest didn't step back. On the contrary, he moved forward and spread his left fingers. As the bright, colorful light rose into the sky, he threw a heavy slap at Ao Bai with his mountain-heavy palm. A series of explosive sounds vibrated the world while the strong airstreams were broken. The old priest's long hair and beard fluttered in the air and tore apart the space, causing shrill noises.

Buzz!

Following the noise, the long-handled hammer landed violently on the priest's left hand and stirred up a fierce, dark gust of wind.

On the priest's fingertips, the five hazy mountains were shaken

slightly. The priest's face turned red while a cracking noise could be heard without an end. At the point where the hammer and the priest's hand touched, spider-web like, dark space cracks spread in all directions.

This hammer strike launched by Ao Bai was blocked by the priest's bare hand. The two tremendous forces clashed against each other and shattered the space.

The dark space cracks spread for thousands of meters and tore apart all defensive formations and magic shields of Emperor Xun's palace. Countless formations buried in the foundation of the palace were destroyed. Fires rose from every corner as intense explosions sent tiles, bricks, and pillars into the sky. Numberless maids and servants gave vent to torrents of screams and cries while flying up amidst the explosions.

"Eh?" Ao Bai looked at the old priest with surprise, "You can take thirty percent of my strength? Not bad, not bad... Which body-strengthen cultivation method did you use?"

The old priest took a deep breath. Under his skin, a green light flashed across, and in the next moment, his body suddenly turned into a piece of green crystal. Through the transparent skin, one could see his bones and internal organs. A pure, strong life-force was released from his body, condensing into a light shield that covered him.

"Linden body?" Ao Bai bared his teeth and laughed, "Good, good! As long as I figure out where you're from... Are you Priest Mu's disciple? Hehe Priest Mu doesn't want to stay in Pan Gu world anymore, does he? Even though he has cultivated himself into a 'saint', offending our dragon-kind..."

"Stop bluffing." The old priest said with a frosty smile, "What can you do to Master Mu? Can't Master Mu stay in Pan Gu world only because we offended the dragon-kind? Do you believe yourself? Unless the dragon ancestor comes back, what can you scaled

animals possibly do to Master Mu and Master Hua? What can you possibly do to us?"

Being interrupted by the priest, Ao Bai's face darkened again.

He wanted to boast, but ended up bringing disgrace on himself.

Indeed, the dragon-kind wasn't as powerful as before. Back when the dragon ancestor was still alive, the dragons truly rampaged throughout the whole world, and no one dared to offend them. Back then, Priest Mu and Priest Hua hadn't attained their great Dao, and only had a few disciples, but the dragon ancestor was able to suppress the great Dao of nature with his strong body and his pure, tremendous strength, which were inherited from Saint Pan Gu!

At that time, no one in the world could afford to offend the dragon-kind.

After the dragon ancestor disappeared, Ao Bai, his brothers, and the younger dragons had continued living a domineering life for quite a long period of time. But once Priest Hua and Priest Mu attained their great Dao and became 'saints' and had more and more disciples, the dragon-kind took a downfall. Since then, each day the dragons lived was worse than the previous day, and every generation was weaker than the older one.

Back in the ancient times, the dragons never took the heaven seriously. But by now, the dragon-kind actually needed to bring Ao Bai back to life and push him onto a divine throne so that the dragon-kind could rise again. How awkward was this? Compared to the old days, when the dragon ancestor was still here, the current dragon-kind was too weak.

"You, should die!" There was an old saying, 'people need faces while the trees need bark'. Dragons were proud, yet the old priest brutally exposed the scar in Ao Bai's heart. Ao Bai roared with fury and boosted up his strength, wielding the hammer to launch a full-strike on the priest.

Again and again, one strike was struck after another, with every strike being heavier than the previous one. Ao Bai's giant hammer started fierce gusts of wind, which directly turned the tens of mountains around Emperor Xun's palace into ash. Protected by the ten priests, Emperor Xun drew back far away while the old priest continued to face Ao Bai, showing no sign of fear.

On his left hand, the five hazy tiny mountains again shone with splendid lights, blocking Ao Bai's strikes and absorbing half of his power. The priest's body was glowing with a green light. With an 'indestructible sacred linden body' attained under Priest Mu's guidance, he withstood Ao Bai's crazy attacks.

A slight series of cracking noise could be heard. From a distance away, Ji Hao saw slight cracks appearing on the priest's body. Apparently, Ao Bai's attacks were beyond the margins of his tolerance. After taking three-hundred hammer strikes from Ao Bai, his body was already on the verge of collapse.

Nevertheless, the priest gave a sonorous growl while a fist-sized, jade-like blue lotus flew out of his body. The glistening blue lotus shone with a cold blue light that shielded his entire body. Ao Bai didn't stop bashing, but with the lotus, the priest only slightly trembled, and his pale face had recovered a lot.

Ji Hao scanned across the priest's body with his spirit power and found that this blue lotus had taken over ninety percent of the power delivered by Ao Bai's hammer. The rest ten percent was still horrific, yet, with the five-colored mountains on his left hand and his linden body, the priest was able to easily cope with it.

"Like I said, Bixi, you dragons should stay out of this! Get back to the heaven and don't bring a disaster to your dragon-kind!" Seeing that this blue lotus managed to block Ao Bai's storm-like attacks, the priest began threatening Ao Bai with an aggressive tone, "You don't even know who are you fighting against!"

"Not Priest Mu and Priest Hua?" Ao Bai asked. Raging flame and

dense smoke rose from his mouth while thunderbolts coiled around his body. As a divine emperor, he triggered nature's power while wielding the hammer. A tremendous natural pressure descended from the sky, as if a giant mountain was lying on the entire Pu Ban City.

Crack!

The city quaked, then a million-miles-wide flat area sank down for tens of meters.

"Dragon boys, slaughter every last one in Emperor Xun's family!" Ao Bai bared his teeth and gave his order to the dragon warriors who followed behind him.

The natural pressure tied the priest up. The blue lotus glowed brightly, but failed to free its owner from nature's power.

# Chapter 1782: Injure Ao Bai Severely

"Break, break, break!" Ao Bai wielded the giant hammer while roaring madly. Countless spell symbols sparkled on the hammer, stirring up dark winds that gusted towards the priest.

In the sky, natural stars had been shaking. Because of Ao Bai's wrath, tens of thousands of natural stars emitted dazzling lights. Thin streams of star power poured down from the starry void across measureless distances, flowing into Ao Bai's body.

Ao Bai had a vast strength, which had almost reached the level of Dao. At the moment, his body was covered in water-like flowing starlight. With the help of the starlight, a despairingly great strength erupted from his body at this very moment.

His first hammer strike merely quaked the space, but the next strike cracked the space. After launching eight-hundred hammer strikes in a row, even the Dao of nature before Ao Bai's hammer twisted and split up. This nameless hammer that Ao Bai used was a pre-world spirit treasure. At the moment, it cracked under the counterforce from the broken great Dao, having countless cracks spreading on the hammerhead like spider webs.

The face of the old priest turned slightly blue. The five mountains on his left hand dimmed. Ji Hao clearly saw his left fingers twist and deform, as countless tiny broken bones penetrated his skin and flew out of his hand.

The five magical tiny mountains on his fingers were cracked as well, streams of spell symbols drifting out of the cracks. Whether the five mountains were generated from a magic or a secret treasure, this crazy series of attacks launched by Ao Bai had definitely destroyed these mountains and caused a severe harm to this old priest's cultivation.

Ji Hao even saw the priest's linden body rupture. Large amounts of water-clear, green-coloured 'blood' spurted out of his wounds.

After shedding each drop of blood, the priest's face would pale a bit more, and his power would weaken further.

But, the blue lotus had still been glowing brightly. No matter how hard Ao Bai attacked, the dim light emitted from the lotus was merely rippled, without showing a sign of breaking. Ji Hao was surprised by this lotus. What was it? How could he have such a great defensive power? Ao Bai even cracked the Dao of nature, but how could he not be able to do any harm to this lotus?

Ji Hao thought that maybe he should consult Yu Yu about this...Was the lotus a part of a powerful plant life from the Chaos?

Ao Bai sank into madness, never stopping attacking. Treading on a fiery cloud, Ji Hao silently moved backward. He activated the Pan Gu bell and locked on Emperor Xun and the priests around him, in case these people would suddenly launch an offensive towards Ao Bai. Who knew if they had some weird secret treasure or magic that might hurt Ao Bai?

Judging by the blue lotus, these priests were definitely out of ordinary. Ji Hao even doubted if they were truly disciples of Priest Hua and Priest Mu. They acted in quite a strange way, largely different from the pride that was rooted deeply in the bones of all the other Priest Hua and Priest Mu' disciples.

Suddenly, a thunderous bang could be heard. Ao Bai launched a mighty strike that shredded the space in the ten-mile radius area around him and the priest. Within this area, the Dao of nature was crushed. Through this extremely strong strike, Ao Bai collapsed the Dao of nature with pure physical strength. The counterforce rolled up like a tsunami and shattered the scales on Ao Bai's arms, tore apart his muscles, and exposed his golden, crystalline bones and the marrow, which were glowing with a colorful light.

"So damn painful!" Ao Bai roared. He cursed due to the pain, but his voice hinted an endless pride!

With pure physical strength, he destroyed a slight part of the Dao

of nature. Even though it was merely the Dao of nature in a ten-miles-wide area, and compared to the vast Pan Gu world, it was like a drop of water in an ocean, in terms of power quality, Ao Bai indeed have the power to rival the great Dao of nature!

Among the dragon ancestor's nine sons, Ao Bai was the only one who had such a great and pure strength.

The pre-world spirit treasure hammer shattered suddenly. The giant hammerhead was gone silently, without leaving a trace. This hammer directly took ninety percent of the counterforce from the Dao of nature, and reasonably, it vanished.

Dragons were wealthy. A pre-world spirit treasure was nothing to Ao Bai. He dropped the long handle of the hammer, then pulled out a dark, lusterless eight-edged hammer. Laughing wildly, he brandished the hammer and sent up a hurricane, generating the powers of Yin and Yang and crushing the space around him.

Ji Hao's eye corners twitched. This hammer was a pre-world supreme treasure, an especially heavy one. From a long distance way, Ji Hao scanned the hammer with his spirit power. The horrifyingly great weight of the hammer attacked through Ji Hao's spirit power, nearly crushing this Fuso tree clone of Ji Hao.

'So heavy, I'm afraid that even the real me needs to make quite an effort to lift it!' Thought Ji Hao's clone.

Dragons inherited Saint Pan Gu's strong body, and Ao Bai was the strongest one among the dragon ancestor's nine sons. In his hand, this hammer seemed to be weightless, as he waved it so freely without any difficulty.

The priest was gasping for breath while swiftly flying back. Earlier, his left hand was thoroughly crushed by a strike from Ao Bai. Colorful lights had been flowing out of his broken hand as he looked at Ao Bai with a pale face. The blue lotus was shaking slightly above his head, and the defensive blue light which had shielded his whole body was largely dimmed. The destructive

strike that Ao Bai launched just now caused a serious harm to this amazingly powerful blue lotus as well.

"White-haired kid!" Ao Bai sneered to the old priest while wielding the eight-edged hammer, "Today, I will kill Emperor Xun and turn him into a meat pie...Hehe, do you now dare to try stopping me?"

The priest didn't respond. Simultaneously, the other ten priests around Emperor Xun transformed their bodies into beams of light and flashed to Ji Hao and Ao Bai.

The expressions on Ji Hao and Ao Bai's faces changed slightly. They both put attention on these priests — Judging by the powerful blue lotus, these priests were all incredibly powerful, and could not be underestimated.

All of a sudden, a cold light burst from behind Ao Bai. Wu Bi, who was a devil now, laughed with a deafening, high-pitched voice while brushing across Ao Bai's back with a blood-red long blade holding in this hands. The three-feet and two-inches-long, weirdly shaped long blade fiercely cut through Ao Bai's back, nearly ripping his upper body entirely open.

Ao Bai howled shrilly in pain as blood erupted from his body. The blood was warm when it was still inside Ao Bai's body, but once it spurted out, it became bone-piercingly cold, completely colorless clear water!

The long blade in Wu Bi's hands was so evil. Ao Bai's face paled immediately.

Ji Hao shouted out in rage. He turned around and grabbed Ao Bai's shoulder, transforming both their bodies into a long streak of light and heading back to the heaven.

# Chapter 1783: Dragon Mother Blood Blade

"Cold!"

On the way back to the heaven, Ao Bai was shivering and moaning like an ordinary human being who was under the weather. Cold sweat had been oozing out of his pale-blue skin. No blood was shedding from the giant wound which nearly split his body into two — He had bled dry!

As Bixi, one of the dragon ancestor's nine sons, he had a thriving life-force, but as his blood was drained out, his great life-force failed to generate even a single drop of new blood for his body!

Through the wound on Ao Bai's back, Ji Hao's clone clearly saw his internal organs. The edges of the wound were pale, like the eyes of a dead fish. Ji Hao gently pressed a finger on the skin near the wound and found it was cold and soft like a corpse which had been soaked in a ditch for half a month.

"What the hell did Wu Bi use?" Asked Ji Hao in shock, "Even the dragon-slaying magic...is a mixture of spells and magic poisons. But the blade..."

"It's not a good thing anyway, damn it...Tell them to retreat!" Ao Bai opened his eyes with difficulty and murmured through gritted teeth.

Ao Bai and Ji Hao flew way too fast, that they had already fought a battle in Pu Ban City while the dragon army which followed Ao Bai out of the heaven was barely arriving. At the moment, Ji Hao was dragging Ao Bai back to the heaven, but they bumped straight into those dragon warriors.

"Retreat! Retreat! You bloody boys, you can't be a part of this!" Seeing his warriors, Ao Bai hurriedly screamed.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. Ao Bai's words were interesting.

What did he mean by 'you can't be a part of this'? Interesting,

truly interesting. Judging by these words, Ao Bai seemed to know something.

Ji Hao turned back and saw the evil and twisted grin on Wu Bi's face. Wu Bi wielded the long blood-red blade and left shreds of afterimages behind while chasing up amidst clouds of dark mist. After flashing across the space for a few times like a ghost at lightning speed, he caught up with Ji Hao and swung the long blade fiercely down, generating a dazzling beam of blood-red light.

The Pan Gu bell slightly rippled the space. The long blood-red blade, which injured Ao Bai severely just then, collided intensely against the Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell.

Ji Hao narrowed his eyes. He didn't feel any pressure from the blood-red light, which was generated by this long blade!

This blade strike launched by Wu Bi was no stronger than a full-strike from any average Divine Magus. But earlier, how did he manage to hurt Ao Bai so easily?

"Piss off!" Ji Hao growled sonorously while letting a golden streak of fire out of his mouth. With the vast power contained in the branch of Fuso tree, the golden flame Ji Hao released momentarily covered the area thousands of miles in radius. The afterimages created by Wubi were swirled into the fire and disappeared without a trace.

An even stronger golden fire covered Wu Bi's body, burning large blisters out of his skin and raising puffs of dark smoke.

"Ji Hao kid, one day, I'll teach you a lesson!" Wu Bi suffered a pain, yet he wasn't angry. Baring his teeth and laughing, he turned in the air and drew a giant arc in the sky while flashing across Ao Bi and Ji Hao, breaking into the dragon army.

Over a thousand heavily armored flood dragons burst into thunderous growls. They moved into formations and marched towards Wu Bi, their golden long spears venting countless

thunderbolts. The thunderbolts merged into a hundreds of meters wide thunder dragon and struck violently on Wu Bi.

Wu Bi's body exploded into a cloud of dark mist and shreds of shadow, drilling into the flood dragon formation. The thunder dragon blasted, but failed to touch Wu Bi's body. The next moment, Wu Bi swung the blood-red blade and generated a streak of blood-red light that sliced the sky open. The bodies of over a thousand powerful, strong flood dragons, who cultivated themselves severely for at least ten-thousand years, were cut open as easily as cutting a piece of tofu. Over a thousand dragon heads were sent up into the sky.

"Damn it, damn it, damn it, retreat, retreat!" Howled Ao Bai. Next, he suddenly turned around and yelled at Ji Hao, "Ji Hao, stop Wu Bi and save my dragon boys. I and my brothers will owe you one...You may command us, and the entire dragon-kind will follow your command for nine times!"

"Nine times?" Ji Hao stared at Ao Bai in shock. He was startled by Ao Bai's words. "You and your brothers? Nine? Have the dragon ancestor's nine sons all..." Asked Ji Hao.

Ao Bai glanced at him coldly and hollered to respond, "For countless years, we have been searching through the entire Pan Gu world. If we use all the treasures in our collection, which can regenerate physical bodies. Is it...a hard thing to bring my brothers and me back to the mortal world?"

"You have such a big plan...Alright, you each owe me one, and the entire dragon-kind will follow my command for nine times!" Ji Hao looked at Ao Bai, his teeth bared. His heart was even thumping because of what Ao Bai offered. What on earth was that blood-red blade? Was it worthy of this huge price that Ao Bai just promised?

If the dragon-kind weren't facing a great calamity...

Ji Hao quivered. Could that blood-red long blade in Wu Bi's hand

destroy the entire dragon-kind? How could this be possible? Where was that blade from? Ao Bai seemed to know, but he was almost dying at the moment, and clearly, he wouldn't tell Ji Hao the truth.

Suddenly, a terrifyingly great, prehistorical, and brutish dragon power descended from the sky. Following the dragon power, a thirty-meters-tall, muscular dragon man with a dragon head and a human body trod on a cloud, landed by Ji Hao's side. This dragon man seriously nodded to Ji Hao and said, "Emperor Ji Hao, please...just leave Eight to me." His body was covered in blue scales.

Ji Hao looked at this blue-scaled strong dragon man, then glanced at Ao Bai, who seemed to be relieved from a heavy load. Afterward, he threw Ao Bai to this dragon man and said, "May I ask your name?"

"I'm Qiu Niu!" The dragon man took Ao Bai over and put a human-head-sized 'pill' into his mouth while responding seriously, "That evil thing is left in your hands...Or, as long as you take the blade, I will crush these little Chu Wu Clan scums' bones piece by piece!"

Qiu Niu and Ao Bai were both afraid of the blood-red long blade!

Ji Hao raised his head and saw Wu Bi storming into the dragon army with an evil laughter. As he wielded the blade again, more than ten dragon heads were sent into the sky. This time, the ones killed by him weren't mix-blood flood dragon, but pure-blood dragons. Watching this, the few ancient dragon kings who had been leading the army gave vent to a torrent of abuse, with all kinds of weird bad languages.

"What's the blade's name?" Ji Hao exploded his body into dazzling fire sparks that covered the sky and rushed straight to Wu Bi. Meanwhile, he loudly asked Qiu Niu about this blade.

Qiu Niu hesitated for long. By the time Ji Hao rushed up to Wu

Bi, transforming into a raging fire and trapping him, Qiu Niu responded with a very low voice, as if murmuring to himself, "If I'm right, it may have something to do with... 'Dragon Mother'...But, she is well sealed...How come, how come..."

'Dragon Mother'?

Ji Hao paused briefly. As he paused, the fire ocean halted as well, and this nearly gave Wu Bi a chance to launch another strike.

# Chapter 1784: The Dragon Ancestor had..... Nine Sons?

Ji Hao's clone concentrated his attention on Wu Bi, daring not to be even slightly careless. He transformed into a raging fire and trapped Wu Bi inside. The Pan Gu bell rang resoundingly and released streams of Chaos power that wrapped up the entire area with a radius of a hundred miles, like a cocoon. Wu Bi wielded the blade over and over again. The blood-red blade lights generated from this blade were highly lethal to dragons, but it couldn't do any harm to Ji Hao.

This intense battle lasted for quite a while. Following Qiu Niu and Ao Bai's direction, the enormous dragon army composed a sealing formation and surrounded Wu Bi from a distance. The dragon warriors dared not to come close to fight Wu Bi, but raised enormous waves, layer by layer. The roaring waves merged into a tremendous cage that locked Ji Hao and Wu Bi in.

A soft, traceless, cold power was quietly released from the water cage. Ji Hao wasn't affected by this great sealing formation at all, while unwittingly, Wu Bi's movements turned slower and slower. Gradually, Wu Bi's body was covered by a thin layer of ice, with thin electric currents sizzling on his body surface.

The tens of ancient dragons kings who were controlling the formation burst into a bright shout. Following their voices, tens of thousands of dragon warriors each released a bolt of lightning. The lightning bolts merged together and compressed to the thickness of a hair, then struck on Wu Bi's body.

These dragons hated Wu Bi so much, but were so afraid of the blood-red blade in his hands. For this thunder strike, they put forth all their powers, without showing any mercy. The hair-thin lightning bolt blasted, and countless strong electric currents swept across the sky. A wave of electric current struck on the Pan Gu bell

and generated a series of muffled booms against the bell.

Ji Hao's clone wasn't powerful enough, that even under the protection of the bell, he drifted away under the great impact force like a falling leaf.

Wu Bi was caged in the great formation. He screamed when the lightning strike landed on his body, then a big half of his body directly vanished, leaving his head and half a neck, barely in shape. A series of electric currents struck on the blood-red blade and sent it swirling to a long distance away.

"Take it!" Carrying the badly injured Ao Bai, Qiu Liu couldn't do it himself. Therefore, he hurriedly gave a shout.

From the great dragon formation, a thousand-mile-long winged dragon responded with a strong roar. He shifted into his human shape and quickly flapped the enormous pair of wings on his back while flashing across the space. Within a blink of an eye, he darted to the blade and gripped it, leaving shreds of afterimages behind.

With great efforts, Ji Hao's clone steadied himself. He fixed his eyes on the winged dragon who had grasped the blade. Suddenly, he saw the hilt of the blood-red blade squirm weirdly. The moment the winged dragon gripped the hilt, countless sharp blood-red thorns pierced out.

The winged dragon's hands were thickly covered in small scales, yet the blood-red thorns easily penetrated those hands. The blade slightly quaked, then the winged dragon vented a shrill howl as an arm of his suddenly withered to look like the arms of a ten-thousand years old zombie.

A hoarse but high-pitched laughter was let out from Wubi's head, which was the only remaining part of his body. "All in the world can use this blade, but not dragons. Any dragon who touches it will die!"

Qiu Niu, Ao Bai, and countless dragon warriors growled with

rage. The winged dragon whose hands were penetrated by the blood-red thorns screamed in pain. His voice was filled with endless sorrow and despair. It was hard to imagine what exact kind of pain made such a proud and wild winged dragon scream like this.

Laughing shrilly, Wu Bi's head transformed into a strand of black mist, gusting swiftly into the winged dragon's eyes, ears, nose, and mouth. With his hands stuck on the hilt of the blood-red blade, the winged dragon watched Wu Bi drill into his body without being able to fight back. Next, his tall and muscular body withered quickly.

In the span of a breath, an over thirty-thousand years old ancient winged dragon was turned into a cloud of dust, drifting away along the wind. Wu Bi absorbed a big half of the winged dragon's spirit blood. While laughing, he regrew his body, swung an arm backward, and gripped the blood-red blade.

"This blade is really good...Hehe, in front of this blade, you dragons are just like chickens." Wu Bi raised the heavy blade high with both arms while grinning to the surrounding pale-faced dragon warriors with his twisted face. "The dragon-kind? Hehe, you're nothing!"

Qiu Niu and Ao Bai had their faces turned blue in anger. Qiu Niu gave a wild roar while carrying the seriously injured Ao Bai, who wasn't able to move at the moment, and pounced suddenly. He directly created a three-hundred-meters wide hole in the space, and showed up right beside Ji Hao in the next moment.

"Be careful boys! Move!" Before Qiu Niu's voice faded, the tens of dragon commanders who stood around him burst into howls. They were sent swirling out, bodies covered in bone-deep wounds, with blood spurting out.

"Hehe, hehe, hehehe!"

Following this weird laughter, a faint black watery mist spread

out, and from the mist, a, tens of meters tall figure emerged slowly. Holding the blood-red blade, Wu Bi moved swiftly to the figure. He frowned and looked at the figure, then shouted coldly, "Didn't we agree that you're going to seize the opportunity and launch a heavy strike to at least destroy half of the dragon force? Why are you showing your face already?"

Within the rolling dark mist, the strong figure responded with a strange voice, "I couldn't help but make a move when I saw them...Qiu Niu, Bi Xi...Hm, I want to bite your necks broken and drink your blood so badly. I want to open your chests and eat your hearts as desserts!"

Ji Hao's clone suddenly opened his erect eye and released a golden beam of light. The golden light fiercely struck on the dark watery mist.

Along with a sizzling noise, the dark mist was evaporated by the scorching golden light, then the golden light landed on the dark figure. The figure blocked the light with one hand, but the mist had faded and everyone clearly saw his face.

His body was covered in black scales; it was a dull, lifeless kind of black, like the dark desert covered by snow, completely lusterless and capable of making people's hearts heavy. He had a dragon head and a human body, along with tens of long dragon beards. The horns on his head were different from Qiu Niu and Ao Bai's horns. Qiu Niu and Ao Bai's horns looked like deer horns, while his horns were sharp and coniform.

In addition, sharp bones had stuck out of his shoulders, elbows, wrists, knees, and ankles. Generally, he, Ao Bai, and Qiu Niu, who were also in half-dragon, half-human shapes, looked similar. But, an especially evil and fierce power could be sensed from him. If dragons were auspicious creatures, this one must be a creature of thorough evil.

"Shixin...When did you sneak out?" Qiu Niu and Ao Bai shouted

in rage.

"Eh...Aren't you even gonna call me 'big brother'? Qiu Niu, Bixi, I didn't beat you to death in the old days... What a shame!"

'Shixin'? 'Big Brother'? Ji Hao was stunned.

# Chapter 1785: Shixin, Shigu, Shisui

"Big brother? Do you deserve it?" Ao Bai's eyes turned glowing red as he stared at Shixin and roared, "You're a creature of slaughter, a monster who eats hearts. Are you even a member of our dragonkind?"

Shixin widely opened his eyes, licked his lips, and laughed, "Eh, eh? Am I not a member of the dragon kind? Don't you forget that I share the exact same bloodline with you little scums...The dragon ancestor is my father, Dragon Mother is my mother..."

"Shut up!" Qiu Niu interrupted Shixin as he handed Ao Bai to a dragon warrior behind him, then pointed his finger at Shixin and growled, "You were imprisoned in the eye of North Sea, sealed by the dragon ancestor himself, guarded by the dragonkind, the-phoenix-kind, and the humankind all year round in turns. How did you break out?"

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows again.

A magic seal cast by the dragon ancestor himself? Guarded by the dragonkind, the-phoenix-kind and the humankind all year round? So strictly guarded...Not to mention the others, the dragon ancestor's seal was unbreakable to most of living beings in this world, wasn't it? After all, the dragon ancestor was one of the most powerful beings back in the ancient time, and was able to rival 'saints' with pure physical strength!

"Escape?" Shixin chuckled as he lifted his chin and scornfully shook his head, then responded, "Why would I escape? As your big brother, I walked out!"

While laughing, Shixin pulled out a meteor hammer. The dark chain of the meteor Hamer was composed from triangular hoops, and the water-tank-sized hammerheads were covered in sharp thorns. As he slightly shook the chain, the hammerheads flew up and created a dark light screen around his body.

Shreds of shadows of the meteor hammer could be seen around Shixin's body, as he walked to Qiu Niu and Ao Bai step by step while, saying, "Qiu Niu, Bixi...Pah, what are these stupid names? Listen to your big brother. Behave yourselves and bring these little kids of yours back to the heaven, then don't ever come out...hehe, so that you can live!"

A frosty light shone from Shixin's purely black eyes while the sharp bones stuck out of his bone joints silently grew longer. "If you insist on being a part of this..." Clicking his tongue, Shixin continued, "As your big brother, I have no choice but to discipline you. It will be your turn to enjoy the lives in the ocean eyes and underground caves that we were locked in!"

Qiu Niu snorted coldly. Ji Hao could tell that Qiu Niu didn't want to listen to Shixin nor negotiate with him.

A cyan-colored raging dragon fire burned on Qiu Niu's right hand. As he raised his arms and clenched his fingers, a green thunderbolt descended from the sky. He tore apart the space bare-handedly and pulled out a, tens of meters long giant blade, which was embossed with a coiling dragon. Gripping the blade with both hands, he wielded it against the fierce wind and sent hundreds of beams of blade lights to Shixin.

"Fight me? Did you forget how I beat you in the old days?" Shixin laughed and shook his wrists. Following his moves, the meteor hammer brought up thousands of shreds of scorching hot dazzling light, clashing against Qiu Niu's blade light.

A series of deafening bangs gave Ji Hao's clone a sharp earache. He shook his head, but felt that his whole body was numbed because of the strong impact waves. His eyes were dazzled, that he couldn't see people clearly. The dragon warriors in the surroundings suffered even worse. Many of them burst into shrieks as blood spurted out of their ears. Their eardrums were torn, and even their brains were injured by the loud noise.

Ji Hao shouted at the dragon army. The dragon army hesitated briefly, then quickly drew back towards the heaven under Ji Hao's order.

Blade lights and frosty glows flashed across the sky, hitting against each other and shredding each other. Qiu Niu and Shi Xin were both violent fighters. They floated in the midair, body remaining perfectly motionless while their arms swished like windmills, tearing the space into pieces.

Gradually, Ji Hao found something wrong.

Qiu Niu's blade wasn't as powerful as Shixin's meteor hammer, and he moved slower. In the air, more and more blade lights faded, while the frosty light created by the meteor hammer was getting closer and closer to Qiu Niu's body.

Qiu Niu also realized that he had fallen in a disadvantage. Through gritted teeth, he sneered, "You've been imprisoned for so many years, yet you never stopped cultivating yourselves, did you?"

Shixin gave an evil dark look. With his eyes fixed on Qiu Niu, he responded coldly, "I'm your big brother. Even though I was 'framed' years ago, how can you possibly be stronger than me?"

Ji Hao let out a long breath. Qiu Niu said that Shixin was 'imprisoned', while Shixin claimed that he was 'framed'! Clearly, some interesting stories had happened between these two 'brothers', or between all the dragon ancestor's sons!

They were all the dragon ancestor's sons, yet Qiu Niu and his eight brothers were known by the world, while Shixin's name was barely heard. Why did the dragon ancestor seal him? Why didn't people even know his name?

Suddenly, a roaring hurricane could be heard. Cyan-colored gusts of wind blew towards Qiu Niu from all directions. As fierce gusts of wind began blowing out of Qiu Niu's blade, as his moving speed

and strength both soared!

Qiu Niu clearly wasn't able to defeat Shixin with pure physical strength. After all, he wasn't Bixi. Bixi was famous for a tremendous physical strength, but he was not. Realizing that he had already fallen in disadvantage, Qiu Niu immediately put his special ability in use. The dagger-sharp cyan-colored winds wrapped his blade as he silently lunged it forward. A blade light penetrated the space and broke the shreds of shadows of the meteor hammer, reaching straight to Shixin's face.

"You can't win, so you began playing tricks again, didn't you?" Shixin mocked him. A strange triangular shield, which was thickly covered in dragon scales, appeared before his face. The blade light struck on the shield and blasted into small, sharp gusts of wind that dissipated in the air. However, the shield remained unmoved. Thousands of beams of bade lights descended, but not even a tiny mark was left on the shield.

Shixin chuckled and stopped fighting, wrapping the meteor hammer around his waist and letting Qiu Niu launch a crazy series of strikes. The three-feet-wide small shield before him blocked all the attacks.

The more attacks Qiu Niu launched, the deeper he was shocked. He stared at the small shield and shouted to ask, "What is this...?"

Before he finished, two dark figures darted out of the air. One of them whipped on Qiu Niu's chest with a three-edged sword and made him vomit blood and stagger back.

Another one pulled out a black long blade and ferociously hacked on Qiu Niu for over a hundred times at lightning speed.

Ji Hao reacted timely. The Pan Gu bell released a stream of Chaos power to shield Qiu Niu. The Chaos power blocked the waves of dark blade light.

Ao Bai widened his eyes and burst into snarls with both wrath

and panic, "Shigu, Shisui, you…escaped too?"

# Chapter 1786: Chaos

The one with a three-edged sword was Shigu, and the one with a blade was Shisui.

They were both in half-dragon, half-human shape, looking as ferocious as Shixin. Their dark, dull scales were covered thickly with thorns. Along with their movements, these scales clanked loudly against each other.

"Escape?" After sending a wave of blade light towards the Chaos power released from the Pan Gu bell, Shisui realized that the blade lights could not break the bell. Glancing at Ji Hao with his deeply sunken eyes, he curved up his mouth corners, dropped the blade, and stepped back. In the meanwhile, he was shaking his head while saying, "We walked out. Why did you use the word 'escape'? Do you want to get beaten?"

Qiu Niu clenched his teeth and looked at Shigu and Shisui, who stood by Shixin's sides. The broken bones in his chest area had been healing themselves, causing creaking noises. "Walk out? Where is the guard? A clone of Emperor Suiren is guarding the northernmost ocean eye. How did you 'walk' out?" He gave a cold smile and said.

Shigu tilted his head, then carelessly wielded his three-edged sword as he laughed proudly and twistedly, "How did we walk out? Of course, we grabbed Suiren's head and 'crack', snapped his neck. Then, we just walked out!"

While scornfully smiling, Shigu spat at Qiu Niu. His saliva absorbed the moisture in the air and turned into a stinky, heavy rain that splashed on the Chaos power streams released by the Pan Gu bell. The Chaos power streams swirled slowly, blocking the rain and the stench.

Shigu then chuckled while shaking his head, "Do you think that Suiren is incredibly powerful? He's nothing but a clone, not even

the real him. Do you really believe that he can suppress us forever?"

Qiu Niu opened his mouth, prepared to say something. Ji Hao seized this opportunity and threw out the question, "Wait a minute, did you say that Emperor Suiren has been staying in the northernmost ocean eye? For guarding them? Then Emperor Xuanyuan, Emperor Shennong, and the other former human emperors, they never showed up in public because..."

Shixin giggled and threw a sideways glance at Ji Hao, then patted the meteor hammer wrapped around his waist while saying, "You human kids are so ignorant. You don't even know about these old stories...But, perhaps this is because your human beings have destroyed all related records on purpose, just like the dragon-kind did. They even wiped me and my nine brothers out of the history."

Sighing heavily, Shixin slowly nodded and continued, "You're right. Those former human emperors, who have become Supreme Magi and earned the right to share an endless life with natural stars, are nowhere to be found. But, the clones they left in Pan Gu world were guarding my brothers and me."

Shaking his head, Shixin carried on, "But of course, my eight brothers and I were separated, imprisoned in three ocean eyes. Our Amma is caged solitarily in a secret ocean eye. Your officious former emperors are also responsible for guarding those famous ancient beings in that secret ocean eye, who are..."

"Shixin, shut up! No matter how you escaped, we will put you back...You evil dragons are a disaster to all Pan Gu creatures. How can we allow you to run amok here?"

Qiu Niu abruptly vented a thunderous snarl.

Hearing Qiu Niu growl, Ao Bai stood up and loudly gave his orders. The dragon army had drawn back to a long distance away, but following his order, they gathered towards him again.

However, the faces of these dragon warriors were now filled with confusion. They looked at Qiu Niu, Ao Bai, Shixin, Shigu, and Shisui, without knowing what to do. Every dragon knew that the dragon ancestor had nine sons, but beyond all expectations, besides Qiu Niu, Ao Bai and their seven brothers, the dragon ancestor had another nine evil and ferocious sons.

Shixin and his brothers were also ancestor-level dragons, and they had a special weapon, which was highly destructive to the dragon-kind. Qiu Niu and Ao Bai clearly weren't able to defeat them...Quite some dragon warriors wondered if they should attack Shixin and his brothers or not. Even if they composed formations and launch a siege, what could they possibly do to Shixin and his brothers?

Ji Hao remained silent with a dark face. This sudden change that happened to the dragon-kind was way too astonishing, and he hadn't even recovered from the shock up till now.

It turned out that apart from Ao Bai and his eight brothers, the dragon ancestor had another nine sons, who were imprisoned in ocean eyes back in the ancient time. And 'Dragon Mother'...Obviously, Shixin and his brothers were supported by Dragon Mother. Otherwise, where did Wu Bi get that blood-red blade from?

Dragon Mother, thinking of this name, Ji Hao suffered a headache.

She was Qiu Niu and his brothers' mother, the dragon ancestor's spouse. Wherever she was from, she was at the level of the dragon ancestor. Even if she might be weaker than the dragon ancestor, she must be a saint-level powerful being. Added with the fact that she was now with Wu Bi and his people, and Wu Bi was now on Emperor Xun's side, who now had a group of mysterious priests around him...

Messy, so messy.

Ji Hao helplessly looked at the sky. It seemed that recently, all kinds of evil beings and monsters had been popping up in Pan Gu world. The top-level powerful beings from Pan Yu world now had their eyes on Pan Gu world. Ten of their saints had already intruded into Pan Gu world.

If all Pan Gu world creatures could unite in a concerted effort, Ji Hao would have the confidence in fighting against the non-humankind monsters. Nevertheless, a giant number of evil beings were currently against most of the Pan Gu world creatures. Emperor Xun, Wu Bi, Shixin and his brothers, and all kinds of mysterious people...Ji Hao felt so stressed. The heavy stress nearly collapsed this clone of his right on the spot.

The dragon army slowly approached, and so did the Zhu Rong army leading by Man Man and Zhu Rong, along with sharp caws coming from the sky. In a dense formation, Ji Hao's Gold Crow warriors spread their enormous wings and covered a small half of the sky, while circling Shixin and his brothers up.

Ao Bai slowly raised his right hand and clenched his fist. "In the old days, father didn't kill you. You should have cherished your lives and stayed in the ocean eyes to cultivate your original natures to never show up in the world again. You shall just go back!" He said.

Shixin, Shigu, and Shisui laughed out loud together. "In fact, we prefer to put you weak and useless things into the ocean eyes...to let you taste the life in there." Said Shisui in a grim tone.

"As our brothers, you were actually weak enough to die in a collapse of physical bodies. And, you needed to regrow your bodies with natural treasures...So shameful. It's better to let us defend the reputation of the dragon ancestor's nine sons!" Shisui continued.

Shigu and Shisui slowly raised their weapons. Behind them, another few tall and strong figures emerged silently.

# Chapter 1787: The Lacerated Dragon-kind

Shixin, Shigu, Shisui, Shihun, Shixie, Shiling, Shie, Shiye, Shican!

Nine dragon men stood side by side, laughing viciously. Their bodies were purely black, scales covered in thorns, and sharp bones sticking out from every bone joint. Each of them had six to twelve sharp horns on the head, and a strong, dark power could be sensed from their bodies.

Qiu Niu and Ao Bai called out their names one by one. After calling out each name, Ao Bai and Qiu Niu' faces would pale a little more.

According to Qiu Niu and Ao Bai, Shixin and his eight brothers were imprisoned in three ocean eyes, guarded by the powerful ones from the dragon-kind, phoenix-kind, and humankind. Among these guards, the ones from the humankind were mighty beings like Emperor Suiren.

But at this very moment, they showed up in here together. Their laughter sounded like the ghosts whispering, giving the others a sharp earache. An evil dragon power had been spreading from their bodies, softening the legs of countless surrounding dragon warriors, making them quiver and disabling them from standing straight.

The flood dragons and water-kind warriors suffered even worse. The flood dragons had mostly lowered their heads, without daring to look directly at Shixin and his brothers. The water-kind warriors, including the mountain-sized dragon wales, dark turtles, and the ordinary shrimp warriors, had all fallen down from the watery clouds. Their bodies were twitching, not under their control anymore.

Dragons were the noblest beings among all water-kind creatures. Shixin and his brothers possessed the purest dragon bloodline,

which was descended from the dragon ancestor. They were top-grade members of the dragon-kind; their pure and strong bloodline gave these water-kind warriors a natural pressure.

"Qiu Niu, Bixi, my brothers, where are your other seven brothers?" Carrying a pair of steel whips, Shi Hun, who showed up just now, bared his teeth and grinned to Qiu Niu and Ao Bai while saying, "Call them out, shall we? It's been many years, I really missed them...I really want to break your bones and throw you into the dark and cold ocean eyes."

"We'll be leading the dragon kind from now on." Said Shixie slowly. A Strange shaped giant blade was carried on his shoulder. "You should stay in the ocean eyes to live a peaceful life. We're brothers after all. In those days, you didn't kill us, so, we surely won't kill you either. As long as you obey and go stay in the ocean eyes, I promise that you won't be worrying about food or clothing!"

"At least, you can have as many fishes and kelps as you like." Shiling laughed. He was wearing a heavy pair of knuckles, eyes sparkling with a dark evil light. "Let me tell you this, I found these kelps in the deepest area of my ocean eye, growing on the tens of thousands of meters high pile of dragon whale dung. Those kelps taste excellent, like veal. Those are vegetables, but can satisfy your craving for delicious food. You will like that kind of kelp."

Shihun, Shixie and Shiling carried this conversation, and their voices contained a bone-deep hatred. But apart from the hatred, they were full of delight. Apparently, they couldn't wait to put all the miseries they had been through on Qiu Niu, Ao Bai and his brothers.

Qiu Niu slowly raised his blade. After exchanging a glance with Ao Bai, he said seriously, "Shixin, Shigu, Shisui...You are extremely violent and wicked. You have committed all kinds of crimes, slaughtered countless lives, and used to run amok in the world. For all Pan Gu world lives, for the dragon-kind, our father imprisoned you in the ocean eyes, because he wanted you to

cultivate and thoroughly reform yourselves."

Breathing deeply, Qiu Niu continued, "But, you remained impenitent, and now escaped...Today, whatever you are planning on, as long as we are alive, you will not get what you want."

"Dragon boys, follow my order!" Ao Bai pulled out his sword and gave a sonorous growl.

Countless dragon warriors gave vent to a thunderous roar in one voice. They released their powers and pushed the watery clouds behind them to a long distance away. On the watery clouds, the water-kind warriors, who were badly affected by the dragon power of Shixin and his brothers, disabled from moving, were sent far away.

This was a war between the dragon ancestor's sons; this war belonged to pure-blood dragons. Those mix-blood dragons, flood-dragons, and other water-kind warriors had no place in this war, because a war of the dragon-kind should be fought by dragons.

Ji Hao took a step forward. Looking at Shixin and his brothers smilingly, he said, "My friends, you don't look familiar to me. You don't look like good people, and you're with the bad ones among human beings. As a divine emperor, I have no choice but take an action to defend the natural law of Pan Gu world."

While Ji Hao was talking, numberless dragon warriors had already composed the most powerful battle formation of the dragon-kind in the air. Most of these dragon warriors remained in the half-human, half-dragon shape, but in the core area of the formation, a whole ten-thousand pure-blood dragons shifted back into their original dragon shapes. They silently released their dragon powers while brandishing their sharp teeth and caws.

Shixin and his brothers smiled, as Shigu abruptly raised a hand. From his fingertips, a dark thunderbolt rose into the sky.

The dark thunderbolts flashed straight into the air and exploded

in the sky, thousands of miles away from the ground into waves of thin electric currents that spread towards all directions. The electric currents exploded again into giant clouds of dark fire. The dark fire sparkled all over the sky, and could be seen from even a billion miles away.

Great sounds of rolling waves could be heard from everywhere. Following the wave sounds, enormous water-kind armies approached from the east, south, north and west, treading on surging waves. These water-kind warriors' shells and eyes were all covered in a faint dark mist, that made them look fiercer and more ferocious than the water-kind army from the heaven under Ao Bai's command.

Hundreds of dragon-kind elders with silver hairs and beards stood on the wavetops in human shapes. They controlled the giant waves and flew over, standing silently behind Shixin and his brothers in a straight line.

Their attitudes were shown clearly. These dragon elders followed Shixin and his brothers, siding against Ao Bai and Qiu Niu.

A tremor went through Ao Bai and Qiu Niu' bodies. Ao Bai glanced at the formidable water-kind armies coming from all directions, then looked at the group of dragon elders behind Shixin and his brothers, and shouted, "What are you doing? Are you rebelling?"

Shixin and his brothers wouldn't stop laughing. A dragon elder walked out with large steps. He ignored Ao Bai's questions, but threw an imperial glance at the surrounding dragon warriors, then abruptly began talking. "Where are my boys? The true leaders of the dragon-kind are here. Aren't you going to pay your homage to them with me?"

The expressions on Qiu Niu and Ao Bai's faces changed instantly. They stared at this dragon elder, their faces paled.

The surrounding dragon army suddenly fell into a deathly

quietness. A short while later, tens of dragon warriors vigilantly moved out of the formation, covering each other. After walking out of the battle formation, they swiftly darted to this dragon elder, kneeled on the cloud, and kowtowed to him.

The other dragon elders started to gather followers too. They pointed their fingers at the dragon army and growled with bright voices. Following their voices, large groups of dragon warriors walked out of the battle formation and kneeled before them.

Within a blink of an eye, sixty-percent of the dragon warriors, who were from the heaven and under Ao Bai's command, had left!

# Chapter 1788: Disagree

Ao Bai dumbly looked at the dispersing dragon army. Suddenly, the corners of his blood-red eye ruptured and squeezed out two streams of steaming hot blood. In the next moment, Ao Bai burst into a heartrending howl and lunged at the group of elders, pointing at them while roaring out hysterically.

"How could you? How dare you? How can you...?"

A dragon elder abruptly stepped up, also pointed his finger at Ao Bai, and shouted harshly, "Why can't we? Why don't we dare? Why? We dragons have the noblest bloodline among all Pan Gu's descendants. We are the strongest among Pan Gu's descendants. We ruled the oceans, we're the dominators of the water world. We should stand high above the masses. We should stand upon the phoenix-kind and the humankind!"

"But what about you? You're weak, cowardly, incapable. You are so conservative; you have been restraining no one but us. You let dragons follow human beings; you made the brave dragon boys fight for the humankind, bleed and die for human beings!"

"Humans, weak, impuissant humans... In the ancient times, the entire humankind sought protections from animals, from those low-level creatures. They are talentless and fragile. They have no claws and scales; they can only be food...At the very most, they can serve us as slaves. How can they ever be qualified to have an equal footing with us? How dare they command dragons, making our dragon boys bleed and die for their people and territories?"

"Now, Ancestor Shixin and his brothers have returned. Under their leadership, we will truly stand above the whole world, above all Pan Gu world creatures. They will make our dragon-kind the true ruler of the Pan Gu world! This is the common aspiration of all dragons, and the highest interest of the dragon-kind!"

"For this, we are willing to give everything, we can sacrifice

everything...Even including you. You are known as the nine sons of the dragon ancestor, but in fact, you're just nine weak and impotent...Great ancestors!"

This dragon elder ended his speech by drawling the words 'great ancestors' with an extremely exaggerate tone and oily voice. Hearing this, the dragon warriors who kneeled around them laughed out loud. These dragon warriors who resolutely chose to follow their elders and abandon Qiu Niu and Ao Bai vented their discomposure and fear with hysterical laughter, and expressed their anger to the dragon ancestor's nine sons with dramatic body languages!

As this elder said, the dragon-kind was thriving, powerful, and strong. In the whole world, only the phoenix-kind might have a chance to compete against them. What was the humankind? What were all the other Pan Gu world creatures?

Human beings only deserved to be the slaves of the dragon-kind, the food of the other creatures. Some generous dragon masters were willing to keep human beings, allowing them to serve the dragon-kind, and that was already an extra mercy.

However, because of Qiu Niu, Ao Bai, and their brothers, things were different. They had died, becoming strands of spirits, yet they interfered with the decision-making of the dragon emperor and dragon kings over and over again. Over and over again, they made the dragon-kind help human beings. At last, the entire dragon-kind became an appendage of the humankind, and had to send out their boys to fight and bleed for human beings.

Even though the number of dragon warriors they sent out during each great war that happened between the humankind and the non-humankind was as little as a drop in the bucket, the proud dragons still nursed a grudge. They didn't want to see their people shower blood for the orders given by human beings; they didn't want to see their people fight under the commands of human beings!

Even this time, Ao Bai became a divine emperor and sat as equals at the same table with Ji Hao, which discomforted a lot of dragon warriors. They even felt humiliated!

These dragon warriors laughed out wildly. With all their strength, they let out the brightest laughter. Some of them even spat at Ao Bai and Qiu Niu to express their dissatisfaction.

Ao Bai's face turned blue in anger. He never dreamed that these dragon elders had these thoughts and ideas.

All these years, he and his brothers stayed in the forbidden zone of the dragon-kind's territory, cultivating themselves as spirits. Even though they were able to participate in some decision-making, they merely affected the current dragon emperor, and could only give orders to the other dragons through the dragon emperor! Therefore, they had no idea that so many dragon elders and members of the dragon-kind were disgruntled, even to the extent that once Shixin and his evil brothers, who were imprisoned by the dragon ancestor, escaped, these elders and dragons decided to follow them. They decided to follow these evil dragons who would certainly turn the world into chaos!

"You shall die!" Roared Ao Bai. He wielded his long sword and lunged to the dragon elder who stood in front of him.

Sword power strands swished, while sword lights flashed. Beams of sword lights sliced through the space along with lightning bolts, pouring down like a waterfall and striking at the pale-faced dragon elder. These dragon elders were much, much younger than Ao Bai and Qiu Niu, and were far less powerful. With one random sword move, Ao Bai could shatter their bodies.

Shixin rushed up while laughing loud to defend the dragon elder against Ao Bai's sword lights with his bare hands.

Heavy fists fell as swiftly as shooting stars, bringing up frosty dark lights which bumped violently against Ao Bai's sword light. Along with a long series of tinkles, fire sparks rose from Shixin's

fists, following by waves of sizzling electric currents. Not even a slight mark was left on the small scales on his hands while Ao Bai's sword light was shattered.

Bursting into a thunderous roar, Shixin rushed to Ao Bai and punched on his chest.

Within a moment, Shi Xin launched thousands of punches towards Ao Bai. Ao Bai raised his arms to defend himself while dodging. He managed to take sixty-percent of the punches with his arms and dodged thirty percent, yet hundreds landed right on his chest. He snarled in pain while the blood sprayed out of his mouth, ears, eyes, and nose. Uncontrollably, he flew back along with a fierce gust of wind.

"Boys! Follow me, kill!" Shigu laughed and waved his arms forward. High up in the sky, dark thunderclouds rolled over, then waves of black lightning bolts stormed down and struck into the dragon army on Ao Bai's side.

Countless flood-dragons and mix-blood dragons had their scales crushed and bodies broken. Blood poured down like waterfalls. Some of these flood-dragons and mix-blood dragons were torn apart by the lightning bolts, and not even their souls survived.

The dragon warriors who were kneeling around the group of elders gave a sonorous roar in one voice. They stood up one after another, wielded their weapons, and marched out with Shigu.

# Chapter 1789: Ao Bai Was Defeated

The warriors led by Shixin and his brothers were as powerful as the ones under Ao Bai's command. They had the same strong bodies, the same great strength, and they could cast the same dragon magic.

At the moment, the only difference between these two forces was the fact that eighty percent of all dragon warriors on the scene were on Shixin's side!

About sixty percent of the dragon warriors under Ao Bai's command had betrayed him. Added with the dragon force brought to here by the group of dragon elders, Ao Bai was badly outnumbered.

The enemies launched merciless offensives. Among all dragon warriors in half-dragon and half-human shape, even the shortest one was over fifteen meters tall. These strong dragon warriors lunged long spears and wielded giant blades and swords, generating resonant roars and raising a thunderstorm. Immediately, the war began.

The blades and swords clanked against the dragon scales and started puffs of fire sparkles; the sharp spears difficultly penetrated the dragon scales and muscles, squeezing out large streams of blood. Heavy hammers and cudgels bashed on the heads, cracking the horns loudly. The dragon warriors with dented heads vomited blood with their broken heads buried in their hands while rolling on the clouds in pain.

Shixin and his brothers laughed with shrill voices, which were not pleasant to hear. They rushed towards Ao Bai and encircled him, attacking him with all kinds of weapons. Ao Bai shielded himself with the longsword. As a series of explosive sounds were heard, Ao Bai's right arm was cut entirely off and his longsword screamed while being hit flying away by Shixin's meteor hammer.

His arm was cut and his weapon had flown out of his hand. Ao Bai tried to dodge, but the weapons of Shixin and his brothers landed on his body almost simultaneously.

Ao Bai dodged swiftly, yet his scales and skin were broken by three heavy weapons. More than ten bone-deep incised wounds were left on his body, spurting blood. Ao Bai's pale face turned even worse.

Things happened too fast, that it was only until Ao Bai was wounded that Ji Hao and Qiu Niu managed to react. A strong wave of Chaos power was released from the Pan Gu bell, wrapping Ao Bai up and dragging him back to Ji Hao. Qiu Niu took out tens of bottles of magic pills and poured every single pill into Ao Bai's mouth.

Seeing Ji Hao protecting Ao Bai, Shixin and his brothers laughed out loud, "This bell is strange. Pay no attention to him for now. First, let's kill these kids who decided to be loyal to the nine useless things!"

Standing aside, Shiling laughed harshly, "Those who comply with me thrive and those who resist me perish. It's the time for these weak young dragons to know what the true dragon-kind should be like. Hah, in the ancient times, we once slaughtered three-thousand clans in a row, without sparing a single life. That's our dragon-kind!"

He raised his head and spat to a long distance away, then sneered, "The ones who refused to follow us shall die!"

Following his voice, Shixin and his brothers shouted shrilly and marched into Ao Bai's army, leaving nine shreds of black afterimages behind. Wherever they reached, blood was rolling like ocean waves as countless dragon warriors who were loyal to Ao Bai were torn into pieces.

In front of these nine evil sons of the dragon ancestor, these hundreds of years old young dragon warriors were as fragile as a

group of chicken, completely defenseless.

Evil spells could be heard from a distance away. Wu Bi showed up with that blood-red long blade, which was highly lethal to all dragons. Behind him, a group of Chi Wu Clan devils had been casting a spell and waving their arms. Dense clouds of dark mist spread from their bodies and slowly landed on the dragon warriors who chose to join Shixin and his brothers' force.

The weapons held in these dragon warriors' hands changed immediately, turning dark green and translucent while emitting a strange smell. All dragon warriors who sensed this smell felt limp and numb, no matter which side they were on.

"Hah!"

Shouting thunderously, tens of thousands of dragon warriors on Shixin's side wielded their weapons. These enchanted weapons easily penetrated the enemies' scales, ripped apart their chests, and broke their strong bones, then came out from their backs.

A giant amount of blood surged out of their wounds. An evil power lingered in the wounds, because of which, these injured dragon warriors couldn't heal themselves, no matter how hard they try to boost up their spirit blood.

Chu Wu Clan's dragon-slaying magic again showed its terrifying effects. Ao Bai's dragon warriors were caught unprepared. Immediately, over ten-thousand of them were injured badly, while nearly a thousand were hit on the vital parts and died right on the spot.

Ao Bai looked at the dragon warriors who died tragically. His heart ached so badly that even his scales had stood straight up.

"Anyhow, they are our dragon boys...How could you just slaughter them? How can you bear to do this?" Ao Bai pointed at Shixin and his brothers and screamed.

Shixin's meteor hammers shone with a sharp cold light as he

crushed the heads of about thirty dragon warriors in an instant. Amidst the splashing blood and brains, Shixin turned around, gave Ao Bai a twisted grin, and responded, "The dragon boys who wouldn't follow our orders better die! Hah, what we want is absolute obedience. They died the moment they refused to follow us."

While Shixin was laughing, Shiya tore off the heads of two dragon commanders and threw them violently to the Pan Gu bell. The Chaos power swirled and shredded the two dragon heads; the splashing blood dyed Ao Bai and Qiu Niu' faces red.

"Emperor Ji Hao!" Qiu Niu turned around and stared at Ji Hao in the eyes.

Qiu Niu never said another word, but Ji Hao gave a bitter smile. Earlier on, Ao Bai promised Ji Hao that the entire dragon-kind would be commanded by him for nine times, but it now appeared that Ao Bai and his brothers could barely keep their place as 'Great Ancestors', and desperately needed Ji Hao to save the remaining force of the dragon-kind.

What was this?

"How come these nine are the dragon-ancestor's sons too?" Asked Ji Hao through gritted teeth.

Ao Bai and Qiu Niu both shook their heads and sighed with weird expressions. "Emperor Ji Hao, right now, why do you still care about these side-issues?" Said Ao Bai.

Side-issues? Ji Hao was speechless, 'These are nine, very alive sons of your father, and they have seized your powers. Clearly, they're on the same side as Emperor Xun, and want to drag the entire Pan Gu world to hell!'

"Gold Crow warriors, follow my orders! Shield Emperor Ao Bai and retreat to the heaven!" Ji Hao didn't waste more time talking and punched on the Pan Gu bell. The bell ring shattered the scales

of hundreds of dragon warriors who were now under Shixin's command. These poor warriors fell to the ground, with blood spurting out all over their bodies.

Along with Ji Hao's voice, all Gold Crow warriors in the sky released the flying swords which were made from Fuso tree's branches. The golden sword lights fell like a heavy rain and instantly covered the enormous dragon army.

Following a sonorous roar, Ao Bai's warriors turned away from their enemies and drew back to the heaven like a swarm of bees.

# Chapter 1790: Priests' Treasure

The Gold Crow warriors composed the pure sun sword formation, and the golden sword light fell like a rain. Every beam of sword light was pure and strong, scorching hot. Giant streams of golden essence sun fire flew all over the sky and merged into a golden sea of fire, enveloping the dragon army under the leadership of Shixin and his brothers.

A destructive power was generated from the sword formation, and in the sky, the natural stars began moving, as if the Pan Gu world wanted to kill these evil dragons itself. The moment this sword formation was composed, all natural stars dazzled in the sky. Ji Hao's divine seal appeared in the core of the sword formation, and the natural stars let out muffled buzzing noises.

Torrents of colorful starlight poured down and merged into the sword formation, wrapping around the flying swords.

Apart from the powerful essence sun fire, variable star powers were blended in the eye-piercing sword lights, which had been releasing from the sword formation. The sword lights moved faster and faster, sharper and sharper, and the destructive power grew stronger and stronger.

Numberless water-kind warriors, such as whales, sharks, giant turtles, water boas, snakes, shrimps and crabs, hadn't figured out what exactly was happening. They simply followed their dragon leaders here and waved the battle flags under orders.

When the golden sword light descended, these water-kind warriors suddenly realized that they couldn't move anymore, because their bodies were frozen, as if they were living in a nightmare. They watched the sword light fall and penetrate their bodies, then watched their bodies burn. Within a blink, these poor water-kind warriors were incinerated, and even their souls were wiped out by the sword formation.

The ones who suffered the next were those relatively weaker flood dragons and mix-blood dragons. They were also disabled from moving by the horrific power of the sword formation. They couldn't even move a finger. Without a choice, they watched the sword lights pierce into their own chests. Countless flood dragons and mix-blood dragons burst into despairing screams. They struggled desperately, yet no matter how hard they try, they just couldn't move. Same as what happened to those water-kind warriors, the sword lights penetrated their bodies and burned their bodies and souls.

Things were slightly easier for the pure-blood dragons. Thanks to their strong bodies and great strength, they still managed to raise their shields to defend themselves under the destructive pressure giving by the sword formation.

Waves of sword lights stormed down and tore apart their shields and armors, as easily as cutting the tenderest leaves. Next, countless holes were left on these dragon warriors' bodies.

Because of the unbearable pain, these dragons warriors shifted back to their dragon shapes. Their enormous bodies struggled in the sky, bursting into despairing roars. The sharp sword lights went through their tens of miles long bodies, making them look like sifters. The golden fire lingered on their bodies and burned quietly. Dragons had strong bodies, that the fire couldn't burn them out within a short span of time.

The air was suffused by a thick savory smell of grilling meat. Dragon bodies were the strongest bodies in the world, for which reason, this smell was especially attractive.

"Bloody sword formation!" Shixin growled as he wielded the meteor hammer and sent away the wave of flying swords coming at him. Then, he roared at Ji Hao with rage, who was protected by the Pan Gu bell, "Ji Hao? How dare you attack us? I will kill every last one in your family, I will pick my teeth with the bones of your families, right in front of you!"

Ji Hao wasn't going to push this anywhere further if Shixin didn't threaten him. However, once Shixin shouted out, Ji Hao pointed his finger at the sky. Followed his move, in a hundred billion miles wide area, the sky was darkened. Under Ji Hao's control, all natural star powers in this area concentrated into a thin beam of starlight, even thinner than a hair, then fell straight to Shixin's chest.

A triangular shield suddenly appeared before Shixin's chest, thickly covered in black dragon scales. The dark light flowing on the shield's surface made it seem to be extra strong.

Puff!

This shied was penetrated by the colorful starlight. The starlight pierced into Shixin's body and left a fist-sized dent on his chest.

Shixin suffered a sharp pain. Covering the wound with a hand, he quickly stepped back while staring at Ji Hao as if he couldn't believe this. The wound was merely about three-foot deep. As a tens of meters tall dragon man, this small wound was nothing to Shixin. But because of this strike launched by Ji Hao, Shixin's confidence and arrogance were all gone. Shixin was a powerful ancient dragon, even stronger than Qiu Niu and Ao Bai. But, Ji Hao destroyed a pre-world spirit treasure and injured him so easily. How could this be real?

"Ji Hao...kid!" Shixin and his brothers viciously stared at Ji Hao, but for some reason, they dared not to bluster again on looking at Ji Hao's expressionless face.

They were so angry. In the old days, even when facing Emperor Fuxi, who was the first human emperor and the 'Holy Emperor' of all human beings, they cursed and attacked whenever they wanted to. But how, how could they be terrified by this little kid named Ji Hao?

Nevertheless, looking at Ji Hao, whose face had an expression of absolute serenity, and hearing the heartbreaking howls from the

surrounding dragon warriors, Shixin and his brothers sensed waves of coldness rising directly from their hearts. They lost the courage to start any direct conflict with Ji Hao...To them, this was rare, strange thing.

"We must be possessed!" Shiya licked his lips and murmured with a muffled voice while shaking his hideous giant head.

"We should let Amma deal with this kid...I felt something strange about this kid!" Shiling gave his suggestion in a low voice, sounding a little unconfident.

"Amma is retrieving a few treasures of hers. She should soon finish!" As the big brother, Shixin accepted their suggestions and nailed this down. "Let Amma come to teach this kid a lesson. We'll be dealing with Qiu Niu and his brothers!"

Sword lights had still been falling when suddenly, a sky-blue umbrella, inlaid with countless blue crystals, gems and pearls rose from the ground. It transformed into a million-miles-wide umbrella and shielded the entire dragon army.

Sword lights never stopped falling from the pure sun sword formation, yet an especially heavy, soft and cold layer of blue mist blocked them. Along with a sizzling noise, the blue mist evaporated. But, more blue mist was released from the umbrella. Under the sword formation's violent strike, the blue umbrella quaked intensely, seeming about to collapse. But indeed, it managed to temporarily hold off the sword formation's fierce power.

A few priests flew into the sky. From a distance away, they hollered at Shixin, "Shixin, my friend, aren't you gonna take your warriors away? What are you waiting for? This sword formation is greatly powerful, and we can't hold it for long."

Shixin rolled his eyes. Glancing at those severely injured dragon warriors, he hurriedly wielded his arms and shouted out loud, "Retreat, retreat, you bunch of stupid boys. You got beaten! Don't

you know how to run? Why're you all as stupid as pigs?"

While Shixin was shouting, a few priests came up to Ji Hao, looking at him with weird expressions. Abruptly, one of them laughed and said, "This is just a clone...Emperor Ji Hao, we came to send this clone of yours to hell!"

# Chapter 1791: Be Careful About the Three 'Peng'

Ji Hao looked at the few priests and burst into laughter.

Send him to hell? Even though this clone of his was merely generated from a branch of Fuso tree and was quite not strong, he was protected by the Pan Gu bell. These priests had a few nice spirit treasures and some powerful magic, but how could they possibly kill this clone of Ji Hao?

"Can I say that you're overconfident?" Ji Hao smiled and pointed at the giant umbrella behind these priests. "Or, did this umbrella give you the confidence?"

The Pan Gu bell rang, and strands of Chaos power quietly flew out of the air, wrapping around the flying swords which belonged to the Gold Crow warriors. The Chaos power was the best solvent in the world. It perfectly merged the essence sun fire and the star powers, generating a power of destruction that was great enough to destroy everything in the world, turning the golden flying swords purely black.

Countless Gold Crow warriors cawed in the sky as they sensed the magical change happening to their flying swords.

Wisps of dark sword lights fell from the sky, looking like the stamens of blooming poppies, along with the power of destruction. The blue umbrella was already overwhelmed by the sword formation and had been shaking. At this point, the vast destruction power given by the Pan Gu bell descended, immediately wiping out the blue mist which covered the sky.

The black flying swords fell like a heavy rain and generated a series of 'popping' noises against the blue umbrella, leaving countless holes on it.

Among the few priests who stood in front of Ji Hao and

threatened to kill him, a white-bearded one suddenly vomited blood. The ocean like power which could be sensed from his body was weakened instantly, seeming like a thin stream of water now.

Ji Hao conveniently pointed his finger at the sky. Following his move, the blinding starlight merged again into an extremely thin, colorful beam, fiercely striking on a bright blue spot in the middle of the umbrella. He controlled the starlight with the sky-opening move and discovered the weakest spot of the umbrella, accurately hitting its spirit.

Along with a clear cracking noise, the giant blue umbrella exploded into waves of blue light spots, fading in the sky. The white-bearded priest trembled and again vomited blood, then uncontrollably fell to the ground. Fortunately, the priest stood by his side grabbed his shoulder and carried him up.

"Ji Hao kid!" The few priests pointed their fingers at Ji Hao and shouted with wrath. They even forgot to add the word 'emperor', just growling angrily. The leader of this group of priests abruptly pulled out three glowing spirit talismans and threw them at Ji Hao.

Those were three fist-sized talismans made from unknown materials. When the priest took them out, they were still glowing, but on leaving the priest's hand, they turned dim and lustreless like three pieces of old leather, swishing towards Ji Hao.

Ji Hao frowned and pointed at the Pan Gu bell. Strong streams of Chaos power poured down and wove into a giant sphere around him. The Chaos power streams rolled and interwove, forming complicated cyclones around his body. Next, an astonishing thing happened. The three lusterless talisman easily went through the Chaos power streams released from the Pan Gu bell and landed heavily on the bell.

A bell ring echoed through the sky, squeezing the blood out of the ears of all surrounding dragon warriors, Gold Crow warriors, and

Zhu Rong warriors. Numberless warriors covered their ears with their hands and fell on the clouds, screaming and twitching in pain.

The hearts of Ji Hao and his clone both missed a beat, as an indescribable sense of crisis attacked quietly. At this moment, the tight spirit connection between Ji Hao, his clone, and the Pan Gu bell was weakened, and they could barely feel the bell.

The Chaos power streams released from the bell were disordered. The perfect, all-round defense system created by the bell collapsed quietly, showing tens of extremely thin cracks that ordinary people could never notice.

"Wuzhen god-splicing thorn!" The priest who threw out the three spirit talismans grinned. A thin beam of black light shone out from his sleeve instantly and went through the space windingly, reaching Ji Hao's clone through the thin cracks on the Chaos power shield.

Ji Hao's clone didn't manage to make any reaction when the dark light penetrated his forehead. A bone-piercing, terrifying cold power exploded inside his body. This clone was disintegrated, and a trace of Ji Hao's spirit was directly wiped out.

In the divine palace in Heaven, Ji Hao felt a piercing pain from his soul. He immediately opened his eyes and reached a hand downward, clenching his fingers.

From the higher sky, dense dark clouds rolled over and condensed into a giant hand, gripping the Pan Gu bell. Following Ji Hao's rage, countless natural stars circled in the sky. As streams of colorful starlight wrapped around the giant hand, a strange, rumbling buzzing noise could be heard, then the three spirit talismans stuck on the bell were sent way by a tremendous force. Ringing sonorously, the bell rose straight into the sky and disappeared into the heaven within a blink of an eye, leaving a strand of Chaos light behind.

In the divine palace, the bell floated above Ji Hao's head and shone streams of Chaos light upon his body. Sensing the lingering fear and panic that he had since he nearly lost the connection with the Pan Gu bell just now, Ji Hao couldn't help but murmur to himself, "Who is it? Who is it? Who can cut off of the connection between me and the Pan Gu bell? This is...This bell is made from Saint Pan Gu's spine. Who has the power to do that?"

In his spiritual space, a dazzling pure blue light erupted from the mysterious man's pair of eyes. He showed up suddenly, muscles swelling. Slowly, he stood up and raised his arms. At the next moment, the soul shreds which were sent into Ji Hao's spiritual space by Master Spirit-slaughter, and had almost merged into one giant piece, were shattered, directly into the purest soul grains, being absorbed by Ji Hao's embryo of Dao.

Ji Hao instantly felt a sense of relief. These days, he was suppressed by these soul shreds and could barely move, but just then, his embryo of Dao suddenly grew larger and stronger, and his vast spirit power condensed into clear, glistening golden threads. It flew out of his body and cut the space into pieces.

Ji Hao now had the power to directly rip the space apart with his materialized spirit power. With the mysterious man's help, Hao's embryo of Dao had achieved a scary improvement.

"Old man, is there anything wrong? I know you...You never say a word unless the situation is crucial. What...bad thing has happened?" Ji Hao concentrated his spirit and looked at the mysterious man's clear face in his spiritual space, then asked loudly.

The mysterious man remained silent for long. Gradually, his body blurred into a hazy shadow again.

"Be careful about the three 'Peng'...And, go to this place...You will find a calabash full of good stuff in there. You eat it, and it will give you a huge amount of saint power!"

The mysterious man disappeared after leaving a few words and a sparkling interstellar map in Ji Hao's spiritual space.

# Chapter 1792: The Second Cauldron

A tremendous power surged inside Ji Hao's body, while fist-sized golden flames hovered slowly around him. He walked out of the divine palace with giant steps, the Pan Gu sword held in his hands and the Pan Gu bell floating above his head. Mr. Crow was standing on his shoulder, and the pair of fire dragons were wrapped around his waist.

He transformed into a streak of fire and flashed out of the heaven in an instant, arriving at the chaotic battleground.

After killing Ji Hao's clone and forcing the real Ji Hao to retrieve the Pan Gu bell, the few priests laughed out loud towards the sky. Shixin and his brothers roughly cured the dragon warriors who were wounded by the pure sun sword formation, then regathered the army and marched towards the army on Ji Hao's side, which was composed of Gold Crow warriors and Zhu Rong warriors.

Dragons were fierce and combative. Suppressed by Ao Bai, Qiu Niu, and their brothers, the dragon-kind had been getting along with the humankind with difficulty. But, under the leadership of Shixin and his brothers, and triggered by some strange kind of bloodline power, the fierceness existing in the souls of all dragons were activated.

Earlier on, these dragon warriors fell at a disadvantage under the sword formation of the Gold Crow warriors, which totally enraged them. They barked and pounced like mad dogs, swearing that they would tear these burning feathered animals into pieces and win this war.

The Gold Crow warriors and Zhu Rong warriors moved into a divine battle formation. Sword light and raging fires descended together, fighting against the wild offensives launching by the dragon army with a combined power. A few dragon warriors who relied too much on their individual strength launched a series of

reckless attacks, but ended up being injured seriously. After that, the faces of Shixin and his brothers began darkening. They whistled to the few priests, then prepared to join the battle themselves.

The few priests smiled and glanced at Wu Bi and his people, who had been building an altar in the distance. Then, they locked their fingers together and cast a spell. Waves of power immediately spread out in the air.

After a few breaths, over a hundred beams of light rose from Pu Ban City. Within the light, about a hundred weirdly dressed priests trod on glowing clouds and arrived at the battleground. They were wearing the same faint smile, as if they cared about nothing in the world.

"Brothers, this divine force is stubborn. They are attempting to go against the trend. Today, let us teach them..." While smiling, the long-bearded priest who threw out three spirit talismans earlier and even managed to temporarily disconnect Ji Hao and the Pan Gu bell, gave a speech.

But before he finished, Ji Hao had already descended from the sky in the form of a raging fire. Hearing this priest urging his people to attack the divine force, Ji Hao snorted and pointed his finger at the priest. Following his move, the Pan Gu bell transformed into a dark beam of sword light and shone out.

Puff!

A blue lotus quietly emerged above the priest's head. The basin-sized blue lotus emitted a bright blue light and shielded the priest's entire body. But, the Pan Gu sword descended swiftly and cut the lotus, also cutting the priest into two and even crushing his soul.

Clank!

As Ji Hao waved his hand, the Pan Gu sword flew back. Ji Hao gripped the sword hilt and coldly looked at the group of

dumbfounded priests, then shouted, "Come on, come on everyone... Tell me your name! Whose disciples are you? Priest Mu and Priest Hua had just made an agreement with me, so I doubt their disciples have the guts to do a thing like this during such times."

Ji Hao snorted coldly. Following his voice, seventy-two hair fell off his head and flew up. Tremendous natural powers gathered and turned his long hairs into his clones. The seventy-two clones darted out in all directions, leaving shreds of afterimages behind. They immediately composed a great formation that trapped Shixin and his brothers.

Watching Ji Hao kill their brother with one sword move, the hundred priests burst into cries.

A priest who had grey hair and beard, as well as a pair of silver, sparkling eyes, roared and rushed out of the crowd. Pointing at Ji Hao with an exquisitely carved jade slip, he yelled harshly, "Ji Hao kid, how dare you murder our brother? You shall be punished by the world for your brutal behavior!"

Ji Hao gave vent to a torrent of laughter, then he pointed at that priest and said, "Punished by the world? So hilarious! I am a divine emperor. I speak for the world. Everything I do represents Pan Gu world. You disrespected me, so I killed you. THAT is the world's punishment."

Ji Hao suddenly sensed a cheerful feeling. Enforcing the law on behalf of the world, this felt awesome!

The face of the group of priests turned blue in anger, especially the bearded one. He accused Ji Hao 'habitually' and 'instinctively'. Back in the ancient time, his brothers and sisters often threatened their enemies with the terms like 'the world's punishment' or 'divine retribution', and that kind of threat could always scare away all the enemies. In the end, no one dared to offend them!

However, he seemed to forget, or simply ignored the fact that the

one standing in front of him at this moment was Ji Hao, a divine emperor, a true representative of the great Dao of nature. Not to mention the fact that Ji Hao didn't know their story yet, and their so-called 'divine retribution' was just a joke to Ji Hao, a big joke! Hearing Ji Hao's words, all these priests were filled up with pent-up anger, but they didn't know how to vent it.

Strong waves of soul power were beating intensely as these priests were communicating with each other through a secret magic. Abruptly, the grey-bearded priest pointed at the skyline and laughed out loud, "Ji Hao, enough of those useless words. Did you say that you represent the world? Hehe, not without out support! Look over there!"

Ji Hao turned to where the priest pointed. Near Chong Mountain, the first batch of warriors who marched to You Chong Clan under Emperor Xun's order were arriving. Those warriors were from a few large clans near You Chong clan. These clans used to have territorial disputes with You Chong Clan, but before this time, they never dared to do anything to You Chong Clan because of Si Xi and Si Wen Ming,

By now, Si Xi was gone without leaving a trace, and Si Wen Ming had disappeared for a long while. Pushed by Emperor Xun, these powerful large clans put all their military forces in use and formed a formidable army, marching straight to the central area of Chong Mountain.

On their way, they slaughtered all the lives in about ten villages of You Chong Clan, without sparing even one chicken.

Ji Hao's face turned darker and darker. Other than the allied force from these large clans, more large troops deployed by Emperor Xun had been moving on the ground towards You Chong Clan. The furthermost troops still needed half a year to arrive at You Chong Clan, but the nearest one would arrive in just a few days.

Once encircled by the enemies, You Chong Clan would not survive!

Ji Hao knitted his brows, thinking about how to safely evacuate You Chong Clan. Along with a thunderous noise, a giant cauldron went through the clouds and crushed the surrounding natural power flows while slowly swirling down from the sky.

Buzz!

A million-miles-tall cauldron stood firmly on Chong Mountain, glowing with a misty green light.

Ji Hao applauded and laughed brightly, "No need to worry about You Chong Clan now...Now you... Have you decided your way to die?"

The Pan Gu sword screamed, as the sword tip was pointed at the group of priests, Shixin, and his brothers.

# Chapter 1793: Activate the Secret Magic

Liang Zhu City...

When the great war happened in Pu Ban City, Liang Zhu City wasn't peaceful either.

Yu Huo's clone and the other Yu Clan nobles had still been scrambling for power and wealth. They seemed to forget themselves in the happiness brought by all kinds of intrigues. For nothing else but the pleasant sensation, they brewed and implemented countless schemes and evil plans.

Every day, countless meetings, secret gatherings, and banquets would take place in this city. Each day, numberless people would walk in and out of those mansions to cast the evilest curse with the most beautiful languages, and to poison the others with the prettiest hands.

Everyone was valuable, but couldn't be trusted. Every day, uncountable Yu Clan nobles would vanish, and their corpses would immediately be burned into nothingness by powerful spells. Every day, some commanders would disappear silently, and their powers would instantly be taken over by other people.

The flowers were blooming, delicate and charming, but hiding under the flowers, were countless poisonous snakes.

The fire was burning, and the fuel was the Yu Clan nobles' bones.

In the most graceful way, the Yu Clan nobles gathered in Liang Zhu City had been staging the evilest power struggle based on the Secret Code of Law. They indulged in this tempting game. While insanely destroying the others, they had also been killing themselves.

When all this was happening, Yu Huo's clone and Master Spirit-slaughter were laughing wildly. Yu Huo's clone ecstatically harvested a giant number of souls while Master Spirit-slaughter

was nearly drunk in this countless times of betrayal and slaughter...The strong negative emotions made his power soar to an unimaginable level.

Outside Liang Zhu City, in the westernmost territory of the non-humankind, an alloy altar stood in floating sands.

The mottled alloy altar was apparently old, covered in the signs of aging. Every mark on the altar had been emitting soul-shaking energy waves. The altar was surrounded by faint lights and shadows, within which, the faces of countless lives flashed, and their roars could be faintly heard.

A tremendous, positive power had been releasing from the altar. The roars of human beings from the lights and shadows were filled with a strong and bright energy. All the voices merged into one, and one's blood would boil on hearing this voice, as if an inexhaustible power would be given to anyone who heard it, to allow this person to change the whole world.

"What a powerful treasure!"

Yu Meng greedily looked at this altar. He didn't know where it was from, but it was a top-grade treasure without question. Sensing the overflowing faith power inside the altar, Yu Huo just couldn't stop swallowing saliva.

Human Eighteen smilingly stood before the altar. Pointing at it, he nodded to Yu Meng and said, "Master Yu Meng, please! Praying and Sanctification secret magic, it will make you a 'saint'...As long as the Colony Alliance has its own 'saint', will you ever be afraid of those greedy nobles from Pan Yu world again?"

Same as Yu Meng, about a hundred representatives of the Colony Alliance greedily but vigilantly looked at the altar.

Remaining silent for quite a while, Yu Meng seriously asked Human Eighteen a question, "Are you sure it's safe? Will this be a trap? Of course, I'm not doubting your honesty...But, this is Pan

Gu world. How can you turn our people into 'saints' in here? This place is too far away from our world!"

"The Chaos is vast. Not even a 'saint' can guarantee to safely travel across the Chaos. Only the purest faith power can go through the Chaos without taking a loss, and generate endless miracles."

Also seriously, Human Eighteen looked at Yu Meng and said, "Master Yu Meng, please believe the wisdom crystallization created by countless wise beings from a species with an infinite wisdom...This altar isn't stunning, but it contains..."

"What?" Yu Meng and some Colony Alliance curiously looked at Human Eighteen.

"The fate of my kind!" Human Eighteen passionately looked at the altar and said, "This altar can decide the fate of our kind. If I didn't want to earn your trust, we would never use it now. How could we?"

Seeing the passion inside Human Eighteen's eyes, Yu Meng believed eighty percent of his words.

Remaining silent for a while, Yu Meng smiled to the other representatives, who stood behind him. "Since we need someone to try it first, just let me! It's dangerous...But for our sacred alliance, these dangers are nothing." He said.

Yu Meng walked to the three-hundred-meters-tall altar with large steps.

The eye corners of Yu Hu and the other representatives twitched as they growled in their heads, 'Dangerous? If you're so afraid of dangers, why don't you piss off and let us do it?'

It was such a struggle. These representatives didn't want to risk their lives, yet they were so jealous of Yu Meng!

If this didn't work, they would be sad. But, if this did work, this, this, this...This would make them even sadder by a hundred, even

ten-thousand folds!

These representatives gazed at Yu Meng with complicated expressions on their faces. Yu Meng gritted his teeth and carefully walked up to the altar's top. Under Human Eighteen's direction, he sat on the altar with his legs crossed, then sent all his spirit power into the altar.

The altar quaked slightly. Yu Meng suddenly felt that he was connected with the entire Pan Gu world.

Such a powerful world! Yu Meng suddenly sensed the vast, prehistorical, and tremendous power of this world. He immediately sank into the power and nearly forgot anything else...He felt like a thumb-sized mouse which was thrown to an ocean-sized eye of a Chaos dragon god...

He was frightened, and he regretted...Why did they come to Pan Gu world? This was such a dreadful, complicated, and mysterious world! But, this feeling lasted for merely a moment. Afterward, all his memories about Pan Yu world were momentarily erased from his mind. Guided by a magical energy, his spirit power immediately connected with the hundred desert worlds that he and his family conquered!

Countless dark pyramids stood on the deserts, numberless living beings kowtowing to the pyramids.

All of a sudden, yellow fire rose from the top of each pyramid, and a strong will power spread in these desert worlds. All living beings in these worlds sensed the will power and understood what it wanted them to do.

They kneeled on the ground with reverence and began focusing their spirits, calling Yu Meng's name and picturing his face in their minds.

# Chapter 1794: Yu Meng Became A Saint

A fire blazed out of the altar and wrapped Yu Meng's body. Thin beams of light shone from his pores and wove into countless complicated spell symbols in the fire.

Yu Meng heard countless people pray, and saw the deserts flashing across his eyes. He saw the hundred worlds that he and his families conquered, the mountains, deserts, and rivers in those worlds, and all the small things. He saw every grain of sand and every leaf, while he sensed the energy waves from the hundred worlds.

They were like a hundred living beings, breathing, moving, sleeping. But, an intense exchange of energy and materials was happening between their bodies and the Chaos.

Within every second, these worlds would absorb a giant amount of Chaos power, and send an immeasurable amount of useless impurities back into the Chaos. Along with their 'breaths', these worlds turned more and more alive, and their great Dao of nature grew stronger and clearer.

Yu Meng now realized that the worlds were like living beings, that they knew how to cultivate themselves, and could strengthen themselves through this magical way of cultivation, making themselves grow stronger. Even the weakest desert world had a chance to become a thriving great world like Pan Gu world, as long as its original Dao of nature remained existing and undamaged!

That would surely take an immeasurable long span of time, tens of quadrillions of years, even quintillions of years...

But, as long as the original Dao of this world remained unharmed, it would be able to absorb the Chaos power and infinitely grow stronger.

However, the high-grade large families from Pan Yu world had

been sucking the lifeblood of all colony world conquerors. They forced them to squeeze the resources from the colony worlds, pull out the earth meridians, empty every mine, and even uproot every plant. They were draining every colony world.

Had they been doing it on purpose?

The fire of anger rose from Yu Meng's heart. He believed that those Pan Yu world nobles were doing this on purpose. They intended to kill the potential of all colony worlds, so that these worlds could never develop and the colony world nobles would never have the power to surpass the nobles from Pan Yu world!

An extremely thin, barely visible beam of light rose from the altar, and Yu Meng's body froze suddenly. His soul was wrapped in the light beam and dragged to the core area of the hundred desert worlds in a moment by the faith power from all living beings in the hundred worlds, at an indescribably high speed.

In the vast Chaos, among the disordered Chaos tides, Yu Meng sensed the tidal Chaos energy bursting around his body in fear and panic. He looked at the Chaos whirlpools and black holes which could crush him in no time.

An alloy altar floated blow his soul. This altar had a measureless power, which easily blocked the surrounding Chaos tide waves and energies, shielding his soul. Around him, a whole hundred desert worlds shone with magical lights. The faith power from numberless living beings in the worlds easily went through the Chaos and flew into his soul.

The Chaos was dangerous, that even a saint could fall there. However, the faith power from intelligent creatures, even the most fragile ones, could easily travel across the Chaos without taking any harm.

Light spots glistened inside Yu Meng's body. He heard his people pray, and sensed their devoutness and their passion. He felt their inexhaustible faith power, like never before. He felt the faith

power being converted into some kind of scorching energy bit by bit, then accumulating in his soul like drops of lava.

Absorbing this lava-like faith power, his blurry soul turned clearer and heavier. Gradually, a yellow light shone from his body.

All of a sudden, sitting on top of the altar, Yu Meng's physical body shed warm tears. From the faith power given by his people from the hundred desert worlds, he clearly sensed the great Dao of those worlds!

These insignificant, weak and fragile, ant-like people lived in the hundred desert worlds, generation after generation. They belonged to these worlds, and every cell of them was nourished by the great Dao of these worlds. They were a part of the great Dao of their worlds, the most important part!

They were alive, and they were intelligent. As the smartest creatures in these desert worlds, they were irreplaceable to the circulation of the great Dao of their worlds. Therefore, the great Dao of these worlds was contained in their faith power. When their faith power flew ceaselessly into Yu Meng's soul, Yu Meng directly touched the original great Dao of these desert worlds!

The great Dao of nature, so mysterious and measureless! Yu Meng had cultivated himself severely for countless years, but merely managed to touch a corner of the original great Dao! However, as the faith power from his people flooded into his soul, his soul was carried up by the faith power and directly sent into the torrents of the great Dao of these worlds.

Deserts, hurricanes, scorching suns, dryness, thirst, death...

Desert worlds were cruel and scary, that life and death in these worlds were parted by a vague line. But, in the boundless deathly deserts, strong and indomitable lives had been growing. Giant cacti stood on the deserts, being surrounded by thorn trees; little birds built nests on these desert plants, while desert rats and tiny lizards chased each other under the plant roots...These creatures' power

to live was hard to defeat.

Before, Yu Meng never noticed all this. As the Divine King who ruled a whole hundred worlds, how could he ever see these tiny things?

Such great lives were raised in death.

Life to death, death to life; the life never ended.

Suddenly, Yu Meng understood the true meaning of the great Dao of these desert worlds. He sensed an unprecedented great power growing in his soul.

His soul rose into the sky like a sun, being wrapped in a restless hurricane and endless sands. Strands of faith power had been flowing into his soul, providing him with energy. His soul began changing, from a blurry 'shadow' to a crystal statue.

The space quaked, as countless Chaos whirlpools and black holes were crushed by the dazzling light that shone out of Yu Meng's eyes.

The people in the hundred desert worlds abruptly sensed an overwhelming joy and happiness. They called Yu Meng's name in one voice and sang his praises as he finally stepped into an unspeakable, miraculous world.

With the help of some human beings from Pan Gu world, Yu Meng easily stepped into the level of saints.

# Chapter 1795: Stimulating

The brightly shining alloy altar gradually dimmed, and so did the invisible light beam which reached straight into the Chaos.

Yu Hu and the other representatives of the Colony Alliance saw a splendidly glowing, crystal-statue-like figure descend from the sky and merge into Yu Meng's body. In the next moment, they suddenly felt that Yu Meng was thoroughly different from before.

As the surrounding space quaked, these representatives panicked, because they realized that they were brought into a world of desert.

They looked around and saw nothing but a boundless desert. Roaring swirling winds blew right upon the ground and raised waves of sands that circled around their feet. The fine sands could not support their bodies. As they stepped onto the desert, their foot immediately sank into the knee deep-sands. Under the sunshine, the sands were scorching hot. Burned by the sands, their lower legs were immediately covered in blisters.

Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles burst into exclamation. More or less, they had each touched the great Dao of one or several worlds, and their powers could amaze any ordinary living being. At their level, their bodies were no weaker than average Jia Clan warriors, despite the fact that Yu Clan nobles had always been fragile physically. Not even lava could burn them!

Nevertheless, this sand had actually burned them through their clothes, which had considerable defensive powers. How could this be real?

They gasped in shock and looked around in panic. Alarmedly, they realized that their powers were gone. Their strong powers had disappeared, and they felt like newborn babies, weak and powerless.

What scared them even more was that the connection between them and the surrounding environment had been cut off. They felt the natural powers in this desert world, yet they weren't able to use any. All the natural powers in this area were like living beings that deftly avoided them and refused to make any contact with them.

They raised their heads and saw three suns dazzling in the sky. The scorching sunlight poured down and made their heads spin. They felt the entire sky was rotating, and this world was like a giant stove which had been rapidly drying the moisture inside them and turning them into mummies.

"No, no, no! I don't want to die here!" Some colony world nobles who were like Yu Hu and hadn't melted their erect eyes to sublime their souls, suddenly lost control. They cried hysterically and rolled on the deserts; they were already on the verge of a mental breakdown.

As a large amount of perspiration oozed out of their bodies, their skins soon cracked, exposing their flesh.

From the desert, nimble, thumb-sized dark scorpions crawled out with their tiny tail hooks raised, slowly approaching the hundred colony world nobles. These small scorpions seemed to be greatly powerful. The venom dripped down from their tail hooks and fell on the sands, generating a series of sizzling noises. The sticky black venom burned rapidly and left countless human-head-sized hole on the desert.

Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles cried out in alarm. Their powers were gone, so how could they possibly survive the attack of so many strong and poisonous scorpions?

The boundless desert was entirely covered by black scorpions. Their shiny black carapaces reflected the sunlight, glistening beautifully. The sunlight rimmed each scorpion with a stunning golden line.

"Where are we? What the hell are these?" Seeing a scorpion swiftly crawl to his boots, Yu Hu screamed out loud with a dry voice. He stomped his foot against the sands, raising clouds of dust.

"Master Yu Meng, please take back your power!" Human Eighteen's mild voice could be heard from the sky. "Amazing! Under your might, a hundred noble masters are defenseless!"

Strong gales rose from the ground, rolling the sands and scorpions into the sky. The gale suddenly eased, and the sands and scorpions were gone. The black soil appeared under Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles' feet. Countless thorny plants grew rapidly out of the soil; small rodents showed up under these plants, and birds built nests on them as rain fell from the sky.

The cooling, refreshing rain dropped on the few colony world nobles who had lost control of their minds, quickly healing their cracked skin, nourishing them, and restoring their life-force, allowing them to tremblingly stand back up.

A broad oasis emerged around them. In front of them was a vast lake.

The lake's surface was glistening, with watery mist rising in clouds. From the waving water, tens of half-humanoid, half-rattlesnake-like creatures slowly crawled out with mysterious smiles. They had breathtakingly beautiful upper bodies and faces and colorful snake tails.

Their long hair hung loosely on their backs, and their beautiful faces were decorated by spell symbols, formed from small turquoise pieces. They carried golden trays as they swayed their slim bodies and slowly came to Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles, serving the shining treasures on the trays to them with reverence.

Yu Hu lowered his head dumbly. The object placed on the golden tray before his face was a snake-shaped dagger. The foot-long dagger was especially exquisite, and a frosty mist spread out from

it, making him feel cold.

The dagger was a pre-world spirit treasure, a top-grade one. It had the power to tear apart space, and contained a magical, strong venom. Yu Hu recognized this treasure at the first glance. He was truly curious about if all this was real or just illusions.

He gripped the dagger hilt. Before he said a word, the oasis, all the snake girls, plants, and animals were gone. He was still standing under the altar, and the people around him now each had a pre-world treasure in their hands.

Shreds of shadows of sands flashed across Yu Meng's eyes as he walked down the altar step by step, eyes shining brightly. All the other colony world nobles who saw those eyes subconsciously lowered their heads.

"I... did it!" In shock, Yu Meng said slowly, "Powerful, very powerful. This is a fascinating world...Without standing here yourself, you will never understand how beautiful it is."

"Ah, my 'saint's soul' conveniently brought back these treasures when it returned from the Chaos. I didn't know that so many treasures existed in the Chaos...This is... amazing. Brothers, take these small things as souvenirs from me!"

The hearts of Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles thumped. They stared at Yu Meng, their eyes dazzling.

Did Yu Meng succeed?

Within this short span of time, did he actually step into the level of saints?

That couldn't be wrong. He sank a hundred colony world nobles into unbelievable illusions so easily; he could end their lives with one single thought. He was so powerful... He must have become a saint already!

All the other colony world nobles cast passionate gazes on Human Eighteen. At this very moment, their blood boiled. In order

to become saints, they were willing to pay any price.

# Chapter 1796: Pan Gu Life and Death Seal

Including Yu Hu, all colony nobles on the scene kneeled down on one knee and pressed their right hand on their hearts, looking straight down at the ground to give Yu Meng, who had been slowly walking down from the altar, their highest respect.

Yu Meng walked down from the altar and bowed slightly to Human Eighteen.

Human Eighteen was still wearing the warm and mild smile. He nodded smilingly and narrowed his eyes as he asked Yu Meng, "Dear saint, how do you feel?"

Yu Meng's eyes shone with a bright yellow light. He clenched his hands and nodded heavily while responding, "Good, I've never been better...I can't even describe this feeling, this...I feel I can do anything!"

Remaining silent for some time, Yu Meng waved a hand. Following his move, Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles were held up from the ground by a scorching yet gentle power. With a deep voice, Yu Meng said, "Maybe because I've just walked into this magical world, I can't describe the beauty of it with language. Give me some time. When I understand it better, I'll be able to..."

Pondering carefully for a while, Yu Meng seriously nodded and continued, "... talk about...Dao!"

'Talk about Dao' meant describing the great Dao he understood with specific, detailed language, to teach his Dao to the other intelligent lives. Which ordinary living being would dare to even say these three words?

Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles fixed their red eyes on Yu Meng. By simply waving a hand, Yu Meng held them up from the ground. Yu Meng's movement was simple, but he made the others defenseless. Under his power, the other colony world nobles

just unwittingly stood up without feeling anything wrong, as if they were going to stand up anyway.

Earlier, they were controlled by the 'dreamland' that Yu Meng created. In the 'dreamland', they were completely defenseless; they didn't even know how the things changed in there. Added with this fact, these colony world nobles now understood how incredibly powerful 'saints' were.

The level of 'saints' could also be called as the stage of beyond redemption. 'Saints' were indestructible, because their souls were merged with the great Dao of nature. To any Yu Clan family, if one single member stepped into the level of 'saints', this family would immediately become a top-grade one, and would have the right to carve a famous river in Pan Yu world on their family emblem.

Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles gazed straight at Huaman Eighteen with burning eyes, trembling slightly. They were too excited to control their own bodies.

This altar truly had the magical power to turn people into 'saints'. With its help, Yu Meng had really set foot in that magical realm! Yu Meng became a 'saint', and his entire White Flower Skylark Family would be benefited!

If this happened to Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles too...

Coughing slightly, Yu Hu took one step forward and bowed deeply to Human Eighteen. "Master Human Eighteen, I am Yu Hu from the White-crown Bird Family. I am willing to swear on my soul that I will be the most loyal ally of the humankind. I will be your most determined companion, and will defend your glory and interests with my sword and shield!" He said.

Without any concealment, Yu Hu fawned on Human Eighteen so straightforwardly. The other colony world nobles came forth with a rush and each took an oath, promising Human Eighteen that they would defend the humankind with all their powers, at all costs.

They vowed to teach a harsh lesson to those Pan Yu world nobles who unashamedly laid fingers on Pan Gu word.

They aired their opinions. According to them, the Pan Yu world nobles were like a giant tumor of the entire universe, that their existence desecrated and seriously threatened all intelligent creatures.

The few colony world nobles who hadn't melted their erect eyes were clearly extorted by Pan Yu world nobles too many times. With hatred and bitterness, they created a slogan, 'Only the dead Pan Yu world nobles are good nobles!'

Human Eighteen smilingly accepted all their promises. Once these colony world nobles vented a part of their passion and calmed down, Human Eighteen began talking unhurriedly, "Perhaps, you haven't understood one thing yet...The Pan Yu world 'saints' created by this 'Praying and Sanctification' altar...will not suffer any natural suppression in Pan Gu world!"

All colony world nobles on the scene paused for a second, even including Yu Meng.

Raging fire, rolling sands and dark hurricanes flashed across the air around Yu Meng's body. "It's true. I'm not suppressed by the great Dao of Pan Gu world at all...I... I can freely use all my powers in here! Besides, I felt the kindness of this world through the natural powers...The natural powers in this world are willing to be close to me...This feeling...!" In the next moment, Yu Meng said in a great surprise.

Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles were even more thrilled!

Becoming a saint without being suppressed by the great Dao of Pan Gu world? This meant that once they become saints, they would have the power to rival those old saints from Pan Yu world! Yu Huo, Yu Ji, Yu Tu, Yu Feng, they were saints for many years and were incredibly powerful, but under the natural suppression

given by the great Dao of Pan Gu world, were they able to release even ten percent of their powers?

"We don't have to be afraid of them!" Yu Hu screamed hysterically, "We can even...slaughter the saints!"

Before he finished his sentence, Yu Hu was startled by what he said, and immediately covered his mouth with his hands. He glanced around, eyes filled with panic.

Yu Meng clenched his teeth, even causing a creaking noise while saying, "Of course, slaughter saints...Why not? Ten Pan Yu saints have invaded Pan Gu world. They are suppressed by the great Dao of Pan Gu world. At the moment, they can release no more than ten percent of their powers...If we can freely use all our powers, then...why not?"

Human Eighteen stood aside as he grinned brightly. In a mild tone, he said, "So, you've all seen our honesty and power! Now, let's get into action as we agreed earlier...Convince the nobles in Liang Zhu City to dispatch troops! Let's consume their strength, and weaken them as much as we can. Let's start!"

Smiling warmly, Human Eighteen continued, "The nine of you who earned the largest credit in this action will get the chance to use this altar the first time around...I hope you all understand that even though this altar is greatly powerful, it also leads to a giant expenditure. We can't guarantee every one of you a chance to become a saint!"

Human Eighteen smiled amiably, while Yu Hu and the other colony world nobles left at their highest speeds and headed back to their camps as if their butts were on fire.

Once all the other colony world nobles had left, and no one else but Yu Meng and Human Eighteen remained standing under the altar, Yu Meng suddenly turned around, ripped his golden armor open, and exposed a faintly visible mark on his chest that looked like a giant.

"What is this? Pan Gu life and death seal? The altar told me it's a Pan Gu life and death seal!"

"Tell me, human, why would this bloody thing appear?" In a panic, Yu Meng took two steps towards Human Eighteen and yelled, "Tell me, what is this?"

# Chapter 1797: Gains And Losses

"Earlier, you didn't tell the others." Human Eighteen looked at Yu Meng and said. He was still wearing that mild, natural, and warm smile

"Why would I?" Yu Meng snorted, loudly buckled the armor, and covered the life and death seal on his chest. Before that, he unwittingly lowered his head and glanced at the seal. It looked like a giant with his arms raised, seeming to hold up the sky.

"Why would I tell the others?" Yu Meng narrowed his eyes and looked at Human Eighteen, then said, "You should know our Yu Clan people...If the others gain benefits, I will try my best to earn a share. But, if I unluckily fall into a trap, why wouldn't I drag them all down?"

Human Eighteen looked at Yu Meng, a little surprised and speechless.

However, what an adorable nature these Yu Clan people had! So adorable! He clearly knew that this was a trap that he had jumped in, but he pretended like nothing happened, just so his people could all jump in!

"You can calm your mind to feel this life and death seal." Human Eighteen grinned warmly, his eyes curving up as he said, "Feel it carefully, and you'll know what it's for."

Yu Meng slowly glanced at Human Eighteen, then took a deep breath and focused on the life and death seal. He sensed a tremendous and prehistorical power. As Human Eighteen said, he immediately understood what it was for.

It was a magical seal. It was a contract, a chain, a strong shield, and a permission.

With this life and death seal, Yu Meng was able to exert a hundred percent of his 'saint power', that he attained just now, in

Pan Gu world, as long as he didn't do anything to harm the Pan Gu world and the humankind. In Pan Gu world, his power wouldn't be weakened by the great Dao of nature at all, as if he were still in the hundred desert worlds he and his family had conquered.

Also, with this Pan Gu life and death seal, he would be protected by the natural fortune of Pan Gu world. Due to this reason, he would be much luckier than the others. He might even kick away a random stone by a road then find a piece of gold underneath it!

But of course, the gold belonged to human beings in Pan Gu world. Yu Meng couldn't take any gold away from Pan Gu world, even if he actually found some. However, with such a great luck, Yu Meng would be at a natural advantage in any battle. Things would happen exactly the way he wanted, and his enemies, no matter who they might be, would be suppressed by the natural fortune of Pan Gu world. For them, nothing would go well, and all kinds of small troubles could happen at any moment. At last, small troubles would become big troubles, and put them in difficult positions.

If Yu Meng were injured in Pan Gu world, with this Pan Gu life and death seal, his injuries would heal faster than usual, because the natural powers in Pan Gu world would flow into his body to heal him.

Besides, the Pan Gu life and death seal had a strong defensive power. With this seal, Yu Meng's soul would always be protected by Pan Gu world, that no outside evils could ever affect his soul again, not even sky devils. If one day, Yu Meng needed to face Yu Huo, who was a master of soul magic, he would directly win half of the battle even before the fighting started. Because with the life and death seal, Yu Huo's most powerful soul attack would be ninety percent useless to Yu Meng.

Not to mention the fact that with this Pan Gu life and death seal, the natural powers of Pan Gu world would support him. Any magic he cast would become twice as powerful as before. This may sound

like nothing, but at the level of 'saints', even ten percent power improvement could be terrifying, but Yu Meng could make a hundred percent!

The only bad thing about having this life and death seal was that with the help of the altar, Yu Meng became a saint and got a Pan Gu life and death seal. As the name stated, this seal was a life and death contract. If Yu Meng did anything harmful to Pan Gu world and human beings, he would naturally suffer a counterforce from the seal!

If that truly happened, Yu Meng's soul and body would immediately burn, and this kind of burning was irreversible. Both his body and soul would be incinerated, and he would be erased from the universe, without leaving a trace.

"As a saint, my base of Dao is this Pan Gu life and death seal!" Yu Meng finally made it clear. He frowned while saying, "So, if the seal wants me dead, I'd be defenseless, right?"

Human Eighteen again showed that warm smile and said, "Saint Yu Meng, as long as you do not do anything to hurt the humankind and keep your promise to help us in destroying those Pan Yu world nobles who have been eyeing our Pan Gu world covetously, what will you have to worry about?"

Spreading his hands, Human Eighteen maintained the smile as he looked at Yu Meng and continued, "Help us to destroy those evil non-humankind beings, then immediately leave Pan Gu world with your people. As long as you leave this world, the seal can no longer harm you. With your current power, you should know that everything I said is true."

Without thinking, Yu Meng put a hand to where the seal was located while nodding heavily.

Human Eighteen didn't lie.

This was a life-threatening contract, but once he helped the

humankind to wipe out all the Pan Yu world nobles who were casting greedy eyes on Pan Gu world and left this world with his people, this seal would immediately lose its power to hurt him. But of course, after that, if Yu Meng came to Pan Gu world again, he would be strongly suppressed by the great Dao of Pan Gu world...Then, if some human 'saints', who were also promoted to the world of saints by the altar's power, were here to guard Pan Gu world...Yu Meng's second visit to Pan Gu world would be suicidal.

Generally speaking, this Pan Gu life and death seal was beneficial to Yu Meng. It threatened his life indeed, but as long as Yu Meng keep his promise, he wouldn't need to worry about a thing. This seal was like a whip, lashing on Yu Meng's body moment by moment, so he could fight and even risk his life for the humankind!

He had both gains and losses, but the gains were greater than the losses. This Praying and Sanctification magic could truly drive many people crazy.

"Not bad! I'm starting to like this Pan Gu life and death seal. It allows me to freely use my power...I can't wait to crush many people's heads!"

Yu Meng laughed out loud. A while later, he abruptly turned around and looked at the altar.

The power released from the alloy altar was strong and felt old like a wise old man sitting there, looking at Yu Meng.

"Have you...used it before? Or, how many times have you used it?"

Human Eighteen turned around and looked at the altar, without saying a word.

Yu Meng smiled and nodded. Also remaining silent, he turned around and disappeared in a dark hurricane with swirling sands, which was rising from the ground.

# Chapter 1798: Dragon Mother

High up in the air, Ji Hao pointed the Pan Gu sword at Shixin and his brothers. Instead of using the Pan Gu bell as a protection, he now had it held in his left hand like a weapon. The bell seemed to feel the strong will of fighting in Ji Hao's heart and buzzed deeply without being rung.

Every buzz of the bell would stir up waves of space ripples around Ji Hao's body. The space was quaking, and all the others felt as if invisible electric currents were going through their bodies, numbing their bodies and souls. Their power flows were disordered, no longer under their full control.

Shixin and his brother seriously looked at the Pan Gu bell. Earlier, they had done a few quick move exchanges with Ji Hao. But back then, they only knew the bell had an amazing defensive power, but never thought it could also be so effective as a weapon.

They silently did a rough calculation, and found that as a result of their disordered power flows, they were weakened by at least forty percent!

"Ji Hao kid, you're just relying on the treasure..." The long-bearded priest who challenged Ji Hao just now abruptly pointed at him and shouted out loud, "Do not bring humiliation to your Shifu. Do you dare to fight me with your true power?"

The priest's eyes shone brightly, and the group of priests around him each showed a weird smile.

How many years had Ji Hao lived for? He wasn't even a hundred years old! But, these priests were all old cultivators who lived since the prehistorical era, measurelessly powerful. If Ji Hao truly gave up on using the bell and fought them with his own power, that would be like smashing a giant stone with an egg, that the long-bearded priest could easily win!

As the group of priests were doing their wishful thinking, Ji Hao laughed out loud and said, "Pah! Are you qualified to wrestle me? You're just a bunch of featherless pheasants. How dare you fly at the same height as a phoenix? I, as a divine emperor, have already lowered myself by talking to you. How dare you make this excessive demand?"

The fiery cloud treading under Ji Hao's feet sparkled, then a clear light flashed across his forehead. The golden bridge brought him next to the long-bearded priest instantly, then the Pan Gu sword was swung at the latter. The long-bearded priest never thought that Ji Hao would attack so suddenly because he showed no sign of attacking earlier. As a result, he didn't manage to react and could just watch the approaching sword while issuing a despairing scream.

These priests were powerful, but speaking of close combat, they were far weaker than Ji Hao. Shixin reacted pretty fast, that the moment Ji Hao moved, he had already brandished his meteor hammer. The giant hammerhead brought up eighteen beams of frosty light while swishing towards the Pan Gu sword.

The hammerhead landed heavily on the sword when the sword edge was still about half an inch away from the priest's robe.

Clank!

Ji Hao's wrist shook, and the Pan Gu sword emitted a water-like, flowing sword light while airily moving between the cold light of the hammer. Suddenly, Ji Hao let out a deep shout. Following his voice, a three-feet-long beam of sword light shone out of the sword tip and cut the giant hammerhead of Shixin's meteor hammer into two, causing a bright crack.

A series of complicated spell symbols flew out of the broken hammerhead. Shixin's face, which was thickly covered in dark scales, blushed instantly. He gave a muffled snort, then let out a mouthful of blood while shambling back for quite a few steps.

"My moon-chasing wind-splitting hammer!" Shixin roared with a heart pain. This meteor hammer was a great pre-world supreme treasure, found by the dragon ancestor in the Chaos. It had been with Shixin ever since he was born; this weapon never left his side. This meteor hammer had killed countless lives and destroyed numberless treasures. Back in the ancient time, Shixin became so famous with its help. Nevertheless, just then, it was cut open so easily by the Pan Gu sword.

"Great sword!" Standing aside, Shican burst into a wild growl, "It broke big brother's moon-chasing wind-splitting hammer. What a great sword! I'll take it!"

While roaring, Shican pulled out a longsword which was dazzling with lightning bolts from the sheath carried on his back. He swung the sword straight down to Ji Hao's head, leaving shreds of afterimages behind. Shixin cried for his hammer and Shican pulled out his sword to attack, two things that happened almost at the same time. Before Ji Hao could kill the long-bearded priest, Shican's sword light had reached his head.

With a mere glance, he figured out that Shican wasn't a sword master. However, he had super strength and great agility, for which reason, his sword move was especially quick and heavy. Along with the fierce movement of this sword, his sword light poured violently down like a waterfall.

Ji Hao was a cultivator of Yu Yu's sword of Dao. To him, Shican's sword art could only be described with a word like 'coarse'. With his top-grade strength and speed, Shican was able to defeat average cultivators with this 'coarse' sword art, but Ji Hao wasn't average. Even without using the sky-opening move, Ji Hao had already found countless weaknesses in his sword move!

"Want my sword? Do you even deserve it?" Ji Hao didn't even launch a counterattack. Instead, he simply straightened the sword and pointed it at the sky. Next, all the others on the scene watched Shican swing the sword down with full strength, after which his

arm strangely fell straight on the tip of the Pan Gu sword, and was penetrated.

"My arm!" Shican howled shrilly. He dropped his sword and pulled his arm away from the Pan Gu sword with some effort. But, before he could cover the wound, his right arm blasted. The destructive sword intent delivered by the Pan Gu sword shredded his entire right arm bit by bit like thousands of sharp blades.

Shican was injured severely. His right arm was entirely gone, and a cold sharp sword intent lingered in his wound, drilling into his internal organs. Because of the pain, Shican was soon soaked in cold sweat. He stepped back quickly, his eyes filled with panic. This almost magical sword move made by Ji Hao had thoroughly crushed his confidence!

Perhaps, for the rest of his life, Shican wouldn't dare to pull out his sword ever again in front of Ji Hao.

"Not anyone with strength can use a sword!" Ji Hao said coldly to Shican. Next, he turned to Shixin and taunted, "You too, not anyone with a strength can use a meteor hammer! You stupid nine, you have a great strength, but you're nothing aside from that!"

While talking, Ji Hao made tens of sword moves in a row. Tens of priests didn't manage to dodge, nor cast any magic, and ended up dead under his sword light. Their defensive treasures activated automatically to protect their owners, but were all cut into pieces by the all-conquering edge of Pan Gu sword.

The Pan Gu sword had merged with that giant axe that Saint Pan Gu used to create this world. How could these priests ever imagine its power?

About thirty priests moved swiftly. Witnessing the miserable death of their brothers and sisters, they screamed out loud while fleeing desperately backward, staring at Ji Hao as if he were a ghost.

Shixin and his brothers roared with rage. They rushed up and attempted to start a serious battle against Ji Hao. But right at this moment, a strong, brutish power could suddenly be sensed, and a voice, which was as cold and sharp as a blade, echoed through the clouds.

"Don't you wanna live anymore? You can't stop his sword...Boys, step back and let your mother deal with him!"

The faces of Qiu Niu and Ao Bai paled immediately. "Amma!" They kneeled on the cloud, then kowtowed deferentially and exclaimed.

Ji Hao raised his head and saw a well-dressed woman, standing with a cold look on her face.

# Chapter 1799: Dragon Mother's Power

When Ji Hao measured Dragon Mother with eyes, Emperor Xun had also been looking at her through a magic mirror inside a palace.

"What a beautiful woman!" Emperor Xun's eyes burned with passion. His soul was filled with emotions and desires, and every cell of his was affected by all kinds of negative feelings. If his human body hadn't been restraining his soul, he would even directly become a sky devil!

He even made frivolous remarks about Dragon Mother right in front of a large group of human clan leaders and ministers.

In the palace, the eyes of the group of human leaders who were gathered around Emperor Xun had also been shining brightly. Their hearts were predominated by all kinds of negative emotions. The longer they followed Emperor Xun, the deeper they sank into emotions and desires, without being able to extricate themselves.

Therefore, they chimed in with Emperor Xun. Looking at Dragon Mother through the mirror, they unbridledly gave remarks about her, even using all kinds of dirty languages, which were intolerable to the ear. These people now looked more like scums than the leaders of human beings.

Unlike Shixin and his brothers, who were tens of meters tall and muscular, Dragon Mother was about three meters and two-feet tall, with snow-white and smooth skin, looking beautiful and elegant like a top-grade aristocratic lady.

She was wearing a golden and red long dress, a strong and exquisite golden armor, and a three-feet-tall crown. She looked like a powerful, piercingly cold, inviolable being who stood high above the masses.

Apart from the wild and bestial power that Ji Hao had been

sensing from her, she looked like a human lady, without any features of the dragon-kind. She was noble and stunning, as if her entire body was glowing with a bright, fiery light. She stood on a golden cloud; she wasn't giant in size, yet she was like a mighty mountain. The incredibly heavy pressure laid on everyone else on the scene, disabling people from looking directly at her, and making everyone unable to help but want to kneel before her.

"Dragon Mother?" Ji Hao sensed something from Dragon Mother, similar to what he sensed from Priest Mu and Pries Hua before. Without thinking, he asked.

Dragon Mother narrowed her eyes. A dark blue light flashed across her deeply sunken eyes as she curved her red lips downwards, then slowly and lazily sneered, "The heaven is truly falling generation after generation...In the old days, the first generation of divine emperors were truly powerful. Every word they said represented the law of this world. They were mighty enough to suppress all living beings in Pan Gu world. How come a human kid is the new divine emperor now?"

She slowly reached out her right hand. Her long, sharp, and golden fingernails tinkled against each other and started puffs of fire sparks and thunderbolts. Abruptly, Dragon Mother grinned and bared her sharp teeth, which glowed with a frosty light as she spoke, "Little thing, back in the old days, a little thing like you was better off being seasoned with cherry jam, then served as dessert."

Ji Hao's face darkened. Judging by what Dragon Mother said, she used to eat human beings, didn't she?

"Amma...Ji Hao is a divine emperor. You..." Behind Ji Hao, Qiu Niu, who was kneeling on the cloud, raised his head and said to Dragon Mother with a bright voice. At this point, Dragon Mother moved suddenly. Ji Hao was shocked, because he didn't manage to see her movements clearly. When he instinctively turned around, Dragon Mother had already rushed to Qiu Niu, gripped his neck, and carried him up. Qiu Niu was thirty meters tall, and merely his

head was in about the same size as Dragon Mother's whole body. Nevertheless, in Dragon Mother's hands, he was entirely defenseless.

A quick series of slaps could then be heard. Within one single second, dragon Mother madly threw thousands of heavy slaps on Qiu Niu's face with her right hand, creating shreds of afterimages. The green scales on Qiu Niu's face were shattered inch by inch. Some scales were directly pulled out from his face, darting away along with streams of blood.

Following a muscle-tearing noise, Qiu Niu's cheeks were smashed by Dragon Mother. His muscles flew out piece by piece, and his bones were exposed. Bone cracking noises could be heard without an end, as Dragon Mother's slaps landed on Qiu Niu's bones. His bones broke one after another, and his teeth all fell off.

His broken bones and teeth flew all over the sky like crystal pieces. Within such a short span of time, a small half of Qiu Niu's chin was smashed.

Dragon Mother stopped and gave a smile. Her fingers were all covered in Qiu Niu's blood. She raised her right hand, then slowly licked clean the blood on her hand, bit by bit. She grinned while looking at Qiu Niu and asked, "Little one, since when did you have the guts to talk to me like that? Hah, if I knew you'd be like that old b*stard, I should have eaten you to replenish myself when I gave birth to you!"

Ji Hao gasped in shock. Even fierce and evil beasts wouldn't eat their cubs, but this Dragon Mother turned out to be so brutal. She nearly beat Qiu Niu to death...How could she be so violent and savage? And, based on what she said, she actually wanted to eat Qiu Niu. Should any mother have such a thought?

No matter where this Dragon Mother from, judging merely by what she had done and said just then, one could easily tell how ferocious and tough she was. The dragon ancestor totally had a

reason to seal and imprison her!

Qiu Niu was beaten out of his wits. He slowly shook his head, coughing blood.

Standing aside, Ao Bai immediately stood up and pulled out his sword, pointing at Dragon Mother as he shouted out harshly, "Let go of my big brother! What do you want? Years ago, you nearly killed my second and third brother, so Abba sealed and imprisoned you. Haven't you done enough?"

Dragon Mother smiled faintly. Her smile was so graceful and noble. She dropped Qiu Qiu, then slowly turned to Ao Bai.

"Ah, little Bixi... It's been quite some years. You're brave now, aren't you? You even dare to point your sword at me. Who gave you the courage to do it?"

A golden light suddenly flashed across Ji Hao's eye corners, as Dragon Mother rushed swiftly up to Ao Bai and slapped on his chest.

Ao Bai's divine robe was blasted. Dragon Mother's palm shattered the strong scales on his chest, tore apart his muscles, and crushed his chest bone. Her five fingers cut into Ao Bai's chest like blades, then came out from his back.

Crack!

Dragon Mother loosened her five fingers, and a black piece of spine dropped from her hand. She had broken Ao Bai's spine!

Ao Bai twitched intensely while vomiting blood. He raised his sword high with his right hand, yet he could not swing it down, no matter how hard he tried. The unbearable pain nearly collapsed his soul. Ao Bai was roaring something, yet no one understood what he tried to say.

Ji Hao gave a sonorous growl and lunged the Pan Gu sword towards Dragon Mother's back.

"Dragon Mother, you beat them too hard, didn't you? They're your sons after all!"

The sword light dazzled like a thunderbolt and instantly reached to Dragon Mother's back. But, the Dragon Mother laughed and suddenly disappeared. In the next moment, Ji Hao sensed a sharp coldness from the behind, as the Dragon Mother was already standing close behind him!

Ji Hao had no time the turn back, but roared thunderously and fully activated the Pan Gu bell.

A bell ring resounded across the sky, as strands of Chaos power shielded Ji Hao's body. Dragon Mother's palm landed on the Chaos power streams and penetrated three-thousand layers of Chaos power in a row.

Under the tremendous force, Ji Hao failed to keep his feet, and ended up flying to a long distance away.

# Chapter 1800: Fall Back

The Pan Gu bell buzzed rumblingly while shaking slightly. Within the flowing green light, a blurry giant was faintly visible on the bell's surface. This happened because the Pan Gu bell had also sensed a certain amount of pressure from this strike launched by Dragon Mother.

Under the bell's protection, Ji Hao wasn't harmed. But, he was sent flying tens of miles away by the giant force which Dragon Mother created. He turned around and looked at Dragon Mother in shock. Her power was so weird.

Dragon Mother launched a random move. Her power rolled like ocean waves, seeming to never end. But, within the waves of tremendous, heavy power, an incredibly sharp and fierce strength had been piercing into Ji Hao's body. Even under the bell's protection, Ji Hao sensed a coldness from his internal organs. He clearly felt that without the bell, his body would certainly be penetrated.

...Just like what happened to Ao Bai!

Dragon Mother sent Ji Hao flying away, then turned back without taking another glance at him. She looked at Qiu Niu and Ao Bai, who were both severely injured, and said, "You two little things...You're my sons after all. Indeed, killing you would be too much...Hmm, you shall enjoy your lives in that deep, deep ocean eye, that dark, lonely place!"

As she pointed her finger at Qiu Niu and Ao Bai, two glistening ropes swished out. The ropes were wrapped in clouds and strands of smoke, coiling on Qiu Niu and Ao Bai' bodies at lightning speed.

The two ropes stirred up thin waves of space ripples when flying in the air. From tens of miles away, Ji Hao sensed the exceptionally great sealing power of the ropes. These ropes were pre-world supreme treasures, and judging by the sealing power that he had

sensed, Ao Bai and Qiu Niu wouldn't have a chance to free themselves once they were tied up by them.

The Pan Gu sword suddenly disappeared from Ji Hao's hands. A dark beam of light flashed across the space and blasted beside the two ropes. Following a series deafening clanks, the two ropes suffered over a hundred strikes from the Pan Gu sword in an instant. Along with a shrill tearing noise, one rope was cut into tens of pieces by the sword, while clear cracks appeared on the other one.

"Little thing, how dare you?!" Dragon Mother burst into a raging roar, reaching her hands towards the Pan Gu sword.

Meanwhile, Ji Hao looked at Ao Bai and Qiu Niu and shouted, "Take all your people and retreat to the heaven! I'll hold off your...Amma!"

Ji Hao felt awful when saying the word 'Amma'. His Amma was Qing Fu, a wonderful woman who was praised by all Gold Crow Clan people. She was gentle, warm, and capable, that countless people were helped by her, or healed by the medicines she concocted.

However, this Amma of Ao Bai and Qiu Niu was so...ferocious and brutal. 'How could the dragon ancestor tolerate this crazy woman?' Ji Hao wondered.

Ao Bai and Qiu Niu breathed deeply. They each swallowed some life-saving pills, then shouted at the Gold Crow warriors and Zhu Rong warriors, telling them to retreat with the dragon force. Under the orders from Ji Hao and Ao Bai, and with Zhu Rong managing the troops, the divine force gathered together in a hurried but orderly fashion, and drew back to the heaven at the highest speed.

At the same time, Dragon Mother had already gripped the Pan Gu sword with her right hand.

Ji Hao raised his eyebrows. The Pan Gu sword suddenly gave vent to an eye-dazzling light. The light condensed into a hundreds of meters long beam that coiled around Dragon Mother's right hand. The sword light swept towards Dragon Mother's wrist. Without hesitation, Ji Hao attempted to cut off her hand.

Dragon Mother was careless. She chuckled while saying, "What weapon in the world can hurt...Damn it!"

Before she finished boasting, the light of the Pan Gu sword landed on her wrist along with a frosty gust of wind. Immediately, an extremely thin cut wound appeared on her skin, and a large stream of scorching hot blood spurted out, turning into golden fire that wrapped around her body.

Dragon Mother was startled, her face twisted. She raised her right hand and her golden fingernails tinkled against the Pan Gu sword for tens of thousands of times, creating shreds of afterimages, as if she was playing a string instrument.

Along with a quick series of buzzing noises, the sword light brushed across Dragon Mother's wrist and shredded a large piece of skin. Meanwhile, Dragon Mother put forth her strength through her fingertips and sent the Pan Gu sword hundreds of miles away, causing a sharp swishing noise.

The sword drew a giant arc in the air and swiftly flew back to Ji Hao's hand.

Holding the sword and pointing it at Dragon Mother, Ji Hao sneered, "Dragon Mother? You're a stepmother, aren't you? How could you bear to beat your sons so hard?"

Dragon Mother was looking at her bleeding wrist. She shook her hand and let the golden fire cover her wrist, after which the wound was healed immediately, without leaving any scar. With fright, she looked at Ji Hao and hollered coldly, "This sword...is strange. How come I felt a trace of the power belonged to that old thing Pan Gu's axe? That was a destructive weapon. Not even I, as a Chaos dragon,

dare to take a strike from it."

Shixin and his brothers walked over with large steps and stood behind Dragon Mother in a straight line.

Hearing her, Shican licked his lips and said greedily, "Amma, we can together kill this..."

Once he started talking, Dragon Mother turned back and slapped straight on his face, denting half of his head and squeezing out a giant puff of blood. Mixed in the blood, his broken teeth flew all over the sky.

After slapping Shican and making him scream, Dragon Mother gave a bright smile and said mildly, "Your mother hasn't made her decision yet, so how can you little things talk? One more word, and I will pull out your tendons...I just need some to make a new pair of 'dragon-binding ropes'!"

Shican tremblingly lowered his head and buried his smashed face in his hands, without daring to say a word.

Dragon Mother glanced at Ji Hao and smiled while saying, "I am quite sure that your sword has something to do with Pan Gu's axe...But, I also sensed something belonging to that old b*stard Dragon Ancestor from your sword. Little thing, give me the sword and let me take a look. Hmm, interesting, isn't it?"

Ji Hao smilingly shook his head. He looked at Dragon Mother with eyes narrowed. Just then, he had gained a deeper understanding of her ferociousness.

She brutally injured Qiu Niu and Ao Bai, probably because she didn't like those two sons of hers. But, Shican had his face smashed by her only because he said a few words that she didn't want to hear. This was not about whether she liked Shican or not. This was about the fact that she was out of her mind. Dragon Mother was such a crazy woman that she could slaughter people at any moment, and she was incredibly strong. Suddenly, Ji Hao felt a

headache. coming

Behind Ji Hao, the divine force had gone far, turning into a tiny spot in the remotest sky. Hearing Dragon Mother, Ji Hao shook his head and gave a bitter smile, "Alright, you're powerful. For now, I can't afford to offend you...Hah, if you want my sword, come find me in the heaven, will you?"

Vigilantly looking at Dragon Mother, Ji Hao drew back step by step.

# Table of Contents


- The Magus Era
  - Synopsis
  - Copyright
  - Chapter 1701: Arriving One After Another
  - Chapter 1702: Bullying Together
  - Chapter 1703: Someone Owes Spirit Wa A Favor
  - Chapter 1704: A Hurting Favor
  - Chapter 1705: Zhu Rong Rises to the Heaven
  - Chapter 1706: Spirit Wa Gives Divine Edicts
  - Chapter 1707: Ji Hao’s Giant Trap
  - Chapter 1708: Priest Hua and Priest Mu Accuse
  - Chapter 1709: Fight Spirit Hua and Spirit Mu Again
  - Chapter 1710: Break Silence
  - Chapter 1711: Die One After Another
  - Chapter 1712: Treasures Everywhere
  - Chapter 1713: The Sword Realm in Heaven
  - Chapter 1714: The Power of Six-billion, Four-Hundred and Eighty years
  - Chapter 1715: The Casualties Are Heavy
  - Chapter 1716: All Clones Merging Back
  - Chapter 1717: Intrude Into Heaven
  - Chapter 1718: The God of Wind, the God of Rain
  - Chapter 1719: Endless Rain
  - Chapter 1720: Giant Rock Falling From Sky
  - Chapter 1721: Disturbed Magnetic Force
  - Chapter 1722: Numerous Casualties
  - Chapter 1723: Natural Rewards Power Falling Like Rain
  - Chapter 1724: Arrogant Challenge
  - Chapter 1725: Interesting Sidelights of the War
  - Chapter 1726: Kill Mingmo
  - Chapter 1727: Gathering Armies
  - Chapter 1728: Chose A Battleground
  - Chapter 1729: Treacherous Messenger
  - Chapter 1730: The Inner Concern of the Non-humankind
  - Chapter 1731: Endless Greediness
  - Chapter 1732: Despairing Infertility

Chapter 1733: Lowly Yu Meng
Chapter 1734: Bloody Dignity
Chapter 1735: A Banquet in Liang Zhu City
Chapter 1736: Stiff Hierarchy
Chapter 1737: What He Saw, What He Heard
Chapter 1738: Borrow A Nest, Lay An Egg
Chapter 1739: Secret Code of Law
Chapter 1740: The Power of Magus Curse
Chapter 1741: Nailhead Seven Arrow Book
Chapter 1742: Curse Him to Death in Public
Chapter 1743: Curse Them to Death In A Row
Chapter 1744: Disturbed Poison
Chapter 1745: A Cold Sword Light
Chapter 1746: The Power of Sword Realm
Chapter 1747: Besieged Circle Upon Circle
Chapter 1748: Slaughtering in the Turmoil of War
Chapter 1749: The Massacre Continues
Chapter 1750: Worsening Situation
Chapter 1751: Centaurs, Assault
Chapter 1752: The Disturbed Situation Spreads
Chapter 1753: Scramble
Chapter 1754: Sky Devils Dancing in the Sky
Chapter 1755: Being Forced to Leave
Chapter 1756: Heart Fight
Chapter 1757: Surging Undercurrents
Chapter 1758: More Unexpected Changes
Chapter 1759: The Punitive War
Chapter 1760: Xiong Shan
Chapter 1761: Underestimate the Enemy
Chapter 1762: The Clan’s Disaster
Chapter 1763: Warning Signals of Approaching Enemy Forces Are Seen on All Sides
Chapter 1764: Dragon-slaying Magic
Chapter 1765: Dumbfounded
Chapter 1766: The Sad Melody of Dragons
Chapter 1767: The Cauldron Appears in the City
Chapter 1768: The Supernatural Phenomenon Created by the Cauldron
Chapter 1769: The Cauldron Suppresses
Chapter 1770: Incomparably Powerful

Chapter 1771: The Cauldron Creates Marvellous Weapons
Chapter 1772: Offer the Souls to the Cauldron
Chapter 1773: Go His Own Way
Chapter 1774: The Muddy Water is Deep
Chapter 1775: Teach Him a Lesson
Chapter 1776: The Difficulties of Transformation
Chapter 1777: Colony Alliance
Chapter 1778: An Envoy From the Humankind
Chapter 1779: Praying and Sanctification
Chapter 1780: Emperor Xun's Confidence
Chapter 1781: The Power of Divine Emperors
Chapter 1782: Injure Ao Bai Severely
Chapter 1783: Dragon Mother Blood Blade
Chapter 1784: The Dragon Ancestor had……Nine Sons?
Chapter 1785: Shixin, Shigu, Shisui
Chapter 1786: Chaos
Chapter 1787: The Lacerated Dragon-kind
Chapter 1788: Disagree
Chapter 1789: Ao Bai Was Defeated
Chapter 1790: Priests' Treasure
Chapter 1791: Be Careful About the Three 'Peng'
Chapter 1792: The Second Cauldron
Chapter 1793: Activate the Secret Magic
Chapter 1794: Yu Meng Became A Saint
Chapter 1795: Stimulating
Chapter 1796: Pan Gu Life and Death Seal
Chapter 1797: Gains And Losses
Chapter 1798: Dragon Mother
Chapter 1799: Dragon Mother's Power
Chapter 1800: Fall Back